



DRAGON MARKED WAR GOD

BOOK 10

Su Yue Xi

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

Dragon-Marked War God

(龙纹战神)

by

Su Yue Xi

(火星引力)

Synopsis

The once greatest Saint underneath the heavens has been reborn after one hundred years. He cultivates with mighty skills, and he fights to once again reach the top of the world!

Don't compete with me when it comes to concocting pills, 100% effectiveness means nothing to me.

Don't compete with me when it comes to cultivation speed, I won't be responsible when you die from embarrassment.

Don't compete with me when it comes to experience, as I'm an ancient ancestor.

The existence of Jiang Chen is destined to ridicule thousands of geniuses.....

Copyright

All rights reserved.

English Translation by ares @ [Xianxiaworld](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 901 - Big Yellow's Heavenly Tribulation

“Old peacock, what did you call me here for?”

Lion Yan asked. He saw Jiang Chen and said with a smile. “Kid, not bad. You have already reached Eighth Grade Minor Saint.”

Peacock King and Lion King were both of the same bloodlines of Lang Xingtian at the very beginning, and they had excellent impression of Jiang Chen. No one would ignore a young man with boundless potential. The same goes to Lion Yan.

Immediately after that, Lion Yan's eyes shifted to the earth devil beast, feeling a powerful devil Qi emanating from his body. He had the same look of surprise as Peacock King on the face. “Earth devil beast.”

“Old lion, don't be nervous. This earth devil beast has already been subdued by Jiang Chen. How do you feel about that? You are shocked, aren't you?”

Peacock King said.

“What?”

Sure enough, after hearing that Jiang Chen was the one who had subdued this Second Grade Great Saint earth devil beast, Lion

Yan's face changed instantly. The degree of surprise that he had was even greater than Peacock King. Seeing the expression on Lion Yan's face, Peacock King found a psychological balance in his heart.

“All right. Old lion, come with me to do something big, but do you have the guts?”

Peacock King smiled.

“Don't joke around with me. When have I ever said no to anything that you do, Peacock King? Tell me, what is it?”

Lion Yan shouted in an imposing manner.

Jiang Chen had clearly identified Lion Yan's cultivation grade. It was the same as Peacock King, Fourth Grade Great Saint, but compared to Peacock King, he seemed slightly inferior. At any rate, his participation would provide a great help, because the patriarch of Lion Race was surely unordinary cultivator. At that time, Lion Yan alone wouldn't be able to deal with the two Fourth Grade Great Saint cultivators of Dark Shadow. As for the rest, Jiang Chen, the earth devil beast and the devil would be to deal with them.

“We'll go root out the stronghold of Dark Shadow organization.”

Peacock King said word for word.

“What?”

Lion Yan exclaimed. He was extremely clear about the Dark Shadow organization. It was needless to think of whose idea was this. He turned to Jiang Chen. He knew that Peacock King bore no grudge against Dark Shadow nor was it the other way round. Peacock King wouldn't go and annihilate a major power for no reason. As such, it must've been the idea of Jiang Chen.

“Lion Patriarch, this is my intention.”

Jiang Chen cupped his fist at Lion Yan and repeated what he had just said to Peacock King.

“So, what do you say, old lion? Do you dare to go?”

Peacock King began to goad Lion Yan because he knew goading was the best way to deal with someone like Lion Yan.

“If you dare to go, why wouldn't I? If you want to go, then let's go. Eliminating Dark Shadow is also deemed as a world-shaking incident.”

The excitement of Lion Yan was stirred up. The Dark Shadow was considered a major force that had a symbolic meaning in Saint Origin World. It was a major power with top assassins. The collapse of such a powerful force would become a historic event and any subversive of that event would be remembered.

“Before this, I have made a trip to the Devil World and have subdued a Third Grade Great Saint devil. With the combat strengths of our quintet, we won’t have a problem in eliminating the stronghold of Dark Shadow.”

Jiang Chen said very confidently.

Peacock King and Lion Yan rolled their eyes and almost fell to the ground when they found out that this bastard had subdued another Third Grade Great Saint devil. They were asking in their hearts if he not have be so heaven defying, because after all, he was merely an Eighth Grade Minor Saint. What was going to happen when he advanced to Great Saint realm?

Actually, the fact that Jiang Chen was able to edify these two devils were absolutely accidental. With his present strength, and without the help of the blood talisman, it was simply impossible to edify an earth devil beast.

Roar

When they were about the leave Spiritual Space Mountain, a world-shaking roar was heard.

“It’s the voice of Big Yellow.”

Jiang Chen’s expression changed. A few people rushed out of the main hall and saw the whole sky above the mountain covered with dark clouds and lightning and heard continuous thunder. All the

dark clouds were condensed in the sky above the seclusion spot of Big Yellow. There were continuous blood-red lightning within the clouds which looked like the scene of the end of the world. That kind of invisible heavenly force frightened one's heart and trembled one's soul.

“It's the heavenly tribulation, Big Yellow is breaking through into Great Saint realm.”

Lion Yan had a look of delight.

“Motherf*cker, this is the Nine Major Tribulation. This bastard is not going to undergo the tribulation in Spiritual Space Mountain, is he?”

Peacock King rolled his eyes. Anyone who could attract the Nine Major Tribulation during the Saint Tribulation was enough to show that the person was a super genius. That year, the Greatest Saint also faced the Nine Major Tribulation during his Saint Tribulation. However, this kind of tribulation couldn't be carried out in Spiritual Space Mountain, otherwise, the mountain would be ravaged terribly, causing heavy losses. This was what Peacock King was most worried about.

But then, Big Yellow clearly had also already figured this out. When the clouds were just condensed out, Big Yellow turned into a golden light, shooting away from the Spiritual Space Mountain. The lightning clouds followed him speedily as he moved.

“Let's go over there and see.”

Jiang Chen's body flashed and was the first to chase after Big Yellow. It seemed that Big Yellow had gotten huge benefits from the totem divine seal, which allowed him to break through into Great Saint realm in this very short period of time. This was an undeniably great thing. After Big Yellow passed through the heavenly tribulation, Jiang Chen would ask him to join him in eliminating Dark Shadow, which would provide him another powerful assistance.

After the tribulation, although Big Yellow would only be a First Grade Great Saint, given the unordinary Dragon-Horse Divine Beast Bloodline in his body, he was powerful enough to fight an ordinary Third Grade Great Saint. Virtually every Second Grade Great Saint who encounters him would die without a doubt.

The birth of a Great Saint was a major event that needed to be celebrated. Big Yellow's lightning tribulation almost shook all the people in Demon Race. Lang Xingtian and Heavenly Leopard King had appeared. The relationship between the two had eased a lot. They now felt that the arrival of Big Yellow was the blessing of Demon Race and the future of the race would all be placed on him.

"Look, it's Big Yellow. It's scary that he breaks through into Great Saint realm before Leopard Wei."

"Look at power of this heavenly tribulation, it should be the Nine Major Tribulation. It's really fierce. The totem divine seal he obtained has brought tremendous benefits to the entire Demon Race. Looks like God is helping our race to thrive."

“That’s right. Big Yellow is a divine beast. He represents the auspicious omen. Today, because of his arrival, the internal contradictions of our race has been resolved, allowing us to unite again as one. To Demon Race, this is certainly a great thing.”

.....

Everyone didn’t expect Big Yellow to advance so quickly. They all remembered when Big Yellow first came to Demon Race. He was only a Third Grade Minor Demon Saint. He was only a Sixth Grade Minor Demon Saint before entering the Suspended Tower, but when he came out of the tower, he had advanced to Ninth Grade Minor Demon Saint. A few days after that, he broke through to Great Saint realm. Such a breakneck speed of advancement was really frightening.

Thousands of miles away from the mountain on a stretch of wilderness, Big Yellow’s sturdy body stopped under the thunderclouds. He lifted his head and eyed at the lightning above. His expression turned slightly serious. Even if he was confident, this was his first time undergoing the tribulation after all. He and Jiang Chen wasn’t comparable because Jiang Chen was already an expert in handling tribulations after being struck by a series of lightning, while Big Yellow was just a newbie in this aspect.

Hong Long

The roar above the thunderclouds rumbled intensely. A very thick blood-red lightning was condensed. It looked like a bloody dragon with an unknown destructive force. It aimed at Big Yellow and was ready to strike at him.

“Big Yellow, you don’t need to defend yourself in the first six lightning tribulations. Your physique alone will be enough to resist them. You have to take advantage of the energy in these lightning to toughen your body and enhance your cultivation. To the monks, heavenly tribulation wasn’t just about undergoing it, it was a rare opportunity to take part in as well. As the saying goes, happiness and misfortune always come together. It is a rare opportunity to be able to achieve enhancement through thunderbolts. So, don’t throw it away. Furthermore, you still have to save your strength for the last three lightning tribulations.”

Jiang Chen’s voice was sent directly into Big Yellow’s ears. In this regard, Jiang Chen was indeed the right person to guide Big Yellow. He had faced this Nine Major Tribulations alone two times.

After hearing what Jiang Chen said, Big Yellow regained the calmness in his thoughts. If Jiang Chen hadn’t given his advice at the critical moment, he would have been defending against the lightning from the beginning. Think about that, not only would he not reap the benefits from the lightning, he would also gradually exhaust his energy. When it reached the last three lightning tribulations, his life might be in danger due to his lack of energy.

Hong Long

Thunder roared. The first lightning tribulation was like a blood-red waterfall pouring down directly on Big Yellow’s head. Countless numbers of lightning instantly drowned Big Yellow’s body, creating crackling sounds.

A lot of people got nervous, because they did not see Big Yellow make any attempts to move in the face of the lightning strike. He bore it head on instead.

Several minutes later, Big Yellow walked out of the flashes of lightning majestically. That blow didn't do him any harm, but instead enhanced the endurance of his flesh, especially his head which was originally already very hard and called the weapon of God. After being struck by lightning, it became even more powerful.

“Truly amazing! He did not sustain any damage even after taking the strikes head on.”

“That is to be expected. Big Yellow has the body of a divine beast, which is strong enough to receive the strike directly.”

“But the last three lightning tribulations are the worst. I hope he can get through them undamaged.”

.....

Plenty of them were amazed by the way Big Yellow underwent the tribulation and gave him a thumbs up.

Hong Long

The second heavenly tribulation came. Big Yellow was doing the same thing like before. A comfortable expression can be seen on his face, as if he was going to take a bath in the pool of lightning that not only does it seem not dangerous, but also extremely comfortable which rendered everyone speechless.

Chapter 902 - An Assault on the Stronghold

Hong Long

The second heavenly tribulation struck. Clearly, it was much more powerful than the first, but it didn't pose any threat to Big Yellow. It would only enhance Big Yellow's physique. So, after the six heavenly tribulation, Big Yellow was still alive and his Qi was even more powerful than before. It was obvious that these six heavenly tribulations didn't do any harm to Big Yellow, but brought him great benefits instead.

“Good. It is very shrewd of him to use this way to confront the tribulation. He has measured his own strength, his physique is completely capable of bearing the six heavenly tribulations. Not only did he obtain enormous benefits from the lightning tribulations, he also preserved most of his strength that should be used against the last three truly lethal and destructive lightning tribulations. As such, his success rate will be higher.”

“I can't disagree with you on this. This is the cleverest way of undergoing the tribulation. One should know that Big Yellow is currently experiencing the Nine Major Tribulations. A slight mistake would jeopardize his life. He had absorbed a lot of lightning in his body. His body should have certain amount of immunity to lightning. So, it will be much easier for him when the last few lightning tribulations arrive.”

Peacock King and Lion Yan kept nodding their heads, admiring how Big Yellow confronted the tribulations, but they didn't know that this was all taught by Jiang Chen. Otherwise, no matter how

smart Big Yellow might be, he had no experience in confronting the tribulations, it would be impossible for him to handle it so easily.

Cracking of thunder

The seventh lightning was condensed out. Many people changed their expression, even Big Yellow's narcissistic look was gone. He knew that the real deal starts with this heavenly tribulation. The destructive power of this tribulation increased drastically, it was even more powerful than ever before.

Roar

The lightning let out a roar as if an ancient thunder dragon had appeared, dragging its long tail on top of Big Yellow's head.

"Come on."

Big Yellow didn't have the slightest bit of fear. He shouted at the thunder dragon. Even if this was the powerful Nine Major Tribulations, he wanted to successfully get past it.

Just when the lightning struck, a layer of golden light suddenly appeared on the surface of Big Yellow's body. That was the purest kind of energy. From now on, Big Yellow began to defend against the heavenly tribulation.

Hong Long

The sky above the wilderness had become a sea of thunder and lightning intertwined to form an incomparably bright picture that looked extremely beautiful, but under that beauty was the power of endless destruction. Every flash of lightning could wreak havoc on a region of the land.

The whole wilderness was ruined. There were no mountain peaks left in the area. The only dunes left were turned into nothingness by the lightning. Big Yellow's entire body was submerged in the rolling sea of thunder that no one could see through the real situation inside.

Hong Long

The Nine Major Tribulations happened very quickly. Before the seventh lightning tribulation disappeared, the eighth had already been condensed out. This lightning tribulation was twice as strong as the previous. The destruction was imaginable. The area that the sea of lightning covered was more than twofold of its previous size. They had lost the shadow of Big Yellow, but they could still hear his occasional roar which proved that he was still in good shape.

The eight lightning tribulation lasted for three minutes before it vanished. Big Yellow's figure appeared in the eyes of the people once again. Big Yellow's Qi began to get a little disordered and looked somewhat discomfited, but he was still strong. He didn't seem to have suffered any serious injuries, but this was already expected by many people. One should know that Big Yellow was a powerful divine beast with an incredible physique and noble bloodline. It would be a joke if he couldn't even get past this

lightning tribulation.

If one looked closely, one could see an unnoticeable dragon horn in the middle of Big Yellow's brows. Light constantly flashed out above it. That was the light of lightning. It showed that Big Yellow had absorbed sufficient amount of lightning. The dragon horn was his most powerful card, his most powerful innate ability, Jiang Chen saw him used it once. Its power was astonishing. Now, it like seemed the dragon horn had changed again, which would surely improve its power tremendously.

Hong Long

Without giving Big Yellow the time to rest, the ninth lightning tribulation began to condense. This was the last round of the tribulation. The density and intensity of its heavenly force was multiplied. Everyone in the Demon Race held their breaths, and looked worried.

“Big Yellow, do your best to deal with it. The power of the last tribulation is the combination of the first eight tribulations.”

Jiang Chen reminded again so that Big Yellow wouldn't be neglectful.

Soon, the last heavenly tribulation was condensed. That was a living thunder dragon the size of about three hundred meter. The thunder dragon represented the will of the Heaven, anything below it was nothing but ants. Anyone who dared to provoke it would be destroyed.

Big Yellow closed his eyes and circulated his blood quickly. A flood of power flowed out from his body and turned into a layer of light, wrapping him like a golden cocoon, preparing for the strike of the last lighting tribulation.

Hong Long

Moments later, the thunder dragon poured down unbiasedly and hit Big Yellow's body. Some people saw numerous cracks on the surface of the golden cocoon when the lightning hit Big Yellow.

The sea of lightning filled the air, creating seven colourful lights below the dark clouds. The force of destruction was everywhere. The void was damaged. A large bottomless pit appeared on the ground of the wilderness and thick smoke billowed from it.

No one spoke. Everyone stared at the sea of thunder without blinking. This was the last tribulation. As long as Big Yellow could pull through it, the Nine Major Tribulation would be over.

After a while, the dark clouds in the sky began to dissipate. The sea of thunder also started to gradually disappear. Big Yellow's figure reappeared in front of them. The current Big Yellow looked extremely fazed. There was blood all over his body. His skin and flesh were badly bruised. It gave everyone a sense of deep fright.

However, a mysterious mark was suspended above Big Yellow's head. That was the totem divine seal. A white ray of light radiated from the totem divine seal and entered Big Yellow's body.

Everyone saw that Big Yellow's wounds were recovering before their eyes.

“Look, that's the real totem divine seal. The totem of our race is helping him recover.”

“Big Yellow has gotten the favour of the totem. With the help of the divine seal, his wounds would be able to recover quickly regardless of how serious the injuries were. This is really enviable.”

“What do you envy him about? The totem is the Supreme Being in our hearts. It is the will of the totem that chose Big Yellow. We can only respect its will.”

.....

Seeing this scene, all the bystanders of the Demon Race were relieved. The appearance of the seal made them show their respect to it. In their hearts, the totem was the Supreme Being which was inviolable, even in words.

It took only a dozen minutes for Big Yellow to fully recover. He turned to the sky and roared. He was re energized and was as vigorous as before. His current cultivation was absolutely a First Grade Great Saint. What's even more surprising was that he had reaped extra benefits from the lightning strikes, pushing his cultivation to the peak First Grade Great Saint, only a step away from the Second Grade Great Saint. It was still not certain when he would break through into the next grade.

“Haha...”

The dog laughed and flaunted himself by flying back and forth over the wilderness. His narcissism has struck again.

“Haha! Big Yellow, congratulations on your advancement to the Great Saint realm.”

“Sure enough, he is the chosen one.”

Lang Xingtian and the Heavenly Leopard King were the first to come forth and congratulated Big Yellow. They then left. They had a noble and high status and wouldn't appear in ordinary events. Today they had appeared because of the heavenly tribulation that Big Yellow faced.

Many of the cultivators of the Demon Race came forward to congratulate him. It made Big Yellow really coquettish. His narcissism was satisfied by these people.

“Big Yellow, that's enough. Peacock King and I will go and eliminate the stronghold of the Dark Shadow. Are you coming or not? If you are not, we will go now.”

At that moment, Jiang Chen's voice was sent into Big Yellow's ears. When he heard that they were going to take down the Dark Shadow, he stopped his flaunting and came to Jiang Chen in a flash.

“Little Chen, what are you talking about? Eliminating the Dark Shadow?”

Big Yellow’s eyes radiated brightly.

“Yes, we have already agreed on this and we are ready to go now.”

Said Jiang Chen, at the same time, he used his divine sense and told him everything about the Dark Shadow, including the location of their stronghold and their overall strength.

“Motherf*cker, this is awesome! Luckily I have advanced to Great Saint realm, or else, I would certainly miss this earth-shaking event. Master dog is already at the peak of the First Grade Great Saint now. This is surely the right time to test my strength on those guys.”

Big Yellow was so excited. Only a being like him who was worried about the world turning peaceful would adore such a task.

“All right, we have Big Yellow now, which makes us even stronger. Let’s go.”

Peacock King said.

In a blink of an eye, the few of them disappeared and came to a

mountain above.

“Earth devil beast, where’s the stronghold of the Dark Shadow?”

Jiang Chen asked the edified earth devil beast because he believed that it would never play any tricks before him.

“The stronghold of Dark Shadow is situated in an independent spatial zone. There are nodes that can lead you to the spatial zone in the mountains. Let’s just get in from the node.”

The earth devil beast said. He was one of the top officials in the Dark Shadow, so he was very clear about the location of the stronghold.

Chapter 903 - It's because I am Jiang Chen

This was a very desolate mountain range. One could even describe it as it being deserted. Normally, you won't find a single soul here. Even though this was a vast mountain range, not a single demon beast could be found here. These facts only showed how concealed the stronghold of the Dark Shadow was, not to mention it was situated in an independent spatial zone. This explained why only a handful of people knew about the location of the Dark Shadow organization despite having existed in this world for so long.

“Even the node that connects to the stronghold is constantly changing. So I need to sense for it before I can find it.”

The earth devil beast said.

At this moment, Jiang Chen's Qi fluctuated. He suddenly struck out the True Dragon Palm and grabbed towards one direction in the void.

“Get out!”

Jiang Chen yelled. A figure was grasped out of the void. He was a Minor Saint. He was instantly killed by Jiang Chen.

“This is an assassin of the Dark Shadow. It seems like he is the lookout here. Fortunately Jiang Chen has found out about him, or else our enemies will be alerted.”

Said Peacock King. He and Lion Yan looked at Jiang Chen feeling impressed. The assassins of Dark Shadow were good at concealing themselves. Given their cultivation, they should be able to detect the presence of a Minor Saint assassin, but they had forgotten about this and only Jiang Chen was able to sense the assassin's presence. From here, it showed that not only did Jiang Chen have an amazingly sharp sense, but is also cautious. He wouldn't fight a battle without certainty.

"It's here."

The earth devil beast found the spatial node. Peacock King took a step forth. He stuck out his barbaric hand to rip open the spatial node. Then, the few of them disappeared into the deserted mountain range and appeared in the spatial zone.

With a single look, one could tell that this space was created by Great Saint cultivators. It wasn't very large and there weren't a lot of buildings. There was a black palace. The air was filled with strong murderous intent which make people feel uncomfortable. This was the convergence point of the assassins. Everyone here was a phantom in the dark and their hands were stained with blood.

"Who is it?"

They were immediately spotted by two assassins the moment they appeared. The assassins immediately yelled at them. These assassins were born with senses towards danger, like the keen

sense of smell. Furthermore, this was the hinterland of the Dark Shadow. No outsider had ever come in here, and not many of the assassins that they cultivated were qualified to enter this place.

Swoosh

Jiang Chen and Big Yellow took the lead and killed the two assassins in split seconds. Big Yellow smashed one of the assassin to pieces using his head. He is now a First Grade Great Saint. Minor Saints were just like ants that he could pinch to death any time.

Jiang Chen's method was similarly cruel. He crushed the head of the assassin instantly with his hand. These two assassins died tragically. They didn't even have the chance to wail.

“Big Yellow, do you still remember that time in Moon Pavilion?”

Jiang Chen gazed at the black palace.

“Understood.”

Big Yellow showed a smile which signifies understanding, and vanished with a swoosh. He and Jiang Chen had been together for a long time. The tacit understanding between them had reached the point where they only needed eye contact to communicate. The objective this time was to uproot the entire Dark Shadow organization and to completely erase this organization from Saint Origin World. There is no doubt that the method they used on the Moon Pavilion was the best way to deal with this black palace. Now

that Big Yellow had advanced to the Great Saint realm, he became even more proficient in setting up formations. He is going to unnoticeably deploy a grand formation over this spatial zone to contain all of them, not letting anyone leave this place.

“What’s Big Yellow going to do?”

Lion Yan asked, puzzled.

“Cutting off their escaping route.”

Jiang Chen smiled. Then, the five of them strode towards the direction of the stronghold. The earth devil beast was the first in the team to reach the stronghold. There were three or four Minor Saint experts outside the stronghold. They were stunned when they saw that Jiang Chen’s group was coming, but they felt relieved when they saw the earth devil beast. The four of them greeted the earth devil beast with a bow. It was enough to show how high his status was in the Dark Shadow.

“Lord, the earth devil beast is back. They are...?”

One of the assassins asked. His eyes swept over Jiang Chen and the other three. He couldn’t help but frown. One should know that this was the heart of the Dark Shadow. No outsiders had ever come in here. If it wasn’t for the earth devil beast, they would have already sent the distress signal.

The earth devil beast didn’t answer their question. A wave of

devil wave rushed out of his body, and shrouded the four of them completely. They were just like the previous two assassins. They died on the spot without even having the chance to wail. Not a single of their remains were left.

“Who is acting outrageously in the Dark Shadow?”

At this moment, a loud bellow suddenly rang out from the black palace. Then, powerful silhouettes flew out one after another. There were hundreds of them. Among them were more than a dozen of Great Saints. The one who seemed to be the leader looked about 50 years old. He was as skinny as a firewood, as if he could easily be blown away by a gust of wind, but the murderous intent exuded from his body was the strongest.

“He is the supreme leader of the Dark Shadow, a Fifth Grade Great Saint.”

The earth devil beast said softly.

The people of Dark Shadow had incredible senses, not to mention that they have Great Saints. When the earth devil beast killed the four assassins, although there were no movements detected, they were still able to sense it from the inside.

“These should be all the assassins in the entire stronghold.”

The earth devil beast said.

For a moment, the whole sky was filled with a chilling murderous Qi. Every assassin that was present in the scene were the top assassins across the Saint Origin World. The combination of their murderous Qi was enough to form a murderous storm. These murderous Qi could tremble even the soul of a person.

Facing these uninvited guests, their eyes fell upon the earth devil beast. Even the leader among them had a surprised look on his face. They had no idea why the earth devil beast had gotten together with these outsiders.

“Earth devil beast, do you have any idea what you are doing?”

The leader scolded.

“My master wants to destroy the Dark Shadow, so I will help him kill you all.”

The earth devil beast said. After being edified, he now listened to nothing and nobody except Jiang Chen. Even if Jiang Chen wanted him to commit suicide, he would do so, without hesitation.

“Earth devil beast, your f*cking brain must have been kicked by a donkey. You are a majestic king of devils, but now, you are obeying a human. Besides, you have also exposed the location of our stronghold to them. This is an unforgivable sin.”

A Fourth Grade Great Saint snarled at the earth devil beast.

“Cut the crap and receive your death.”

Peacock King bellowed. Without saying any more words, he clawed at the void. A giant palm, radiating seven colours of light appeared on the heads of those assassins in the blink of an eye.

Clearly, the leader of the Dark Shadow didn't expect that the opponent would suddenly attack without warning. In his opinion, it was without a doubt throwing an egg against a rock, when the few of them wanted to fight against them all. As such, he absolutely didn't put Peacock King and the others in his eyes.

Too bad he didn't know Peacock King's true identity yet.

“Argh...”

The strike produced massive amounts of overflowing energy, immediately after that, screams were heard. Five or six Minor Saint assassins had their bodies ripped off, when they couldn't withstand the energy waves.

“Bastard!”

The leader finally regained his senses. He bellowed and lifted his hand, launching a beam of light, blocking Peacock King's attack.

“Listen up people. Kill these outsiders at all costs. Don't let any of them walk out of the stronghold.”

The leader raged. This stronghold was the heart of Dark Shadow. It had been in operation for a long time, and had never been known to outsiders. When these people broke in, they must not be allowed to go out of this place.

“Haha, come on!”

Peacock King rose to the sky. His target was clear – the leader.

“A puny Fourth Grade Great Saint dare to shout ignorantly in front of me? You must not know how death feels like.”

The leader snarled and immediately created an independent battlefield for two of them.

“Lion Patriarch, I will leave the two Fourth Grade Great Saints to you.”

Jiang Chen drew out his Heavenly Saint Sword and transformed into half-dragon form. He had known the Dark Shadow for a very long time, so there was nothing else that they should talk about besides killing.

“Don’t worry, these two old guys will be crushed by me with ease.”

Lion Yan let out a coarse roar, while charging at the two Fourth

Grade Great Saints. As the patriarch of the Lion Race, his techniques couldn't be compared to any average peer. Even if they had the same grade as him, and there were also two of them, he wouldn't have a problem taking them down.

“Earth devil beast, devil, Big Yellow, the three of you go and deal with the three Third Grade Great Saints. Leave the rest to me.”

Jiang Chen gave orders to them. At the same time, Big Yellow emerged. He had finished deploying a grand formation in the void, sealing the entire spatial zone. It would be impossible for most of the people here to escape. As for the leader, Peacock King would definitely give him no chance of escaping.

“Kill...”

The shouting filled the atmosphere for a moment. Both sides had begun the fight. The entire spatial zone was divided into several battlefields. Peacock King was fighting the leader, while Lion Yan was fighting the two Fourth Grade Great Saints and the earth devil beast, the devil and Big Yellow were confronting one Third Grade Great Saint each.

Jiang Chen was still weak and couldn't defeat a Third Grade Great Saint for the time being, but there was no question about handling any opponents below that grade.

“Brat, why are you attacking the Dark Shadow?”

A Second Grade Great Saint looked at Jiang Chen and asked coldly. At this very moment, five Great Saints had firmly surrounded him. They were either First Grade Great Saints or Second Grade Great Saints. To them, Jiang Chen was merely a puny Eighth Grade Minor Saint whom they could simply pinch to death. The leader had already given the order to kill all of them.

“It’s because I am Jiang Chen.”

Jiang Chen replied in a cold tone. He gave out his name. He believed that these people weren’t fools. They should already know why, when they heard his name.

Chapter 904 - Ruthless Slaughtering

“What? Your name is Jiang Chen?”

“No wonder you looks so familiar. Jiang Chen, we have been looking for you everywhere. I didn’t expect you to deliver yourself at our doorstep along with a few volunteers.”

“Jiang Chen, you have caused us to suffer a tremendous loss. Your very existence is a disgrace in the history of the Dark Shadow. This disgrace can only be washed away with your blood. But I have to say, I am impressed by your audacity for intruding into our stronghold. Don’t you know this is no different than having one foot in your grave?”

Pu Chi

As soon as the sarcastic voice of the Great Saint fell, Jiang Chen acted. He moved like a cheetah. The sharp Heavenly Saint Sword pierced through the man’s chest. That sarcasm on his face hadn’t disappeared but froze. He looked down at the metal blade that had penetrated through his body, feeling the constant loss of his vital force before his facial expression changed.

“No, this is not possible.”

That First Grade Great Saint began to spurt out blood. He shook his head as he couldn’t believe what he saw. His adversary was clearly a mere Eighth Grade Minor Saint. So how could he have such a powerful attack power? So powerful that he didn’t even get

the chance to react. A single stab pierced directly through him.

This Great Saint might not have dreamt that he would die one day, let alone dying in the hands of an Eighth Grade Minor Saint, which was a very ridiculous thing.

“There are many impossible things in this world. Just like what happened to you now.” Jiang Chen’s face turned into a sneer.

A powerful destructive force erupted from the Heavenly Saint Sword. The Great Saint let out an agonizing cry before his entire body exploded into a fog of blood, spattering over the others.

“What?!”

Only then did the other four regain their senses, and their facial expression changed dramatically. The incident was so sudden that it was beyond anyone’s expectations. Jiang Chen’s violent attack also told them that this young man wasn’t as weak as he looks like. It then occurred to them that they finally knew why the Dark Shadow had kept suffering losses while attempting to assassinate this young man.

“Let’s kill him together!”

The other four Great Saints were completely furious. They immediately summoned their combat weapons and launched an attack together. The dragon marks in Jiang Chen’s body rippled as he fought the four enemies. Despite the fact that there were four of

them, they were unable to overpower him.

As for the dozens of Minor Saint assassins, they only acted as bystanders watching the battle. They weren't qualified to join such a huge battle. Each of their eyes revealed horror. No one had ever imagined that Jiang Chen would be this powerful. There were quite a number of Eighth Grade Minor Saint assassins among them. They too possessed extraordinary talents and were rare geniuses, but compared to Jiang Chen, they instantly got dejected, and felt they were worse than dog faeces.

“What do we do now?”

“What else can we do? He, who is just an Eighth Grade Minor Saint, can even kill a Great Saint elder. We don't have the right to participate in such a fight.”

“We shall wait and see. After all, their numbers are few and the strongest among them was merely Fourth Grade Great Saint, which certainly is no match for our leader. In my opinion, they are going to kill themselves for intruding into our stronghold.”

.....

These Minor Saint assassins were still full of confidence and arrogance. They thought that the intruders only had one absolute outcome – death. As their leader said, none of them was going to get away from here. All of them would fall.

High above in the sky, on the grandest battlefield, Peacock King and the leader of Dark Shadow were reaching a draw in every round of battle. The leader was howling with frustration. He was a dignified Fifth Grade Great Saint but why was his power seemingly on par with a Fourth Grade Great Saint's? This was a disgrace for him.

“Haha! So this is how powerful the leader of Dark Shadow is. You people are so weak when you are not in assassination mode. I, Peacock King, shall eliminate you today.” Peacock King laughed.

His body suddenly changed into a hundred meter sized peacock. His body was emitting a shimmering rainbow light. His pair of feather clothes were extremely elegant.

“Peacock King? You are the Peacock King of Demon Race.”

When Peacock King transformed, the leader shouted.

“It's good that you know me. Your death will not be in vain as you will die in my hands.”

Peacock King's Qi was unparalleled and overbearing.

“Peacock King, the Dark Shadow and the Demon Race have been on good terms. Why do you want to oppose us?” The leader's tone was obviously not as firm as before.

As the saying goes, the reputation of a person is akin to the

shadow of a tall tree. Although he hadn't seen Peacock King before, he had heard of his majestic name. Peacock King was a twisted devil king, a real ruthless opponent. He had the mighty Peacock Bloodline. Despite the fact that he was only a Fourth Grade Great Saint, it didn't mean that the leader was stronger than him. They had tied in the previous rounds of battles. But after Peacock King transformed into his true form, the difference became distinctly clear.

“Cut the crap, I'm entrusted by Jiang Chen to eliminate your stronghold.”

Peacock King was a maniac. He didn't need sufficient reasons to kill a person.

“Jiang Chen. So that brat is Jiang Chen. I didn't think there was collusion between him and the Demon Race. Fine, Peacock King. In that case, I will have to fight this battle hard. I would like to see how powerful the legendary Peacock King really is.” The leader of the Dark Shadow raged.

He saw through the outcome of the event when he found out that Jiang Chen was the head of the enemies. This enmity could only be resolved through slaughtering.

Keng

A black long sword appeared in his hand. It was as thin as the wing of a cicada but incomparably sharp. The sword immediately threw out a cold sword light with intense murderous intent as it

dashed towards the direction of Peacock King.

“Spread the tail Peacock! Thousands feathers!”

Peacock King spread out his feather clothes. Two giant peacock wings formed a rainbow-coloured barrier while feathers as sharp as sword shot out from it.

Keng *Keng* *Keng*

Thousands of feathery arrows collided with the black light of the leader, creating a large spark. The entire void around the battlefield was pulverised by the destructive Qi. In the end, it was Peacock King who gained the upper hand. The leader received a great backlash that sent him flying more than forty meters away before he could regain his balance. His facial expression changed slightly. Peacock King was really as terrifying as the legend had it. Despite him being only a Fourth Grade Great Saint, the Fifth Grade Great Saint was no match for him when he was in his true form.

And this was only just the beginning. Peacock King attacked once more.

On the other hand, Lion Yan was fighting two Fourth Grade Great Saints who had no chance of fighting back. One had spurted a few mouthfuls of blood. Luckily they had cooperated well with each other, or else the injured Great Saint would have been killed by Lion Yan. Even so, it was imaginable what the outcome of the battle would be.

“Haha! Killing you two are so easy.” Lion Yan laughed wildly.

The two Fourth Grade Great Saints weren't a threat to him. It was super easy for him to finish them off. As the patriarch of the Lion Race, he also had another title named 'Living Yama' given by other people. His means of killing were fierce and ruthless. In the Demon Race, most of the patriarchs wouldn't be willing to offend the Living Yama because they would not have a peaceful day once he was provoked.

On the other side, the three Great Saints were wailing bitterly. Whether it was the earth devil beast, or the Third Grade Great Saint devil, or Big Yellow, each of them had suppressed their opponents tightly. It was needless to talk about the earth devil beast as the Third Grade Great Saint devil was no match for him back in the Devil World, let alone when he was dealing with the assassin of Dark Shadow. As for the devil, he had the strong physique of a devil. Besides Jiang Chen's True Thunderfire and True Dragon Fire, no ordinary cultivators would be able to gain an upper hand against him.

Even though Big Yellow had just advanced to the Great Saint realm, he had reached the peak of the First Grade Great Saint. His bloodline was more powerful than Peacock King's. His current strength was enough to handle an ordinary Third Grade Great Saint.

While comparing these battles, the most violent of all would be Jiang Chen. Three Great Saints had died in his hands. Now there were only two Second Grade Great Saints left. It was not an easy task for Jiang Chen to kill Second Grade Great Saints. Under the

circumstances of one versus two, it was even more difficult, but it wasn't absolutely impossible to do so. Jiang Chen had many ways to kill when he knew the situation very well. Before killing them, he must confuse them. As far as their present situation was concerned, their psychological state had been in disorder. Killing the three First Grade Great Saints had sent a great blow to their confidence.

The next thing to do was to checkmate his opponents. He had to find a way to kill one first before killing the others. If the situation of one versus two remained, Jiang Chen wouldn't have the chance to kill them. After all, his opponents were in fact powerful Second Grade Great Saints.

The battle condition of the other few on the battlefield were all one-sided. The leader of Dark Shadow was suppressed by Peacock King, the two Fourth Grade Great Saints were suppressed by Lion Yan and the three Third Grade Great Saints were suppressed by one expert each. As for Jiang Chen's battlefield, it was filled with stench of blood. Although the two Second Grade Great Saints were still intact, their condition didn't look as good.

Such battle conditions made those Minor Saint assassins anxious. Each of them had lost their previous confidence and arrogance. Their current minds were occupied with worries. Jiang Chen obviously had come prepared. The comrades he had brought were very aggressive and powerful. If the battle continued in such trend, the consequences might not be bearable to the Dark Shadow.

“Argh...”

Suddenly, a cry sounded. The earth devil beast turned into his true form and ripped off half of his opponent's body. The Third Grade Great Saint gave out a shrill wail. He initially planned to escape but he could not do so due to the grip of the earth devil beast under such a condition.

Roar

The earth devil beast roared. He opened its bloody mouth and swallowed the Third Grade Great Saint whole. It was the cruellest way to eliminate an enemy. To the earth devil beast, eating a Great Saint had boundless benefits.

Chapter 905 - None Shall Live

The scene horrified the other two Third Grade Great Saints who had already been overpowered by the devil and Big Yellow. Their morale immediately immediately plummeted when they saw their comrade being eaten by the earth devil beast, directly leading to a decline in their combat strength, which made them even weaker in front of Big Yellow and the devil.

Roar

After devouring the man, the earth devil beast went wild. Its huge body immediately lunged at the other man. The combined attacks of the earth devil beast and the devil didn't give the Third Grade Great Saint a chance to resist. He was also left with half of his body before he was devoured by the earth devil beast.

“Earth devil beast, that was my opponent, why the hell did you snatch him away from me?”

The devil cursed. The earth devil beast interrupted when the devil was at the climax of his battle, causing him to lose the pleasure of killing his opponent. Even without the help of the earth devil beast, he could eventually finish his opponent.

The earth devil beast ignored the devil. He had gone completely mad, all of its eyes had already turned red, it rushed towards Big Yellow's opponent.

“Earth devil beast, get lost you bastard! This man is master

dog's!"

Big Yellow bore his teeth at the earth devil beast. He had just advanced to the Great Saint realm, and needed a strong opponent to test his strength. The opponent that he was currently facing was not weak. As such, he definitely wouldn't let anyone interfere in his battle.

Seeing the ferocious expression of Big Yellow, the earth devil beast halted hastily. Although it had a high and mighty bloodline, it wasn't as great as Big Yellow. It wasn't able to suppress a Third Grade Great Saint when it was still a First Grade Great Saint. He had also witnessed how Big Yellow went through the Nine Major Tribulation which deeply impressed him. Adding the fact that Big Yellow had a good relationship with Jiang Chen, even the earth devil beast wouldn't dare to mess with this dog. It wouldn't be happy if it made Jiang Chen's sworn brothers unhappy.

The most depressing part of this situation was the Third Grade Great Saint who fought Big Yellow. He had the impulse to spurt out blood. Anyway, he was a powerful Third Grade Great Saint, but now, he had become a prey to them.

"Earth devil best, let's go help master."

The devil said to the earth devil beast.

"Shove off! I will handle them myself."

As the devil's voice faded, Jiang Chen's voice was heard. He was in a similar situation with Big Yellow, the battle meant a lot to him. It wouldn't be easy for them to find opponents as strong as today's, it aroused his competitiveness. He was determined to take care of the two adversaries himself.

Jiang Chen sent a warning to them when the two of them were about to go and help their master out. Particularly the earth devil beast, whose ferocity had just been aroused and was feeling extremely frustrated trying to hold its urges back.

But then again, they couldn't defy Jiang Chen's orders. Then, their eyes fell upon the battlefield where Lion Yan was and found out that Lion Yan didn't need them either, his opponent was going to be crippled soon. They subsequently looked over at Peacock King's battle and saw that the leader of the Dark Shadow was constantly being overwhelmed by Peacock King, his Qi was getting weaker leaving them no room to help. Anyway, it didn't seem like they could interfere in such a level of battle. As the saying goes, even a thin camel is still larger than a horse. Even if the leader of the Dark Shadow was injured by Peacock King, it wouldn't be hard for him to kill the two of them. Besides, that was Peacock King's fight, they wouldn't dare join in unless they wanted to provoke him.

Finally, the earth devil beast and the devil's eyes fell upon the groups of Minor Saint assassins. There is a ferocious glow in their eyes. The earth devil beast stretched out his red tongue making him even more ferocious.

Hiss

Those Minor Saints caught a cold breath. They had no idea that their Great Saint masters would fail so miserably. These two ferocious devils seemed like they are targeting them, especially that terrifying earth devil beast whose eyes seemed to originate from hell. A glance from those eyes shivered their souls. Even the Third Grade Great Saint was eaten by it, let alone them.

“Heh! Heh! I am going to eat all of you ants raw!”

The earth devil beast laughed crazily. His small-hill-like body lunged at those Minor Saint assassins. The devil also refused to show any weaknesses. He launched at them at the same time. They had already gotten the order from Jiang Chen to kill everyone here, not letting a single one alive.

“Argh...” “Argh...” “Argh...”

For an instant, the entire void was filled with flying blood and flesh and incessant wails. The devil killed them violently, this was considered more humane compared to the earth devil beast who kept on grabbing assassins and shredding them into two parts as if it had gone mad and then swallowing their bodies. The scene was so brutal and bloody that it would make anyone puke. However, for the earth devil beast, such a scene was too common. The thick stench of blood in the air stimulated the earth devil beast even more, giving it the maximum amount of pleasure.

“Earth devil beast! You bastard!”

The leader of the Dark Shadow bellowed when he saw the scene and spurted a mouthful of blood, it wasn't caused by Peacock King's attack but because of his frustration upon seeing his assassins being slaughtered by the earth devil beast. He had spent countless amount of effort to cultivate these elites. He wouldn't feel that bad if these underlings died in the hands of their adversaries, but they were dying in the hands of the earth devil beast who was once their ally.

The edified earth devil beast had the same nature but its attitude had completely changed. It only took orders from Jiang Chen, completely ignoring the words of the leader of the Dark Shadow.

“Haha, receive your death now!”

Peacock King laughed wildly. His huge peacock body illuminated hundreds of millions of shining lights, lighting up the entire battlefield, but under these attractive lights were endless killings and destruction.

Peacock King had already known that those Minor Saint assassins were already finished. Not a single one would stay alive. He was undeniably clear about the nature of the earth devil beast. Once its demonic desire was unleashed, it would be hundred times more ferocious than a devil. It would slaughter the opponent directly. And now, these Minor Saint assassins were facing this wild earth devil beast. So, how are they going to protect themselves?

“Argh...”

At this time, another cry was heard from the battlefield. Then, they saw a bloody arm in Lion Yan's hand. He let out a lion's roar and his demon Qi pierced through the sky. The Fourth Grade Great Saint whose arm was cut off had an unpleasant expression now. Each of these uninvited guests was crazier and more violent than the other. Even if the two of them combined their strengths, they were still no match for Lion Yan. Given his current condition, there was no doubt that he would be ripped off by Lion Yan.

Roar

Lion Yan roared with rage as it had stirred up his blood. He lunged at his adversaries like a wild beast. In an instant, he broke past the defense of a Fourth Grade Great Saint and came to the Great Saint whose arm was cut off. A golden Qi imprisoned the Great Saint, similar to how one is trapped in a cage.

“Argh...”

Along with a wail, that Fourth Grade Great Saint was torn alive.

“Haha...”

Jiang Chen on the other side laughed. The situation was just as he had expected. From the start, the result of these battles were already certain. Today, none of the assassins here would be able to leave.

Standing on the other side of the river, the two Second Grade

Great Saints were horrified. Their minds were no longer willing to fight, their adversaries were just too strong and their leader was also completely suppressed by Peacock King which destroyed their hope. Now that a Fourth Grade Great Saint was killed, they wouldn't be too far away from death.

The two of them glanced at each other and nodded with a tacit understanding. Then, they flew towards two different directions in the form of two rays of light. They weren't fools. If the situation continued, they would only have one outcome. In that case, it would be better if they flee now, saving their own lives was the most important thing to do.

“Attempting to run? It's too late for that.”

The corner of Jiang Chen's mouth emanated a cold smirk. He caught up with one of them in a blink. As for the other, he didn't mind it at all. It would be impossible for that Second Grade Great Saint to escape the formation deployed by Big Yellow.

“Die now!”

With a single sword strike, it pierced through the Great Saint's body with a “Pu Chi” sound. If the two of them fought Jiang Chen together, they might be able to compete with him, but they chose to flee separately. That undoubtedly reduced their overall combat strength, furthermore, their minds were already in a state of disarray, which made them lose their fighting spirit, they were certainly no match for their vigorous adversary. He was slashed to death in a single strike.

On the other hand, the other Second Grade Great Saint that was escaping was blocked by the formation. There was no way for him to escape. As soon as he realized that something was wrong, he saw his comrade being killed by Jiang Chen.

“Jiang Chen, you...”

The Great Saint was really afraid. In his eyes, Jiang Chen was no longer a human but a devil.

“As what I have said earlier, no one would be able to leave this place alive. From now on, there won’t be a Dark Shadow anymore in the lands of Saint Origin World.”

After Jiang Chen finished, he made another lightning quick attack. The Heavenly Saint Sword was like a God’s weapon, it doesn’t require any effort for him to kill a terrified Second Grade Great Saint. Under the containment of the sword web, the Great Saint was only able to struggle helplessly before his head was cut off by Jiang Chen.

Presently, those Minor Saint assassins were all dead, after they were slaughtered by the devil and the earth devil beast. Not one of them was left alive.

Jiang Chen turned back to his human form and came to the side of the earth devil beast and devil. When he saw the bloody scene, he couldn’t stand it. “You two are really violent and brutal, especially you, earth devil beast. Why did you have to eat them

after killing them?”

“It’s my fault master.”

The earth devil beast was extremely irritated. ‘Why are you accusing us of being violent? Aren’t you more violent and cruel than us? Besides, it was you who gave the order to kill them all.’

Of course, these grumbles only sounded in its mind. It wouldn’t dare to defy Jiang Chen on the surface.

Hong Long

Suddenly, Big Yellow unleashed his innate ability. A beam of lightning shot out from the dragon horn, striking the Third Grade Great Saint.

Chapter 906 - A Big Gift

“Argh...”

There was an ear-piercing cry from the Third Grade Great Saint. This innate ability of Big Yellow was too terrifying. That Third Grade Great Saint was now too frightened and unmotivated to fight. He was caught off guard by Big Yellow's heavy attack. Thus, it was imaginable what the consequences would be. His body was instantly penetrated through, leaving a large bloody hole on his body.

After being penetrated through by the attack, he wasn't dead yet but he was totally at a loss for power. He wouldn't be able to stand another attack from Big Yellow. Big Yellow was extremely aggressive. He rushed towards the Great Saint, opened his mouth and bit off the Great Saint's head with a 'Ka Cha' sound, but he was still better than the earth devil beast which devoured the entire body of its enemy.

Meanwhile, Lion Yan also showed his powerful skill. The Fourth Grade Great Saint was firmly imprisoned by him. From the beginning until now, basically all the assassins faced the same condition. All their fighting spirit was expended because their opponents were overpowering.

One should know that fighting spirit and morale were very important factors in a real battle. Two rivals would reach a draw if their power were on par but when one rival's morale was increasing whereas the other rival's morale was declining, the other rivals would definitely be doomed despite he had similar

grade as his rival.

Moreover, Lion Yan was much stronger than the opponent. His opponent certainly was no match for him. He ferociously stuck out his lion claws and clawed straight through the Great Saint's chest. The roaring flames shrouding his lion claw were burning the Fourth Grade Great Saint, causing him to wail agonizingly.

“Haha...” Lion Yan laughed wildly.

The ferocity of the Demon Race inside him was completely aroused. A pair of terrifying lion claws abruptly moved to two sides, severing the Great Saint's body in two halves.

At this point, other than the leader of the Dark Shadow who was still struggling bitterly, no one was alive. The entire void was full of detached body parts and stench of nose-stinging blood. The scene looked literally like Asura Hell.

“Bastard...”

The leader who was still battling with Peacock King couldn't help yelling. The present scene dealt a terrible blow to his mental state. The Dark Shadow organization which he built painstakingly had completely vanished. It seemed he was going to lose his life as well.

“Patriarch of Lion Race, be careful, don't let this man run away.” Jiang Chen reminded Lion Yan.

The leader was a mighty Fifth Grade Great Saint after all. Although he had been repeatedly injured by Peacock King, they couldn't afford to let him escape. Big Yellow's formation might not be strong enough to stop a Fifth Grade Great Saint.

“Alright.”

Lion Yan's Qi fluctuated. He casted his countless of divine sense to wrap the entire spatial zone, not giving the leader the slightest chance of escaping.

“Peacock Feather Sword, destroy everything!”

Peacock King was enraged when he couldn't take down the leader until now. His pair of feather clothes turned into a brilliantly bright long sword. It was an unparalleled divine sword. It looked alive when it was held in Peacock King's hand.

A simple swing of Peacock Feather Sword made the void above the battlefield shine with brilliant rainbow-colored sword's shadow. Every sword shadow was like the real Peacock Feather Sword and had unlimited killing power.

Hua La

It had become a sea of swords. Under the control of Peacock King, the swords dashed towards the leader of Dark Shadow, making his facial expression change dramatically. This was the most powerful attack of Peacock King. If he was in his top form, he might be able

to defend against it, but with his current condition, it was undoubtedly difficult to defend against such attack.

“Dark Brilliance!”

Nonetheless, the leader was a Fifth Grade Great Saint. He wouldn't be killed so easily. The black long sword swung out numerous visible light. The Dark Brilliance collided with Peacock King's attack. The destructive impact completely destroyed the void around.

Countless of sword lights collided with each other, creating large sparks. Cracks had started to form on the barrier of the spatial zone and it seemed like it would collapse at any time. At this time, an incomparably brilliant brightness of rainbow colors suddenly appeared at the center of the sea of swords. It looked like a hanging rainbow-colored heavenly river. It moved at extreme speed and reached the leader of Dark Shadow in a blink.

That ray of light was Peacock King and the long sword in his hands.

Pu Chi

His sword pierced the leader's head and the sea of swords behind him vanished. This was the greatest attack of Peacock King. The sea of swords was nothing more than a disguise which made him look like a drop of water in the sea, allowing him to drift around at will and send a fatal blow to his enemies in silence.

“No, no...”

The leader of Dark Shadow could feel the rapid loss of his vital force. His eyes were full of disbelief. In his life, he was the one who always killed people. He had not thought that he would one day be killed and that the day would come so quickly.

“Like I said, your death isn’t in vain when you die in the hands of Peacock King. From today onwards, there won’t be Dark Shadow anymore.”

Peacock King returned to his human form while smashing the head of the leader.

Looking at the scene, Jiang Chen’s face was emotionless. In his opinion, this was the inevitable outcome of Dark Shadow. This outcome had been decided since the day Dark Shadow chose to offend him. In his mind, enemies were always the beings needed to be destroyed.

“This is intoxicating. It’s damn fun!”

Big Yellow was exceedingly excited. He had just advanced to Great Saint realm but he was able to have such thrilling battle. If the news of eliminating the Dark Shadow organization was spread to the public, it would shake the whole world, but they didn’t intend to tell anyone. The Dark Shadow was originally not a righteous major power and only existed in the darkness. As such, they would just let them vanish into the darkness.

Peacock King and Lion Yan looked at Jiang Chen with greater admiration. They knew that Jiang Chen was strong, but not to the extent where he could kill five Great Saints in which two of them were Second Grade Great Saints alone.

It was no longer possible to use the term ‘heaven defying’ to describe this mere Eighth Grade Minor Saint. They wouldn’t dare to imagine how powerful he would be when he breaks through to the Great Saint realm. It seems to be a wise decision to associate with Jiang Chen and Big Yellow. They believed that in the near future, earth-shaking changes would happen across Saint Origin World or even in the Saint Origin Palace due to Jiang Chen’s existence.

Jiang Chen walked towards Peacock King and Lion Yan. He saluted them with cupped fists. “Peacock King, Patriarch of Lion Race, Jiang Chen thank the both of you for helping me to eliminate the Dark Shadow. You have helped me get rid of one of my worries. Tremendous amount of treasure and wealth must have accumulated in this stronghold as the Dark Shadow had existed for a long time. All these treasures, including the combat weapons belongs to seniors, I do not need any of it.”

After hearing this, both of their eyes couldn’t help but lit up. They had already sensed the enormous amount of wealth left in this stronghold. Moreover, the combat weapons the Dark Shadow had were Minor Saint Weapon or even Great Saint Weapon. If they could bring all of them back to the Demon Race, it would certainly increase the overall strength of the Demon Race.

“Besides that, both of you have reached the peak of Fourth Grade

Great Saint. I have a Heavenly Demon Saint Art for you two. After the both of you comprehend it, I'm sure breaking through into the Fifth Grade Great Saint won't be a problem for you two." Jiang Chen said and told them the about the contents of the Heavenly Demon Saint Art via divine sense.

This was a supreme classic skill of the Demon Race that he had gotten in his past life. To the Demon Race, it was no doubt a masterpiece. During the time in Red City, he had also imparted this art to Black Hawk, allowing him to change enormously within a short time.

But how could the talent and bloodline of Black Hawk compare with Peacock King and Lion Yan's? With their comprehension ability, they would be the one who could truly exercise the power of the Heavenly Demon Saint Art.

Bang

After getting the contents of the art, both of their bodies trembled. Feeling the incredible Heavenly Demon Saint Art, their eyes gradually widened and their faces were filled with shock. Even with their demonic nature, they couldn't help but be temporarily stunned by it. One could tell the degree of shock the art had given to them.

"Heavenly Demon Saint Art. I can't believe that there is such an amazing secret art in this universe. I have a feeling that I will break through to the Fifth Grade Great Saint in at most ten days and my future achievements will become greater as the time goes."

“That’s right. At most, I only need a month’s time to advance to the Fifth Grade Great Saint. This secret art is too profound and wonderful.”

Peacock King and Lion Yan were both truly shocked. When they regained their senses, they stared at Jiang Chen with gratitude without blinking.

“Jiang Chen, we owe you a favor today. Your big gift is too priceless.”

“That’s right. Jiang Chen. We are unable to repay such a kindness. If you need our help in the future, we won’t ever refuse to help.”

Peacock King and Lion Yan spoke solemnly. Given their status and identity, it was very rare for them to make such a promise.

Peacock King and Lion Yan were extremely excited. They wanted to return to the Demon Race at once and go into seclusion to gain true enlightenment from the Heavenly Demon Saint Art. They felt that their trip today was very worthwhile. Putting aside those wealth and combat weapons in the stronghold, this Heavenly Demon Saint Art alone was an inestimable fortune that couldn’t be exchanged even with vast amount of wealth.

“Haha! Everyone is my friend. Hearing such words makes me feel like I’m an outsider. I, Jiang Chen, have always been like this. I will treat my friends the way they have treated me.”

Jiang Chen laughed heartily. As a matter of fact, this Heavenly Demon Saint Art had no use to him. The dragon transformation art that he practiced was the real terrifying cultivation art. In fact, he had forgotten about Heavenly Demon Saint Art for a long time. It's just that he remembered it all of a sudden. Then, he imparted it to Peacock King and Lion Yan as a way to show his gratitude for their help. Secondly, it had helped them a lot. Besides, the greater the cultivation grade of Peacock King and Lion Yan, the greater the help they could provide to Jiang Chen.

Chapter 907 - The Inferno Hell Reopened

Peacock King and Lion Yan looked at each other and laughed. Both of them were forthright seniors. That was the reason why they liked someone like Jiang Chen so much, someone who didn't beat around the bush and was straightforward on things.

“What do you think now, Old Lion? I do have a good insight right? This kid has caught my eyes during the time in Western Domain.” Peacock King spoke to Lion Yan via divine sense with great pride.

“Don't be conceited in my presence. I knew that he was good when I first saw him.”

Lion Yan wouldn't agree to Peacock King's words on the surface, but he understood in his heart that Peacock King would take most of the credit for being able to establish a good relationship with Jiang Chen. If it wasn't for Peacock King, he was afraid that Demon Race wouldn't have such a relationship with Jiang Chen today.

To them, obtaining the Heavenly Demon Saint Art was the greatest fortune that they had ever encountered. It was worth more than any heaven defying treasure.

“Let's go to the stronghold to collect all the treasures and wealth of Dark Shadow. And then, we'll destroy this place.” Jiang Chen said.

A few seconds after that, Lion Yan stuck out a large hand, emptying all the things in the stronghold while Peacock King unleashed a powerful spatial force, pulverizing the whole spatial zone before all of them left elegantly.

At this point, the top assassin organization of Saint Origin World had completely disappeared from the world. They were annihilated by Jiang Chen and his friends, using the most incisive and brutal way. If this story was spread out, it would certainly cause an uproar, as the Dark Shadow had a strong influence in the community of assassins. Their existence was the top of the pyramid.

As for those remaining smaller strongholds, Jiang Chen was uninterested about them. The headquarters of Dark Shadow had been destroyed. Those smaller strongholds wouldn't be able to cause any impact, at least not enough to be a threat to Jiang Chen.

Jiang Chen once again let the earth devil beast and the devil into his spatial ring. The earth devil beast had eaten two Great Saints, plus he had reached the peak of Second Grade Great Saint before this. It seemed that it wouldn't take long before he broke through to the Third Grade Great Saint. At the time, the beast would provide greater help to Jiang Chen.

There was no conversation along the way back to Demon Race. Peacock King and Lion Yan couldn't wait to train in seclusion back home. Their minds were now full of anticipation about the Heavenly Demon Saint Art.

“Elder Peacock King, Patriarch Lion, the patriarch is looking for

you two everywhere.”

They happened to bump into a Great Saint and he hastily told them that the patriarch was looking for them.

“The patriarch wants to see us? What happened?”

Peacock King was stunned, because they had just gone out for half a day.

“I heard that it was from the Saint Origin Palace. They have found an inferno hell in Eastern Continent, an ancient battlefield that was left behind. Today, it is already opened. So, Patriarch is looking for you two, it must have something to do with this inferno hell.”

“What? Inferno Hell?” Jiang Chen and Big Yellow yelped.

“Jiang Chen, you knew about the Inferno Hell?”

Peacock King looked over at Jiang Chen.

“Yes. Not only do I know about it, but I have also entered it. Big Yellow and I were both from the Eastern Continent, but the Inferno Hell was full of inferior beasts. There wasn’t even a single Combat King, let alone any treasure. That was a place for tough-training. How could it possibly attract the attention of the Saint Origin Palace?”

Jiang Chen was baffled. To the cultivators of Eastern Continent, the Inferno Hell was indeed a dangerous place, but to the cultivators of Pure Land, it was really a place of trash. Let's not talk about Minor Saints, any Combat Emperor who went there would be able to destroy the entire place a hundred times. Could such a small place really attract the attention of Saint Origin Palace? Wasn't this nonsense? Moreover, Jiang Chen was sure that there was no ancient battlefield in the Inferno Hell, but an Inferno City because he was in there for a period of time.

"It doesn't seem to be that simple. Let's go to the main hall to see the patriarch. The news comes from the Saint Origin Palace, meaning that it certainly won't be an ordinary matter." Peacock King said before flying towards the Spiritual Space main hall.

Lion Yan was following from behind. Jiang Chen and Big Yellow exchanged a glance before they followed them. They were very concerned about everything in the Eastern Continent, because that was the hometown of Jiang Chen.

In the Spiritual Space main hall, the higher ups of Demon Race were gathered. Heavenly Wolf King and Heavenly Leopard King were both sitting on the thrones. Below them were two rows, sat by a few dozen Great Saint experts. Everyone who was present in the hall had a pivotal status and position in Demon Race.

Since the outbreak of internal contradictions in the Demon Race, today was the first time that the bloodlines of Heavenly Wolf and Heavenly Leopard were sitting together harmoniously.

When Peacock King and them walked into the main hall, everyone looked at them. This situation told them that something big was about to happen.

“Patriarch, what’s the opening of the Inferno Hell about?” Peacock King asked.

“There was news from the Saint Origin Palace that an ancient battlefield emerged in the Inferno Hell in Eastern Continent. It was said that there was an inestimable amount of treasures, as well as inheritances left by many Great Saints. I’m afraid that the other seven families are ready to head for this Inferno Hell. It was also said that only the geniuses of Saint Origin Palace are able to enter this Inferno Hell. To many cultivators, this is a rare opportunity for tough-training. If one has good luck, one will obtain a lot of benefits from it. Our race can’t fall behind. I am ready to permit any volunteer to participate in this trial.” Lang Xingtian said.

After hearing this, Jiang Chen and Big Yellow knitted their eyebrows. There was a battlefield in the Inferno Hell? And inheritances left by Great Saints? Was this some kind of joke? How could that be possible? This was because they knew what was inside the Inferno Hell too well. If there were really inheritances and treasures, he and Big Yellow would have found it earlier, because he was the reincarnation of the Greatest Saint, and if he couldn’t find it, Big Yellow would be able to find it with his sharp senses.

One should know that a Combat Soul earth devil beast was enough to dominate the entire Inferno Hell. How could such a small place get the attention of the Saint Origin Palace and the

eight large families of Pure Land? This was nothing but real nonsense.

“Patriarch, Big Yellow and I have been to this Inferno Hell before. It was merely an ordinary place for tough-training. A single Combat Soul earth devil beast was enough to conquer the entire place. So, how can there be an ancient battlefield?” Jiang Chen asked.

“There will be no mistake about the news from Saint Origin Palace. If what you said is true, there is only one explanation. At that time, you have only entered the portal of the battlefield site. It is true that many can go into the Inferno Hell in the Eastern Continent, but this ancient battlefield has just been opened.” Lang Xingtian looked at Jiang Chen and said.

“Little Chen, it seems that the patriarch is right. The Saint Origin Palace won’t be wrong about this. Perhaps it was just a portal that we entered. Now that the ancient battlefield appeared, let’s just go there. Don’t forget about the blood talisman inside the Inferno Hell, it will greatly benefit you.” Big Yellow’s voice fell into Jiang Chen’s ears.

However, Jiang Chen wasn’t worried about the blood talisman, because it only recognized him. Even if other people saw it, they wouldn’t be able to get it. What was bugging him however, was Martial Saint Dynasty.

Swoosh *Swoosh*

Jiang Chen called out for the earth devil beast and the devil.

“Master.”

The scene virtually had shocked everyone, when these two devils called Jiang Chen ‘master’ respectfully. Everyone changed the way they looked at Jiang Chen. They looked more astonished than the time Peacock King and Lion Yan saw these two devils. Their eyesight naturally allowed them to see through these two devils’ cultivation grade. The earth devil beast was a Second Grade Great Saint and the devil was a Third Grade Great Saint. Although Jiang Chen had made some advancement, he was merely an Eighth Grade Minor Saint. How could an Eighth Grade Minor Saint possibly subdue two devils, especially the wild and intractable earth devil beast? If they weren’t seeing this with their own eyes, it was impossible for them to believe it. They really had no idea how Jiang Chen had done it.

But then, Jiang Chen didn’t have the time to pay attention to the shocked faces on those Great Saints. He immediately said to the two devils, “I need the two of you go to Martial Saint Dynasty at once. If something were to happen to the people in Martial Saint Dynasty, the two of you won’t live either.”

Jiang Chen hardened his voice. Martial Saint Dynasty was too important to him because Jiang Zhenhai, Yan Zhanyun and all his relatives and friends were there.

Although Martial Saint Dynasty had conquered Eastern Continent, they were mere ants across the Saint Origin World. Any expert who went there was powerful enough to annihilate the

entire Martial Saint Dynasty. More importantly, Jiang Chen had too many enemies now. Currently, a large number of experts were travelling to the Eastern Continent. It was too easy to find out about the relationship between Jiang Chen and Martial Saint Dynasty. Jiang Chen didn't hope to see any of those experts using those closest to him to threaten him. Those Minor Saint devils which he edified last time were certainly not enough given the present situation. He could only ease some of his concern if the earth devil beast and the devil were on guard there.

“Yes, Master.” The earth devil beast and the devil answered immediately, without showing the slightest bit of delay in response.

“Wait for a moment.”

Peacock King stopped the earth devil beast and the devil and said to Jiang Chen. “Jiang Chen. I know that you and Big Yellow were from the Eastern Continent and Martial Saint Dynasty is your hometown, and also that you are afraid that the opening of the Inferno Hell will affect the safety of your family. But it is important for you to keep the earth devil beast and the devil by your side. Given your present circumstances, they will be of great help to you. As for the Martial Saint Dynasty, Old Lion and I will go there personally. Besides, both of us need a place for seclusion. It doesn't matter whether we are doing it in Demon Race or in the Eastern Continent.”

After hearing Peacock King's words, Lion Yan nodded in agreement. They weren't interested in anything about the ancient battlefield after obtaining the Heavenly Demon Saint Art.

Chapter 908 - Returning Home

“Yes. The two of us will help you guard Martial Saint Dynasty. We shouldn’t be weaker than the two of them.”

Lion Yan spoke. They felt that they owed Jiang Chen a favour after they obtained the Heavenly Demon Saint Art. They would feel more at ease if they could help him. Like what Peacock King had said, it didn’t matter where they could go into seclusion. Their current cultivation didn’t really require Heaven and Earth Yuan Force. The key to cultivating the Heavenly Demon Saint Art was to achieve enlightenment.

“Well, in that case, many thanks to the both of you.”

Jiang Chen expressed his thanks with cupped fists. It would undeniably be better if Peacock King and Lion Yan could help him protect Martial Saint Dynasty. These two individuals not only have great powers, they also had high status. In other words, it was a great deal for him to get these two distinguished experts to guard Martial Saint Dynasty. Only Jiang Chen could get these two masters to guard on his behalf across the entire Saint Origin World.

“Alright. Since you two are going to help Jiang Chen, I’ll take care of the matters here.”

Lang Xingtian said. In fact, there’s really nothing much that needed to be managed here. He just needed to create a passageway that was directly linked to the Inferno Hell. Anyone who wanted to

get into the ancient battlefield would be able to travel through that channel.

“Alright then, we will leave now.”

Said Peacock King.

“How about this? Since I have to return anyway, let’s go to the Martial Saint Dynasty together. Big Yellow, go to Mysterious Domain and tell Ah Yan to come to the Eastern Continent. I will wait for you two there.”

Jiang Chen said to Big Yellow.

“Aye.”

Big Yellow said yes and disappeared at once. At any rate, this was a rare opportunity to have a tough-training. There might be a lot of benefits that was left behind by ancient ancestors or cultivators. So, how could Han Yan be excluded from such a good thing, who had the Ancient Divine Devil Bloodline? He might be able to acquire some benefits from it.

Swoosh

Jiang Chen and the two experts left the Spiritual Space Mountain in a flash, heading towards the direction of the Eastern Continent in rapid speed, this was a matter of urgency. They had to get there before the large group of experts from the eight large families

arrived.

The journey to the Eastern Continent was very far, but with their speed, they could travel thousands of miles in a gasp, for them it was just a simple task.

“Brother Chen.”

At this moment, a voice sounded from behind. Jiang Chen turned back and saw Yan Chenyu flying out of the Demon Race, she has just came out of her seclusion. Jiang Chen immediately felt a little remorseful for ignoring Yan Chenyu, he was busy with matters from the Demon Race, Gu Family and Dark Shadow.

“Xiao Yu.”

Jiang Chen pulled Yan Chenyu’s hands. Her current cultivation was already a Seventh Grade Minor Saint, which was already quite good.

“Brother Chen, where are you going?”

Asked Yan Chenyu.

“Going home, going back to the Eastern Continent.”

Jiang Chen told her about the opening of the Inferno Hell. Her face immediately revealed excitement after hearing it.

A bunch of people travelled at an extreme speed towards the Eastern Continent.

The Martial Saint Dynasty. It was as calm as always. As the overlord of the Eastern Continent, their status was unshakable. Ever since the incident with the Heavenly Sect trying to annihilate Martial Saint Dynasty, Jiang Chen had put in E Sha and the other two devils here on guard, making their defences as strong as a piece of iron.

The next day, a few silhouettes appeared like ghosts outside the Martial Saint Dynasty. They were the bunch of people who travelled at extreme speed – Jiang Chen and the others.

“Peacock King, Patriarch Lion, in front is the Martial Saint Dynasty. Hide somewhere now because I don’t want to give the people of the Martial Saint Dynasty too much pressure.”

Jiang Chen said to the two of them. These two seniors were overly powerful. If they appeared in front of them, it would create a great shock. As such, Jiang Chen instructed them to stay on guard silently. To these two seniors, it was too easy to find a place for cultivation. A simple spatial zone would do the trick.

“Alright, just go to the Inferno Hell and leave Martial Saint Dynasty to the both of us. I’ll make sure that not a single fly will enter that place.”

Peacock King patted his chest and assured him.

“Thank you.”

Jiang Chen clasped his fists at the both of them.

“There is no need for such courtesy.”

Lion Yan patted Jiang Chen’s shoulder and vanished along with Peacock King instantaneously.

“Xiao Yu, let’s go home first before going to Inferno Hell.”

Jiang Chen gently pulled Yan Chenyu’s shoulder with one hand, flying towards Martial Saint Dynasty.

“Stop! Who are you? You dare to intrude into Martial Saint Dynasty?”

The Martial Saint Dynasty was heavily guarded. There were sentinels a dozen miles away. Two guards wearing gold armour yelled and blocked Jiang Chen and Yan Chenyu. A dozen other guards were flying towards their direction as well. When the head of the guards saw the two of them, his facial expression suddenly changed, and immediately, he stepped forward and sent a slap to each of the two guards who yelled at them.

“You two idiots! They are Prince Jiang Chen and Miss Yan Chenyu.”

When the head of the guards finished introducing, he hurriedly saluted them deeply. “Prince has returned. These two are new here. I hope you won’t mind.”

“It’s fine. All of you have worked hard to protect Martial Saint Dynasty. These are the rewards for you all.”

Jiang Chen threw a spatial ring stored with ten thousand Heaven Rank Restoration Pills to the head of the guards. This amount of pills were nothing to him, but it was a huge sum of wealth to these guards.

“Leader, so that is Prince Jiang Chen. He is really young.”

The guard who received a slap approached the head of the guards and said with caution. Although he was slapped hard on the face, he wasn’t angry. One should know that they almost ran into Jiang Chen just now, who was the god in the eyes of the people in Martial Saint Dynasty. His existence was beyond the existence of the emperor. They felt very grateful that they were still alive until this day.

“Of course, the two of you have to open your eyes wider next time. Prince Jiang Chen is a great man. He won’t look into your faults and has given us some rewards.”

The head of guards was holding the spatial ring in his hand.

“Captain, do you know how much wealth is inside?”

Someone asked.

The captain opened the spatial ring with his divine sense. When he saw the spatial ring inside, his facial expression changed.

“Oh my god, ten thousand Heaven Rank Restoration Pills? My god, Prince Jiang Chen has given us so much wealth!”

The captain felt dizzy and couldn't really accept what he saw. This reward was too much for them. They wouldn't have dreamt of ten thousand Heaven Rank Restoration Pills even when they were sleeping.

When he returned, naturally he would gather all the higher ups of Martial Saint Dynasty around. Wherever he went, even if he went to the legendary Immortal World, Martial Saint Dynasty was still his home. He had the feeling of warmth whenever he returned home, like the fallen leaves returning to the roots.

In the main hall of Martial Saint Dynasty, there were Jiang Zhenhai, Yan Zhanyun, Wu Jiu, Xuan Ye, Guo Shan, Black Daoist, Yu Zihan. Every one of them was very close to him. Looking at these familiar faces, it reminded him of the things that had happened bit by bit along his path.

Jiang Chen and Yan Chenyu's return turned the atmosphere into a merry mood, especially for Jiang Zhenhai and Yan Zhanyun.

They couldn't stop smiling and felt happy. There was nothing that could make them happier than their son and daughter returning home.

After a series of greetings and small talks, Jiang Chen shifted the topic to the Inferno Hell.

“Dad, Brother Jiu. Have you heard about the opening of the Inferno Hell?”

Jiang Chen asked.

“Didn't Inferno Hell exist all the time? Anyone could enter it for a tough-training. Our people will go in there for trials at a certain interval of time. It has always been in existence. So what is it about this opening?”

Wu Jiu was a little shocked as he couldn't grasp the meaning within Jiang Chen's words. Wu Jiu had also entered the Inferno Hell before. His life was saved by Jiang Chen and Big Yellow in Inferno Hell. He didn't understand why Jiang Chen asked the question that he already knew the answer.

“It seems like you don't know that there is an ancient battlefield in Inferno Hell, which is now opened. The Inferno Hell that we entered last time is merely a portal. Those major powers in the Pure Land are already prepared to enter this ancient battlefield.”

Said Jiang Chen.

“What? The experts of the Divine Continent are coming over here?”

Wu Jiu exclaimed.

“There is no need to worry, Brother Jiu. I have already put experts in place to guard Martial Saint Dynasty. Even if these experts from the Divine Continent come, Martial Saint Dynasty will still be safe. Brother Jiu, one more thing, can you call all the cultivators of Martial Saint Dynasty who entered Inferno Hell before? It was imaginable how dangerous it would be if they encounter a large groups of experts in Inferno Hell.”

Jiang Chen said to Wu Jiu. He knew very well how arrogant the experts of the Pure Land were. In the world of cultivation, the strong ones were always respected and power was the supreme law. In front of those experts of the Divine Continent, the cultivators from Eastern Continent were no doubt ants. They could kill them at their whim or when they found them displeasing. It was uncertain whether these cultivators had already entered the opened ancient battlefield in the Inferno Hell, because if they do and given their cultivation, it would no longer be a life-or-death situation, it would be a certain-death situation.

Putting aside how strong and powerful the experts of the Pure Land were, it was hard to imagine what kind of deadly beings exist in the ancient battlefield. The beings in the battlefield weren't things that the cultivators of the Eastern Continent could handle.

“There is no way to call them back because Inferno Hell isn’t opened yet. They can’t leave the place even if they want to. I’m sure you are aware of this.”

Wu Jiu shook his head.

“It seems like I’ll have to make a trip there sooner.”

Said Jiang Chen.

Chapter 909 - The Arrival of the Experts

Wu Jiu's words also reminded Jiang Chen of the characteristics of the Inferno Hell. It was true that the Inferno Hell could be entered at any time, but the exit would only be opened once a year. Even if Wu Jiu could call for the cultivators to enter the Inferno Hell, they wouldn't be able to leave.

Therefore, Jiang Chen had to enter the Inferno Hell as soon as possible. One should know that there will be plenty of cultivators undergoing tough-training in there. The arrival of the experts of Pure Land would be a disaster to them. Even if those experts didn't attack them, the difference in power between the two groups was too big. The Qi that was subconsciously unleashed from these experts because of a single conflict would tremble them to death.

In Jiang Chen's eyes, the entire Eastern Continent was his homeland. He had made many memories here, which explained how important this land was to him compared to Pure Land in Divine Continent. The competition in the Pure Land shouldn't have involved the Eastern Continent. This had destroyed the tranquillity here. In the hearts of the cultivators of Eastern Continent, Jiang Chen was a supreme being, their guardian angel. As such, Jiang Chen didn't want to see any incidents that the ancient battlefield would do to them.

After resting in Martial Saint Dynasty for a while, Jiang Chen brought Yan Chenyu along to the entrance of the passageway to the Inferno Hell. As they were about to enter, they saw Big Yellow and Han Yan moving towards them in a distance. Big Yellow had a matchless travelling speed. His speed reached to an unimaginable extent after he advanced to the peak of First Grade Great Saint.

After informing Han Yan about the matter, he and Han Yan rushed back to the Eastern Continent using their fastest speed.

“Just in time. Let’s go into the Inferno Hell now. We have to evacuate the cultivators inside before the experts of Pure Land come.” Jiang Chen said.

“Alright.”

Big Yellow and Han Yan nodded. The four of them turned into beams of light, shooting straight into the entrance passageway. The next moment, the scene changed suddenly. They arrived in the Inferno Hell.

They were still very familiar with the Inferno Hell, but this time, they felt an ancient scent lingering in the void, which seemed to be the Qi of desolation. It was obviously different from the Inferno Hell before.

“Sure enough, as Lang Xingtian said, there is a huge ancient battlefield in this Inferno Hell. I have already sensed the smell of it.”

Big Yellow’s senses got aroused. He had to admit that he failed to notice this Qi in Inferno Hell last time. This ancient battlefield had apparently always been deeply hidden in the Inferno Hell.

“Let’s take a look at the other side of Inferno City,” said Jiang Chen.

With a sway, the four of them appeared in Inferno City. With their present cultivation level, it felt entirely different compared to when they entered here last time. This place no longer gave them any sense of threat.

To their surprise, the huge Inferno City had disappeared completely, leaving behind a land of ruins. There was an unknown dark mass occupying this land. Sweeping across this land, there were at least a few thousands of them. These people were the cultivators of Eastern Continent. They had come here to undergo tough-training. There were some who were sent into exile here.

At the present moment, these cultivators' eyes fell upon an illusory barrier ahead. It was transparent like the heavenly barrier. They could feel the cold and gloomy atmosphere blended with a trace of ancient Qi inside the barrier.

“It seems that everyone is here. Behind this barrier is the ancient battlefield. The Inferno Hell is just a portal, a gateway, but why had Inferno City disappeared? It seems like it had been destroyed.” Big Yellow said.

Jiang Chen frowned. He knew how strong Inferno City was, not to mention that it was guarded by the blood talisman. Currently, no experts of Pure Land were here yet. Who is powerful enough to destroy Inferno City? This matter raised too many doubts. Anyhow, they wouldn't be able to guess it. They needed to ask the cultivators here regarding the matter.

Hong

A powerful pressure rushed out of Jiang Chen's body. This invisible pressure hovered in the void above. For an instant, everyone felt that breathing had become extremely difficult, as if their hearts were pressed by a mighty god.

The cultivators who were watching the barrier were immediately alarmed. They turned their heads around and saw Jiang Chen and his friends. Then, they fell to their knees with a puff. They couldn't resist the strong spiritual pressure released, they could only kneel down on their knees.

"Don't be afraid. I am Jiang Chen. I believe you have at least heard of my name before. I have come to save your lives," said Jiang Chen.

"What? Jiang Chen. Jiang Chen has returned."

"It's him. I have seen him before. He is Jiang Chen. He hasn't changed at all, but he is getting more and more powerful."

"Yeah, the Qi he released made us feel like hell. It is overbearing, but what did he mean by saying that he was going to save our lives? Are we in a very dangerous situation now? What kind of existence is behind that barrier? That none of us is able to get in."

.....

Many people were surprised. Some raised their heads boldly but when they saw Jiang Chen's face, they hastily put their heads down again.

"Let me ask you all, who was the one who destroyed the Inferno City?" Jiang Chen asked.

"Prince Jiang Chen, no one destroyed the Inferno City, it collapsed on its own." Someone replied.

"What? Collapsed on its own?"

Han Yan sounded surprised.

"Yes. Not long ago, a barrier suddenly appeared in here. Then, the Inferno City broke down automatically. We saw a blood-red light rushing into the barrier. We tried to get in but we seemed to be blocked by some kind of invisible force. None of us could get in, so all of us are standing here, making predictions about it." Someone said.

After hearing that, Jiang Chen and Big Yellow were both surprised. What these people said was definitely true. They wouldn't dare to lie in front of them. Now, it seemed that the blood-red light was from the blood talisman. It seemed that after the emergence of this ancient battlefield, the blood talisman destroyed the Inferno City, going into the barrier. As to why these cultivators couldn't get into the ancient battlefield, the best explanation for this was that their cultivation grade was too low. They should rejoice for staying outside the barrier, because they

had no idea how many deadly dark souls and ‘things’ were born inside, for no one knew how long the ancient battlefield had existed. It was imaginable what the consequences would be if they got inside. It was sadly the case that they would be eaten by those devils after making a few steps in there.

“I have to say this to you all, behind this barrier is an ancient battlefield in which there’s an inestimable amount of evil ‘things’. With your cultivation grade, there is no doubt that you will die once you enter it. Besides, numerous experts will arrive here soon. If you all are involved in the competition among the experts, your deaths will be tragic. Those experts can blow you all to death with a simple breath. Presently, you are all waiting here in the Inferno Hell. What awaits you all will be only one thing – death.” Jiang Chen said aloud.

These words definitely weren’t just to scare them. The current circumstances in the Inferno Hell was no longer the former place of trial. These low cultivation grade cultivators would have to face their death sooner or later.

“Argh! What do we do now? The opening of the exit of Inferno Hell is months away. We can’t get out before that!”

“That’s right. Please help us, Prince Jiang. We know that Prince Jiang Chen must have ways to save all of us.”

“We don’t want to die here. Please save us, Prince Jiang.”

.....

Many people were afraid. Although they knew that there were countless treasures in this ancient battlefield, they were people who knew their own limits. Like Jiang Chen had said, if they entered with their current cultivation grade, they were basically killing themselves. Even if they stayed outside the ancient battlefield, they would also die.

“I’ll get you all out of here.”

After he finished speaking, he grasped at the void, tearing open the spatial wall of Inferno Hell. With his present cultivation grade, it was a piece of cake for him to enter and exit this ancient battlefield.

A black spatial doorway was tore open by Jiang Chen’s hands. Outside the doorway was the Eastern Continent.

“Everyone, leave this place at once. Anyone who chooses to stay will die.”

Jiang Chen’s voice rolled through the air. The cultivators of Eastern Continent didn’t dare to slow down their responses. They rushed towards the black doorway, pushing one another, fearing that it would close up at any moment. All of them were very worried for their own lives.

A few thousand people vanished in less than a minute. All of them had gone out of Inferno Hell. Jiang Chen finally heaved a sigh of relief. Otherwise, no one knew how many thousands of

people could walk out of Inferno Hell alive after the event.

The Inferno Hell suddenly turned very quiet. It lasted for not more than a minute, when a deafening explosion was heard. A dark spatial passageway emerged. Although no one was seen from there yet, they could already feel the incredible Qi from within.

At the same time, several more spatial passageways emerged simultaneously.

“They are the spatial passageways of the eight large families. Their response is quite fast.”

Big Yellow was amazed.

“A large number of experts have arrived, let’s go.”

Jiang Chen didn’t dare to neglect their arrival. He pulled Yan Chenyu and rushed into the barrier with Han Yan and Big Yellow. He wouldn’t want to meet the experts of the five large families here. He had no idea how many of them had come. If they really met each other outside the barrier, he was afraid that a large battle of life and death would be initiated, even before they entered the barrier.

He wanted to step into the ancient battlefield first to seek the blood talisman which would bring unimaginable benefits to him. Also, he could instinctively feel that if two blood talisman collided, it might bring him unexpected surprises.

Chapter 910 - The Super Battle Array

They entered the ancient battlefield without facing any obstacles. It is as if the barrier didn't exist at all. Jiang Chen sensed that the barrier would only prevent cultivators below Minor Saint grade from entering. Any cultivators above this threshold could enter freely.

Hu Hu

Cold gales were blowing from all directions, with a strong and ancient stench of decay. They could hear the faint howls of spirits due to the fact that the battlefield was once a land of death, full of blood and killings.

"Brother Chen, the atmosphere here is discomfoting." Yan Chenyu frowned.

"This is was a battlefield during the ancient times. It was a place of killings and death. It will be strange if the atmosphere here is comforting," said Big Yellow.

"Little Chen, look, there are variegated traces everywhere. There are also spatial nodes everywhere. This ancient battlefield isn't what we imagined it to be." Han Yan said while looking at the void.

"That's right, there are a lot of spatial zone here. Different spatial zone will lead to different locations. In which case, this is a tremendously huge ancient battlefield." Jiang Chen nodded.

The spatial zones were stacked to each other. Not even a very powerful Great Saint would be able to rearrange all the disordered spatial zones because it was fundamentally impossible to do it.

“Ah Yan, Xiao Yu, we will do it like before. We will look based on our luck. You two possess special bloodlines. The benefits you get will be boundless if your luck is good.” Jiang Chen said to Han Yan and Yan Chenyu.

“Okay.” The two of them nodded.

They chose a direction and vanished in a blink. Whether it was Han Yan or Yan Chenyu, both of them were people with great luck, but if they followed Jiang Chen, their luck would be suppressed by his.

Not long after they disappeared, Jiang Chen and Big Yellow vanished as well. In order to avoid meeting the experts of Pure Land, they needed to enter any of the spatial zone quickly.

It was a grey and misty spatial zone. Before Jiang Chen and Big Yellow could observe the surroundings, a great danger alerted their senses. A huge mouth abruptly appeared above their heads.

“Motherf*cker!”

Jiang Chen and Big Yellow couldn't help cursing. Their speed were extremely fast, as they moved to two sides to dodge the

attack.

Bang

The huge mouth hit the ground, creating a crater. Black smoke billowed from the crater. They now got a clear look at the huge ‘thing’. It was a very ferocious-looking monster. Its body was covered and flowing with black Qi. This type of Qi could make this monster vanish in this grey misty environment, catching the enemy off guard. Just like what happened to Jiang Chen and Big Yellow just now, they weren’t aware that the monster was approaching them. If they weren’t fast enough, they would be devoured by the monster.

Swoosh

Big Yellow flashed and came to Jiang Chen’s side and said, “What kind of creature is this? I haven’t heard or seen anything like this. It has already reached the cultivation grade of First Grade Great Saint. Due to it being integrated with the Qi in this spatial zone, it isn’t easy to find out about its cultivation grade.”

“If I’m not mistaken, it’s a creature born out of this ancient battlefield. It should have eaten the bodies of some Great Saint. That’s why it’s so terrifying,” replied Jiang Chen.

Roar...

The monster seemed angered because of the failed attempt and

let out a furious roar. A strong stench rushed out of its mouth. It smelled like poison that made people want to puke and also some other mixed feelings that couldn't be describe.

“Dammit! This ‘thing’ is extremely disgusting. Master Dog really can’t stand it any longer.”

Big Yellow was totally annoyed. He turned into a golden light and rushed towards the monster.

Hong Long

The unbreakable head of Big Yellow hit the monster’s skull. The monster made a shrill cry before its giant head shattered to pieces and turned into a bloody fog.

The huge monster’s body fell into the pit it created, and after a few random wriggling, it stopped moving, but to the surprise of Jiang Chen and Big Yellow, the monster had no demon soul. It was amazing and unexpected that a Great Saint monster didn’t even have a demon soul.

“Why didn’t it have a demon soul?”

Big Yellow felt very frustrated. He initially wanted to kill it to devour its demon soul because he could get a lot of benefits from it. This was the first time that he saw a demonic monster without a demon soul.

“All the energy of this monster is in its flesh. There is a vast amount of essence in its flesh which supported its entire body. If one can condense this essence, it will be even more precious than the demon soul. Unfortunately, the essence dissipated completely the moment the monster died. We don’t even have the chance to collect it.” Jiang Chen shook his head.

It was a pity that they got nothing after killing a First Grade Great Saint.

“I believe many Great Saints had fallen in this so-called ancient battlefield, which means there should be at least a few powerful Great Saint weapons. My trip will not be in vain if I can get a peerless divine weapon.” Big Yellow’s eyes were twitching uncontrollably.

One should know the preciousness of a Great Saint weapon. It was very difficult even for a Third Grade Great Saint to have a Great Saint weapon. Besides, Great Saint Weapons were divided into various grades. A peerless Great Saint weapon had inestimable value. If one could get one of these weapons, even if one could wield its power, one should keep it as a powerful trump card and use it to deal considerable amount of damage at the critical moment.

“I’m not interested in those average treasures. Now, I just need to find the whereabouts of the blood talisman. I have a hunch that if the two blood talismans combined, it will probably bring me unimaginable benefits, it may even push my cultivation grade to Ninth Grade Minor Saint,” said Jiang Chen.

“But there are countless of spatial zones here. Where are you going to find the blood talisman? It is like finding a needle in a haystack.” Big Yellow said.

“There’s one blood talisman inside my body. These two blood talismans belong to the same source. There should be some sort of connection between the two of them. Let me try it,” replied Jiang Chen.

Big Yellow was right. With so many spatial zones here, without a certain way of finding it, it would be like finding a needle in a haystack. It was conceivable how hard it was to find the blood talisman.

So, Jiang Chen must place all his hopes on the blood talisman in his Qi Sea. He immediately used his divine sense to connect with the blood talisman. After a while of communicating, he broke into rage and cursed the blood talisman.

“F*ck you! You think of yourself as a boss again? Eat sh*t! Dammit! I don’t care anymore!” Jiang Chen had the urge to spurt out blood.

This bastard blood talisman was too shameless. It hid itself and dominated a corner in his Qi Sea. It was as if it’s a supreme ruler. No matter how Jiang Chen tried to beckon it, not a single reaction was shown. It totally ignored Jiang Chen. It seemed as if blood talisman had gotten addicted being the ‘arrogant boss’.

Unfortunately, even after Jiang Chen cursed it, there was still no

responses from the blood talisman. In the end, Jiang Chen could only spread his hands out helplessly. It seemed like it was impossible to connect it with the other blood talisman. He would have to rely on himself on that task.

“What do we do now?”

Big Yellow shrugged his shoulders, but his eyes were gloating, his face was grinning at Jiang Chen.

Pa

Jiang Chen slapped Big Yellow's head. “Stop your sh*tty laughing.”

“There must be a certain connection between the two blood talismans. Even if I can't summon it out, the two of them will certainly be able to sense it. There isn't a single movement in my Qi Sea. That means the other blood talisman is still far away from each other. We'll have to take a chance. Once we are close enough with the other blood talisman, we'll feel something,” said Jiang Chen. This was the only thing he could do now.

Subsequently, Jiang Chen and Big Yellow continued heading to different spatial zones one after another non-stop.

Meanwhile, all the experts of the eight large families arrived in the Inferno Hell. The battle array this time was huge. Besides the patriarch, almost every elder was here. Many Fifth Grade Great

Saint elders could be seen from battle array.

Not only did the experts of the eight large families of Pure Land, but there were also experts from Saint Origin Palace that came. Most of them were young geniuses. Each of them was once an earth-shaking figure in Pure Land. They were either the top one or two genius on the Sky Ranking. They were sent to Saint Origin Palace after becoming a Great Saint.

Each of these geniuses were extremely arrogant. As a matter of fact, they had the right to be arrogant. They represented invincibility and some even had the superb ability to kill.

This time, the battle array were very large. If this news was spread, many other rogue cultivators would come. These rogue cultivators would be those very powerful rogue cultivators with high reputation across the land of Saint Origin World. Not just that, even the Great Monks of Great Lightning Tune Temple would be attracted to coming here as well.

It had been a long time since such a big incident happened in Saint Origin World. Clearly, the larger the battle array, the more people who could participate. It would become easier to throw the entire ancient battlefield into chaos, and that would make killings an inevitable incident.

This large number of experts didn't stay in the Inferno Hell for long. They immediately went through the barrier into the ancient spatial zone and dispersed quickly after that.

At this time, a blue robe youth appeared in the ancient battlefield. He had a strong domineering Qi. His eyebrows were filled with heroic Qi. His cold eyes swept around before he said coldly, “Jiang Chen, I, Desolate Yuan, has come. This ancient battlefield will become the place of your burial.”

Chapter 911 - The Battle of the Number One Genius of Sky Ranking

This youth looked only sixteen or seventeen years old, but his cultivation grade had already reached the point where people couldn't imagine he could at his age.

Desolate Yuan represented the peak and greatness among the young generations. He was an idol admired by countless of young people. The number one genius on the Sky Ranking was his title. He was an undefeatable genius, the youngest and scariest genius on the ranking. That's why he is always called the little monstrous genius by many people.

The strongest cultivation grade among the geniuses on the Sky Ranking was half-step Great Saint. The so-called half step meant half of the body had already stepped into the Great Saint realm and the cultivator was starting to grasp the power sphere of the Great Saint realm. However, this was non-existent to Jiang Chen. He was the reincarnation of the Greatest Saint. There was no such thing as bottleneck in his cultivation. That is to say, he could immediately break through into the Great Saint realm after reaching the Ninth Grade Minor Saint, leapfrogging the half-step Great Saint.

However, Desolate Yuan currently was full of thick Great Saint Qi all over his body, which indicated he had stepped more than half into the Great Saint realm. He had become a true Great Saint, a First Grade Great Saint. He was no doubt a young First Grade Great Saint, the youngest monstrous genius of Desolate Family. It was hard to imagine how powerful his combat strength was or how much damage he could deal to a person. Jiang Chen was able to kill

a First Grade Great Saint while he was Seventh Grade Minor Saint, but if he encounter Desolate Yuan, he surely was no match for him. But he had advanced to Eighth Grade Minor Saint now, which made a Second Grade Great Saint vulnerable to him. As such, the outcome was undetermined when the two of them met.

He had heard about the incidents about Jiang Chen: challenging all geniuses and also the death of Shi Han. At the time, he wanted so badly to fight him but because it was the critical moment of advancing to Great Saint realm, he had to restrain himself from the battle impulse. After he had succeeded in the advancement, it happened to be the opening of the ancient battlefield, in which he anticipated that Jiang Chen would come. So, besides coming here to search for valuable treasures and luck, he had another important goal – eliminate Jiang Chen.

Desolate Yuan knew that everyone, especially the young generation, were fixing their eyes on him and Jiang Chen. If he couldn't kill Jiang Chen, no one else among the young generation could even if there were a lot of geniuses on the Sky Ranking. This fact alone prompted him to kill Jiang Chen. Also, Jiang Chen had killed plenty of his people. He must claim this debt from him in the battle.

Not just Desolate Yuan alone, there were many people who wanted Jiang Chen killed. The experts of five large families had made up their minds that they must not let Jiang Chen leave the ancient battlefield alive. They had witnessed Jiang Chen's potential after a series of past events. A monstrous genius like him was too terrifying. If they didn't get rid of him as soon as possible, they would face endless future threats from this person.

Desolate Yuan intruded a spatial zone. This battlefield was left since the ancient times. The treasures were no doubt abundant. Of course, luck and danger are always coexistent. The greater the chances to obtain the treasures, the more dangerous the place would become. No one could tell how long had this place existed. There were a lot of evil souls or even scary dark souls turned from the dead Great Saints that could emerge out of nowhere at any second.

Jiang Chen and Big Yellow had flown through a dozen spatial zones. They got nothing besides killing some evil souls. There wasn't a single superior treasures found along the way. They couldn't find Jiang Chen's blood talisman either. The blood talisman inside his Qi Sea was still as ignorant as a war god and as still as Mount Tai. There was still no response from it.

"Looks like the blood talisman isn't around here. Let's move deeper to find out," said Jiang Chen.

He almost could conclude that the blood talisman in his Qi Sea would be able to sense it if there was really blood talisman nearby. Now the blood talisman in his Qi Sea didn't show a single reaction which meant the blood talisman wasn't present in the vicinity.

A man and a dog continued to penetrate into the deeper layers of spatial zones. When they encountered evil souls, they just avoided them to save time. All of Jiang Chen's focus was on the blood talisman. Now that countless of experts had arrived in the ancient battlefield, his life would be in danger at any moment. He knew very well that the grudges between him and the five large families wouldn't be resolved. He couldn't place all the hopes on Demon

Race and Gu Family. At any rate, his own strength was the most important of all. He only could cope with all of these problems when he improved his strength further.

He had just advanced to Eighth Grade Minor Saint not long ago. The next advancement would require another blood talisman. He could indistinctly feel it from his dragon transformation art that not only he would make an advancement to Ninth Grade Minor Saint after obtaining the other blood talisman, but also acquire other great benefits.

In Jiang Chen's eyes, all the treasures in this ancient battlefield wasn't as important as the blood talisman.

Soon, they had entered another spatial zone.

Roar

They heard a terrifying roar the moment they entered the spatial zone. A large figure went into their line of sight intensely. In front of them was a blue robed youth with a Qi that could lift a mountain. He ripped the powerful evil soul into half. Jiang Chen and Big Yellow noticed that the evil soul was a First Grade Great Saint and the blue robed youth was also a First Grade Great Saint, but the youth was able to tear the evil soul into half with bare hands. It could tell how heaven defying the youth was.

“One hit KO.” The youth said proudly.

Then he turned and saw the recently arrived Jiang Chen and Big Yellow. When he got a clear view of Jiang Chen's appearance and the sturdy large dog beside him, his eyes sparkled.

"You are Jiang Chen?" The blue robe youth asked.

He wasn't a new genius. He was Desolate Yuan of Desolate Family, the number one genius on the Sky Ranking. He had heard about Jiang Chen's appearance long time ago but he only had a blurred image of him in his mind. If he was meeting Jiang Chen one on one, he might not be able to recognize him, but when he saw the symbolic big yellow dog, he instantly knew the youth was Jiang Chen.

"That's right." Jiang Chen confirmed.

"Very well. I didn't expect to meet you here. Let me introduce myself to you. I am Desolate Yuan, the number one genius on the Sky Ranking. You should know what your fate is after meeting me?"

Desolate Yuan's face filled with sneer. He absolutely didn't put Jiang Chen in his eyes. After all, he was too strong and he had unparalleled self-confidence.

"What an as*h*le! So this is that number one brat on the Sky Ranking? The little monstrous genius of Desolate Family? Isn't he a half-step Great Saint? Why is he a First Grade Great Saint now?"

Big Yellow was a little irritated. An intense battle would be inevitable after meeting this number one genius.

“It seems he has already advanced to Great Saint realm, but it is better and more interesting this way. It would be pointless and boring if he had the same grade as Shi Han.”

Jiang Chen casually moved his body and readied himself for battle. He knew very well that there was only one outcome from this battle – either you die or I live.

Chapter 912 - The Star Hegemonic Physique

Desolate Yuan's hair fluttered. His two blue eyes glittered brightly, like two bright stars. His Star Hegemonic Physique allows him to absorb infinite absorb star energy. There were no stars in the ancient battlefield as his own energy was terrifying enough.

“You two attack together. You are both very important targets in my trip to this place. It would be worthwhile for the two of you to die in my hands.”

Desolate Yuan was incomparably arrogant. He was gazing at Jiang Chen and Big Yellow and demanded a two versus one battle. Anyway, he had the right to do so because he was the number one genius of the Sky Ranking, the youngest monstrous genius of the Desolate Family and was considered the most promising genius of the Desolate Family. It would be somewhat strange if someone like him lack such arrogance.

“Desolate Yuan, you regard yourself too highly. Dealing with me alone is already enough for you. If Big Yellow join the fight, it will become unfair to you, people might say that we bullied you. Back when I declared to fight all of the geniuses in the Pure Land, I have already said that I would accept any challenges alone. I have already killed Shi Han and today, I will also kill you as well. I didn't put the geniuses of the Pure Land in my eyes.”

Jiang Chen spoke while putting one of his hand behind his back. His tone was even more arrogant than Desolate Yuan. Across the young generation of the Pure Land, Only Jiang Chen would dare to say such words to Desolate Yuan.

“Fine. You are truly arrogant. I, Desolate Yuan always liked to kill people like you. I would like to see how powerful the man who slayed Shi Han is.”

Desolate Yuan fully unleashed all of his Qi in an instant. All the star energy rushed out like tidal waves. Every strand of energy contained unparalleled killing force. On the other side, Jiang Chen transformed into a half-dragon instantly. There was basically nothing much to talk about between the two of them, because ultimately, only strength could decide the winner.

Confronting Desolate Yuan and confronting Shi Han was a similar kind of fight. They were both a life-or-death fight. With his current strength, he wouldn't need to transform even if he confronted an ordinary First Grade Great Saint, but confronting Desolate Yuan who possessed the Star Hegemonic Physique was entirely a different case. He had to raise his combat strength by ten times, otherwise, he was afraid that he couldn't match Desolate Yuan's strength.

“Little Chen, this brat looks hard to deal with. Can you handle him? If you can't, let's just combine our strengths to get rid of this son of a turtle.”

Said Big Yellow. This guy certainly had a loud voice, he didn't even try to lower his voice. Hearing 'son of a turtle' these three words, Desolate Yuan could feel his blood boiling in his head. He glared at Big Yellow with furious eyes and snarled. “Stupid dog! I will skin you alive after killing Jiang Chen.”

One should know that Desolate Yuan had a very dignified status across the entire Pure Land and in his family. He was considered one of the high and mighty person. Today, a dog was bold enough to disrespect him. This dog definitely didn't know how to write the word 'death'. Using the word 'son of a turtle' in front of him was absolutely a great insult. He secretly swore that after killing Jiang Chen, he would make this dog pay the price by peeling the dog's skin off alive.

“No need for your help, just watch the battle at the side.”

Said Jiang Chen. As the Greatest Saint, he had his own dignity. This was a competition between him and the geniuses of the Pure Land, which invoked his competitive desire. So, he had to act alone, only then could he prove his own strength.

“Come on, Jiang Chen, I would like to see whether you can withstand three of my moves.”

Desolate Yuan grasped at the void with his hand. An incomparably bright star was formed immediately. It was a very beautiful star that illuminated a blue lustre. The roughly hundred meter large star looked like a small blue hill. The void trembled the moment the star was condensed, as though it couldn't withstand the pressure coming from the star.

“Go.”

Desolate Yuan hurled it hard. The huge star let out a strong roar while it charged at Jiang Chen.

This was the strike of a hill, no one knew how much power it carried. If one was hit directly, the consequences would be unimaginable. Even a First Grade Great Saint would be smashed to pieces if he was hit head on.

Nevertheless, Jiang Chen wasn't afraid. He now had 75 000 dragon marks which made him a peak Eighth Grade Minor Saint. In addition, the half-dragon form increased his combat strength by ten times. Although the star attack was very powerful, Jiang Chen's attack wasn't weak either. He countered with his strongest attack – Golden Dragon Seal. Three powerful golden dragons spiraled in the air as if real dragons had descended. The three golden dragons overlapped each other while charging towards the blue star frenziedly.

Hong Long

These two extremely strong attacks collided. The collision could only be described as world-shaking. The entire void was immediately destroyed. Many evil souls had been attracted out from darkness. Some low intelligence evil souls rushed over when they first felt the vibration of combat waves, unluckily, they were crushed to death by the remaining combat waves.

There weren't a lot of very powerful evil souls in this spatial zone. The strongest of all was a First Grade Great Saint monster which was ripped into half by Desolate Yuan earlier.

Gold and blue light intertwined, filling every inch of the void.

The battle waves created were too powerful. Everywhere was filled with destructive power. There were also many evil souls who attempted to intrude the battlefield but they died the instant they reached there. Jiang Chen and Desolate Yuan's body trembled at the same time from the impact. Judging by the collision, both attacks were equally powerful.

“What?”

Desolate Yuan was shocked. He hadn't even thought that Jiang Chen could withstand his first attack. To him, it was simply impossible. One should know that he was a true First Grade Great Saint now. Given his current cultivation base, he could easily pinch any First Grade Great Saint to death, but now, he just drew with an Eighth Grade Minor Saint. This must be a really funny joke.

While Desolate Yuan was surprised, Jiang Chen too was astonished. He was very clear about his own combat strength, and the power of the Gold Dragon Seal. The strike could easily kill a Second Grade Great Saint, but it only tied with Desolate Yuan's strike. It only showed that Desolate Yuan wasn't a feigned number one genius of the Sky Ranking. He was taken aback by how powerful Desolate Yuan's Star Hegemonic Physique was.

“It's going to be interesting.”

Jiang Chen stretched casually, producing some cracking sounds. A strong combat intent instantly erupted from him. The more powerful Desolate Yuan was, the more excited Jiang Chen would become, stirring up his fighting spirit.

“Jiang Chen, you have really surprised me. An Eighth Grade Minor Saint that could resist my strike. You should be proud by that fact alone. However I have already decided that you will certainly die today. The attack just now was just a probing strike to test your strength. I’m not going to be polite in the following strikes.”

Desolate Yuan said loudly. He erased all of the underestimation that he had for Jiang Chen and would treat him as a real adversary. At the beginning, he certainly didn’t put Jiang Chen in his eyes. He didn’t treat Jiang Chen as an opponent of equal level.

“What techniques do you still have? Show them all to me.”

Jiang Chen’s combat intent billowed, touching the void above. It wasn’t easy for him to encounter a truly strong opponent. As such, he was going to ignite all of passion in this battle.

“Meteor Rain.”

Desolate Yuan’s body floated in midair. Dazzling meteors suddenly appeared around him. These meteors were emitting a blue light. Every meteor was as large as the previous star, like a blue hill. The current Desolate Yuan was like the source of stars, being able to produce endless meteors for an eternity.

Swoosh *Swoosh* *Swoosh*

The meteors moved rapidly. For an instant, the entire void was filled with blue meteors. Countless meteors occupied every inch of space. Each and every one of these blue meteors had unmatched destructive force.

The number of meteors continued to increase. Under the control of Desolate Yuan, countless meteors began to attack Jiang Chen. This was a large-scale attack. The countless of meteors formed a starry ocean, a chaotic starry ocean. The infinite energy from it could destroy the entire spatial zone and all the lives here.

“This bastard really has some tricks.”

Big Yellow who was watching the battle from a distance couldn't help but spoke. He admitted that this guy was worthy of being the number one genius of the Sky Ranking. His Star Hegemonic Physique was far more powerful than any average genius.

“Five Elemental Combat Dragon Seal.”

Jiang Chen bellowed. Countless of dragon shadows that emitted five various colors spiraled out Jiang Chen's body and straight into the starry ocean, colliding with those meteors. Those golden dragons in particular were tyrannical. Some of them straight away opened their mouths and swallowed the meteors. The powerful Five Elemental Combat Dragon Seal was a true dragon's combat technique. It was conceivable how powerful this technique was. Today, five different types of combat techniques had been unleashed at the same time. Suddenly, the principle of attraction and repulsion of the five elements had been demonstrated. With so many real dragons present in the starry ocean, half of the meteors

in the ocean had been destroyed. Countless of meteors were instantly crushed in the collision. The explosion from the collisions damaged half of the void. If anyone saw this battle, they would certainly be gaping at this fierce scene.

Deng *Deng* *Deng*

This time, Desolate Yuan absorbed a certain amount of backlash. He staggered three steps backwards before regaining his balance, whereas Jiang Chen only moved a step backwards. From here, it showed that Jiang Chen gained the upper hand in this round of battle. Desolate Yuan's facial expression turned very ugly. It wasn't because he was injured or something. Such backlash could never deal any damage to him. The drastic change in his expression was largely due to Jiang Chen's power. He had never have thought that Jiang Chen, who was just an Eighth Grade Minor Saint, could reach such a terrifying extent that he managed to gain the upper hand in the battle. This must be the funniest joke at the present time, but it really happened. This kind of result was truly unacceptable to Desolate Yuan. This was a very heavy blow to him. It was simply a great humiliation towards his existence.

Chapter 913 - Corpse Sacrificial Altar

“What else do you have? So, the Star Hegemonic Physique is just this strong.”

Jiang Chen gazed at Desolate Yuan and said in a flat tone.

‘The Star Hegemonic Physique is just this strong?’ Listening to this remark, Desolate Yuan had an impulse to spurt blood. Since the day he was born, he had been the shining star, the supreme genius and the object of indulgence of the higher echelons, a figure that was worshipped by the young generation and the idol of countless people. No one had ever humiliated him with such words.

“Jiang Chen, don’t be all-over yourself. I, Desolate Yuan will never lose, at least not to you.”

His hair had already been dyed blue by the star energy. For the first time in his life, he felt this angry. He had never wanted to kill a person so badly.

He moved again. He spread out his arms. In between his arms was a blue star energy, which was at least three times stronger. In the sparkle of the light, a blue starry spear materialized. It was condensed by the Star Hegemonic Physique, but it looked no different than a real combat weapon.

“Jiang Chen, I will let you taste my spear!”

Desolate Yuan growled, carrying a ten foot long starry spear. He lunged at Jiang Chen. This starry spear had an incomparably terrifying power to kill. It was the strongest technique of Star Hegemonic Physique which was even more powerful than the Meteor Rain just now. This attack was powerful enough to impale a Second Grade Great Saint to death.

Clang

Jiang Chen was fearless. Immediately, he took out the Heavenly Saint Sword, creating a pleasant whistling of the sword, before it turned into a shadow of a blood-red dragon and lunged at the starry spear of Desolate Yuan. The Heavenly Saint Sword had already been fused with five fragments. A simple swing could already send a truly powerful strike of the Heavenly Saint Sword, which was also the most powerful technique of Jiang Chen. Thus, this metal had no problem handling the starry spear of Desolate Yuan.

Hong Long

The sword and spear collided, and once again, an unparalleled energy erupted. This was an extreme collision. There was no doubt that Desolate Yuan's starry spear was really powerful. It sent Jiang Chen roughly a dozen steps away, but his situation was even worse than Jiang Chen. His starry spear was broken, and he spurted out a mouthful of blood after the impact.

“Jiang Chen, I will kill you.”

Desolate Yuan wiped the blood at the corner of his mouth and disappeared in a flash, after leaving a line of vengeful words. He was a very smart person, either that or he might have other trump card, but after two rounds of battle with Jiang Chen, he understood that it was impossible for him to kill Jiang Chen in this place. If he continued to fight, he might end up dead. Thus, he made up his mind to give up the battle temporarily until he got something from the ancient battlefield that could improve his current strength.

“Why did you let him go?”

Big Yellow came to Jiang Chen and grumbled. Someone like Desolate Yuan would definitely bring numerous troubles to them if he was allowed to flee.

“Though I prevail over him in the battle, he didn’t suffer any substantial harm. Given his ability, I won’t be able to stop him if he is determined to flee. He is a very clever person. He immediately withdrew himself from the fight when he saw that there was no chance of him killing me. If he was like Shi Han and continued to get entangled with me, his psychological defense would certainly be broken by me, and I will consume all of his combat strength and then find an opening to eliminate him. However, he chose to flee, so there’s nothing that I can do about it.”

Jiang Chen shook his head. It seemed like he had to wait for another time to get rid of this Star Hegemonic Physique cultivator.

“If I attacked, I could have stopped him.”

Big Yellow felt a little regretful, or perhaps the correct word would be remorseful, but they couldn't deny the fact that Desolate Yuan was really smart. He was watching the battle expectantly, but who knew that this guy would suddenly stop fighting and escape?

“It doesn't matter anyway. He is just a defeated opponent. I have the same confidence of handling him in the next encounter. Now, let's look for the blood talisman. As long as we can find the blood talisman, I would be able to kill him instantly in the next fight.”

Jiang Chen kept his dragon sword and returned to his human form. He and Big Yellow continued their search for the blood talisman. In the previous battle, Desolate Yuan couldn't kill him, it was also not easy for him to kill Desolate Yuan. He now had the same intention as Desolate Yuan, which was to find great treasures in the spatial zones to improve their current strength before their next fight. If Jiang Chen could advance to the Ninth Grade Minor Saint, it would be a piece of cake to kill Desolate Yuan.

As a matter of fact, if Jiang Chen released the earth devil beast and the devil, he wouldn't have any problem stopping Desolate Yuan, but he didn't want to rely on external strength. He wanted to kill Desolate Yuan himself.

Jiang Chen and Big Yellow turned into two beams of light and went through different spatial zones like ghostly figures. Jiang Chen ignored all the evil souls and treasures. He only focused his attention in looking for the blood talisman. Unknowingly, they had already been flying in the spatial zones for a few hours now.

Weng *Weng*

Suddenly, the blood talisman that had been silent in his Qi Sea vibrated and gave out a buzzing sound. Jiang Chen stopped instantaneously. He beckoned, and the blood talisman flew out of his Qi Sea and floated in front of him.

“There is a response. The blood talisman must be here.”

Jiang Chen’s eyes lit up. He finally found it. As long as it was the same blood talisman that he saw that year, he would be able completely refine it. After that, he would directly advance to the Ninth Grade Minor Saint without a single problem.

The blood talisman rippled around Jiang Chen and then, it pointed to a certain direction and flew towards it rapidly. Jiang Chen was ecstatic. He immediately followed the blood talisman. Clearly, the direction would lead them to the other blood talisman. Something like this would only happen if two blood talismans sensed each other.

Jiang Chen and Big Yellow didn’t speak, but followed the blood talisman. They flew for a few hundred miles and reached the center of the spatial zone. The both of them opened their mouths in surprised when they saw the scene.

In front of them was roughly a ten meter high altar. Generally, it wouldn’t be surprising to see an altar, but this altar was no ordinary altar. It was built entirely out of corpses. At least a few

hundred corpses were stacked like a small hill. What's more surprising was that the lowest grade cultivators among them was an Eighth Grade Minor Saint and there were cultivators of Seventh Grade and Eighth Grade Great Saints in the pile of bodies. That was too scary to see, so many corpses piled into an altar.

Above the altar was a blood talisman drifting around. It was no doubt that this was the blood talisman of Inferno Hell that Jiang Chen saw last time.

Chapter 914 - The Embryonic Form of Ancestral Dragon Pagoda

The scene shocked Jiang Chen and Big Yellow completely. It was both terrifying and mysterious. It was a sacrificial altar piled with the corpses of Saints. The air was filled with the Qi of death, but behind this horrifying scene was a land of treasure. Although these corpses were left dead for a long time, there were many bodies of Saints being heaped up. A single body could accumulate unimaginable amount of energy. With so many corpses stacked together, the term ‘unimaginable’ would no longer suffice to describe the overall energy accumulated within these bodies.

However, what bothered Jiang Chen was why the blood talisman would choose to appear in such a place. Could it be that the blood talisman was interested in the bodies of the Saints?

“Little Chen, this is too frightening. What on earth is this blood talisman? It gives me a very abstruse feeling.” Big Yellow retracted his neck a little. This was the first time he saw such a scene, which made him feel somewhat terrified.

“How on earth would I know about this?” Jiang Chen shook his head.

The intention of the blood talisman was very mysterious. Even though he had guessed that they were likely brought here deliberately by the blood talisman, he had no clue what was the connection between this place and the blood talisman.

At this moment, the blood talisman that led them here rushed towards the altar. Jiang Chen could feel the excitement from it as it rose towards the altar. That excitement wasn't from meeting the other blood talisman but because of the corpse-made altar.

Weng *Weng*

The two blood talismans converged and emitted countless blood-red light that wrapped the entire sacrificial altar. The two blood talismans rotated in high speed, trying to merge together, but it seemed something was missing, disrupting the merger.

“Little Chen, did you see that? These two blood talismans want to merge together, but it seems something invisible is blocking them from merging,” said Big Yellow.

“I know now. I am the factor that prevents them from merging. One of the blood talismans has already been refined by me and the energy within has also been absorbed by me which means my blood was already connected to it. As for the other blood talisman, I haven't refined it. Thus, as soon as I refine that blood talisman, both blood talismans will be able to merge completely, and then all the problems will resolved.”

Jiang Chen's eyes lit up. In fact, he was a little excited in his heart. He had already anticipated that the combination of the two blood talismans would bring him unexpectedly great results. Currently, the sacrificial altar had made the other blood talisman more mysterious and he knew that this mystery was related to his prediction. So, as long as he refined the other blood talisman, he would be able to know the secret in the mystery as to why would

the blood talisman come to such a place?

Jiang Chen gestured with his hands, signaling the blood talisman. The two blood talismans immediately flew away from the altar and towards him. Jiang Chen caught them by his hand and immediately felt a cordial feeling. Last time in the Inferno Hell, it was impossible for him to control it, but with his current cultivation strength, it did not show any resistance, especially the blood talisman that he refined in the Suspended Tower.

“Big Yellow, guard my surroundings. I will refine the blood talisman now.” Jiang Chen said to Big Yellow.

“En.” Big Yellow nodded. This was a critical moment where he wouldn’t dare to be sloppy.

Jiang Chen sat cross-legged on the ground, integrating two blood talismans into his body and his dragon transformation art began to circulate frenziedly. At the moment, the blood talisman danced wildly as if it could sense the presence of the dragon transformation art. Then, it saw an image of a dragon flickering in the blood talisman. The dragon was roaring overbearingly at the sky.

The blood talisman seemed to contain the blood of an ancestral dragon. Traces of energy flowed out and diffused into Jiang Chen’s limbs and bones, and at the same time, new dragon marks began to form under the circulation of dragon transformation art.

This was the stimulation in the bloodline, which was very

beneficial to Jiang Chen. Almost a minute later, a thousand dragon marks had been condensed, making a total of 76 000 dragon marks in his body, and this amount was exactly the threshold to advance to the Ninth Grade Minor Saint.

Hong

A powerful Qi shot out of his body. Crazy amount of high grade True Meta Stones were being refined and absorbed. Soon, Jiang Chen's cultivation grade had reached Ninth Grade Minor Saint and his combat strength had improved tremendously.

However, after reaching the Ninth Grade Minor Saint, the number of dragon marks didn't stop increasing. Another one thousand dragon marks were condensed very quick, making the total dragon marks 77 000.

Nevertheless, the advancement from Minor Saint realm to Great Saint realm wasn't easy. The normal advancement for every grade in Minor Saint realm was 2 000 dragon marks, but advancing to the Great Saint realm required 4 000 dragon marks. In other words, Jiang Chen must hit the threshold of 80 000 dragon marks in order to advance to Great Saint realm. As such, it was impossible to think of using the blood talisman to break through into the Great Saint realm.

Weng *Weng*

The blood talisman was completely refined. The two blood talismans then merged together. It was the most intimate fusion.

After that, the speed of circulation of dragon transformation art increased by a few times. This circumstance truly had stirred up Jiang Chen's excitement.

“Haha! I didn't expect that the fusion of the two blood talismans could prompt the dragon transformation art into a metamorphosis again. The feeling is really great! I just don't know what great combat technique this metamorphosis will bring me.” Jiang Chen couldn't help but laughed. This was a situation which was out of his expectation and it had given him the biggest surprise. One should know that every metamorphosis of the dragon transformation art would bring Jiang Chen unimaginable benefits. At the very least, he would acquire some kind of great combat dragon seals.

In the first metamorphosis of the dragon transformation art, Jiang Chen had acquired True Dragon Palm and True Dragon Fire. In the second metamorphosis, he had acquired Azure Dragon Five Steps. In the third metamorphosis, he acquired the Five Elemental Combat Dragon Seal. He was full of anticipation of what he would acquire in the fourth metamorphosis.

Moreover, the metamorphosis would also bring tremendous benefits to his cultivation grade. For instance if Jiang Chen could condense another two thousand dragon marks after the metamorphosis, the total of dragon marks in his body would reach 79 000 and he would reach the peak of Ninth Grade Minor Saint.

At the same time, a message appeared out of nowhere in his mind: The Ancestral Dragon Pagoda. It is the Supreme Divine Weapon of true dragon. Once this ninety-nine storey Ancestral

Dragon Pagoda is successfully condensed, it can initiate apocalypse and scorn the universe...

This was about the legend of a Supreme Divine Weapon and the ways to condense it. Before Jiang Chen could comprehend it thoroughly, the two blood talismans rushed out of his body.

Swoosh *Swoosh* *Swoosh*

Numerous beams of blood-red lights were emitted from the blood talismans. Every beam of light was incomparably dazzling. The blood talisman disappeared as the rays of light increased, as though it had turned completely into one of the rays of blood-red light. Then, a blood-red ancient pagoda appeared, or one should see it as an embryonic ancient pagoda, it was an illusory image.

And even if it was illusory, it gave people an enormous feeling of shock. The top of the ancient pagoda went straight into the sky. The ancient and noble Qi that was exuded from the pagoda aroused people's impulse to worship it.

“My god, what's this tower? Although it is only an illusory image, it is more honourable than the Suspended Tower. Furthermore, this ancient pagoda gives people a feeling of everlasting that is greater than the sky, it is as though it is above all the laws and principles of nature.”

The spectacle sent him an extreme degree of shock.

“Ancestral Dragon Pagoda.” Jiang Chen murmured.

He knew that the fusion of the two blood talismans had formed the embryonic form of the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda. This time, the metamorphosis of the dragon transformation art had given him the method to condense this pagoda. In other words, he would have to condense every floor of this pagoda in the course of his future cultivation.

“According to the secret of Ancestral Dragon Pagoda, there is only one way to condense this out. That method is by absorbing energy. Absorb any kind of energy that can be absorbed. There is virtually nothing in the Heaven and Earth that the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda can’t absorb. In which case, I have found the purpose of this pile of bodies.”

Jiang Chen’s eyes sparkled. He used his mind to will the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda up to the altar above the pile of corpses. Then, a blood-red light pillar permeated from above. The countless amount of energy from the bodies were being sucked by the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda.

Afterwards, all the corpses collapsed and turned into energy. Even though the bodies were dead for a very long time, the energy inside them were unimaginable and vast, especially when these energies were from the corpses of so many Great Saints.

In just a few blinks, the several meter tall corpses were all absorbed by the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda.

Hong Long

A loud rumble was heard from the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda. The last floor of the pagoda was starting to materialize, but this amount of energy only allowed it to condense half of the first floor. The half-materialized first floor was covered with a blood-red wall. The surface of the walls was carved with stands of blood-red dragon marks that illuminated a dazzling light. The ancient Qi coming from it sent an enormous pressure to anyone nearby.

“Oh my! What the hell is this Ancestral Dragon Pagoda? Only half a floor was condensed after using the energy of all these Saint corpses? This is overly heaven defying.”

Big Yellow flopped down to the ground while he was still gaping at the pagoda. He wasn't the only one who had such a reaction, even Jiang Chen had widened his eyes. There were ninety-nine floors in this pagoda. He initially thought that this pile of corpses could help materialize eight or ten floors but the result was that only half of a floor was condensed out.

Jiang Chen and Big Yellow now understood why the blood talisman had chosen to appear in this place. This sacrificial altar was specially prepared for the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda.

Facing this kind of situation, it gave Jiang Chen the urge to faint. The first floor had taken so much energy just to materialize half of it. No one could imagine how much energy it would take to materialize ninety-nine floors. It would certainly be an astronomical figure.

The dragon transformation art that Jiang Chen cultivated was originally a cultivation that required boundless amount of energy. Now with this Ancestral Dragon Pagoda, it would make him a true vampire that sucked energy.

Nonetheless, the increasing difficulty of the condensation of the floors indicated that the power of this ancient pagoda would become stronger as well. Anyway, Jiang Chen wasn't in a hurry about materializing it because it wouldn't do any good by being hasty. The materialization of this pagoda was a long process and it definitely couldn't be achieved within one or two days. In any case, he had obtained inestimable benefits after refining the blood talisman.

Chapter 915 - Acting Recklessly

The front of the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda was emitting a dazzling blood-red light. Jiang Chen and Big Yellow accepted what they saw after regaining their senses from the shock. They started to feel excited. Big Yellow wasn't a fool, so naturally he was able to see the strength of this ancient pagoda.

“Let me try how powerful the defensive strength of this Ancestral Dragon Pagoda is,” said Big Yellow.

His huge body sprang forth. Golden lights glowed from his head as he hit the pagoda. Jiang Chen was holding his breath at one side without blinking. He wanted to see how powerful this Ancestral Dragon Pagoda was. Big Yellow was now a powerful First Grade Great Saint. His head was more powerful than a combat weapon and was virtually indestructible. It was powerful enough to pulverize a mountain.

Dong

“F*ck!”

When Big Yellow's head hit the half materialised first floor, a loud clang was heard. The Ancestral Dragon Pagoda shook slightly but Big Yellow was bounced back to his original position. He cursed as he felt his head spinning after the impact.

“Big Yellow, how was it?”

Jiang Chen was delighted.

“Too f*cking powerful! This thing doesn’t just have amazing defensive strength, it also has incredible power. My attack just now was unable to do any harm to it. It is truly terrifying. It’s hard to imagine how powerful it will become if all ninety-nine floors are all condensed out.”

Making Big Yellow, who is a very conceited being, say such things showed how powerful the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda was.

“Indeed. This tower will become one of my trump cards. But it can’t perform its true strength yet because the first floor hasn’t been completely materialized yet. Now, I have to think of ways to complete the condensation of the first floor. After that, this pagoda will be an awesome card.”

Jiang Chen’s eyes glowed after witnessing the power of the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda. He had already formed a new plan in his heart. Across this ancient battlefield, there were treasures, powerful evil souls and some monsters. After killing evil souls, they could be converted into energy for the pagoda to absorb.

“By the way, the nature of Ancestral Dragon Pagoda is a combat weapon. I wonder if it can absorb combat weapons as well.”

Jiang Chen suddenly thought of an idea. He had quite a lot of combat weapons in his storage, most of them were Minor Saint Weapons. If the pagoda could absorb almost anything, what about

combat weapons?

Hua La La

After he finished speaking, he took out a few dozens of combat weapons and threw them to the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda.

Weng *Weng*

Suddenly, the pagoda circulated in high speed. Dragon roars were heard, as though those combat weapons were being melted by magma. In a few blinks, the dozens of combat weapons were all melted by the pagoda. As Jiang Chen said, the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda belonged to the combat weapon category. After absorbing the combat weapons, the power of the pagoda improved, and a small portion of the first floor was condensed.

“This is crazy. This bloody pagoda can really swallow anything and absorb any kind of energy.”

Big Yellow was speechless.

“Moreover, I found a crazier thing. For every energy absorbed by the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda, a bit of its body will materialize, and the dragon transformation art will circulate faster. My cultivation grade too will be enhanced a little. Just now when it absorbed those combat weapons, a dozen dragon marks were formed in my body.”

Jiang Chen was extremely delighted. He realised that his bloodline was connected to the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda. So, his cultivation grade would directly affect the pagoda's burst of power. And besides that, he would also gain improvement while the pagoda was materializing. This was absolutely a flawless weapon.

Jiang Chen had been using the dragon transformation art to refine and absorb demon and devil souls, which gave him the concern that his cultivation foundation would be unstable. The enhancement in the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda on the other hand also meant the enhancement in the core of dragon transformation art, which was equivalent to stimulating his own potential. It wouldn't affect his cultivation foundation, but instead would make him more powerful.

“Little Chen, what kind of cultivation law are you practicing? How can you be so abnormal?”

Big Yellow was getting interested in Jiang Chen's cultivation method. He was a being that possessed Divine Beast Bloodline. In other words, he was blessed with great endowments, but comparing his cultivation to Jiang Chen's was absurd.

“Extraordinary Omnipotent Law.”

Jiang Chen chuckled. With a flick of his hand, the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda turned into a dust particle and entered his body. He observed the pagoda closely and found out that the materialised floor was a huge space filled with manic energy.

He then sent the earth devil beast and the devil into the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda for cultivation as it was an undeniably good environment for cultivation. When the pagoda absorb something into its body, they would be able to obtain it as well, which was very helpful to their strength. Jiang Chen had too many enemies now. The more powerful these two devils become, the more favourable it was to him.

“Come on. We have something to do now. The Ancestral Dragon Pagoda needs tremendous amounts of energy. Anyone who tries to mess with me, shouldn’t blame me for the impoliteness.”

Jiang Chen smirked, while Big Yellow was bouncing up and down. It seemed the appearance of the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda was going to turn the ancient battlefield into a bloody one.

All of a sudden, there was a flash in the void. Two ghostly figures emerged. They were both elders who looked about fifty years old, but with high cultivation grades. One was a Second Grade Great Saint and the other was a Third Grade Great Saint.

These two elders were in the adjacent spatial zone. They were drawn into this spatial zone when they felt a strong wave of something. Then, they encountered Jiang Chen and Big Yellow.

“You are Jiang Chen?”

The Third Grade Great Saint yelled when he saw Jiang Chen. His tone was filled with murderous and chilly intent.

“Yes, I am Jiang Chen. Who are you guys?”

Cold light glowed from his eyes.

“Sure enough, you are that little beast. We are the elders of Narang Family. Killing the people of our family means that you are asking to get killed. In this ancient battlefield, many experts are going to kill you. But luckily, we are ahead of them. Jiang Chen, either you kill yourself now or we’ll do it for you.”

The elders were incomparably arrogant. With their cultivation grade, they definitely wouldn’t put Jiang Chen in their eyes. Too bad they didn’t know that Jiang Chen was no longer the previous Jiang Chen they knew. He was now a peak Ninth Grade Minor Saint that could finish off a Third Grade Great Saint with ease, even without the help of the earth devil beast and the devil.

“You two really shouldn’t appear. You two should join forces with me for Desolate Family is growing stronger. I won’t kill you two, but you have to disappear from my sight now.” Jiang Chen said in a light tone.

Among the eight large families, Desolate Family currently had the largest influence. He was quite willing to cooperate with Narang Family if they agreed to. He had only killed some of their disciples in Void Triangular Domain and didn’t kill any of their geniuses after he returned to Saint Origin World.

Anyhow, Jiang Chen must have thought too much. Given the pride of Narang Family, they wouldn’t let him go.

“Haha! This is very funny! Jiang Chen, there is no one who can live after killing our people. You are no exception. If you kneel down and kowtow before me, I will make some considerations on your behalf.”

The Third Grade Great Saint laughed delightfully. He felt that he had just heard the funniest joke. For him, a mighty Third Grade Great Saint, killing Jiang Chen would be a piece of cake.

Chapter 916 - The Overbearing Aura

“The conversation ends here.” Jiang Chen shook his head.

In that case, he needn't need to say anymore. He had innumerable number of enemies, so making the Narang Family his enemy wouldn't change anything anyway. These two elders wanted to kill him which would only brought one outcome upon themselves.

“Why are you still talking so much nonsense with this little beast? I will kill him first.” The Second Grade Great Saint said.

He appeared before Jiang Chen in a blink. A vast Qi was unleashed and enshrouded Jiang Chen.

Pu Chi

But then, a horror scene happened. The Second Grade Great Saint only managed to unleash his Qi but before he could attack, his body halted itself suddenly. He looked down at his chest and saw a blood-red dragon claw which went through his body. The elder was terrified. This was a scene that he had never dream of. How could he, a mighty Second Grade Great Saint, be killed by a junior whom he underestimated in a split second?

“No...”

The elder let out a scream filled with desperation and pain. He

was immobilized under Jiang Chen's control, his life now lay in the hands of his adversary.

“Remember not to be over confident, especially when you don't know how strong your opponent is.” Jiang Chen's voice was icy cold.

The powerful force of the claw was shattering the elder's vital force. Then, he circulated the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda. All the energy, essence and his combat soul were sucked dry by the pagoda. After absorbing the Second Grade Great Saint, the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda became excitedly stimulated and ten new dragon marks were formed in Jiang Chen's body.

The energy of the Second Grade Great Saint wasn't comparable to those Saint corpses that was used to build the sacrificial altar. Although those corpses had accumulated tremendous amount of energy inside their bodies, they had been dead for too long and much of the energy was lost in the process.

Jiang Chen threw the body of the Second Grade Great Saint on the ground. Presently, the body of the Great Saint was nothing more than an ordinary human corpse. All the essence had been drained by the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda. It was Jiang Chen showing mercy by not using the pagoda to devour and absorb the body.

“I'm trying to be merciful. You will still have your full corpse,” said Jiang Chen.

Then, he shifted his gaze to the Third Grade Great Saint of Narang Family. “It’s your turn, why aren’t you attacking?”

The Third Grade Great Saint stared at his companion lying on the ground with widened big eyes, and was petrified. At this moment, he thoroughly observed Jiang Chen’s cultivation grade and found out that he had grown to the Ninth Grade Minor Saint, but a Ninth Grade could never kill a Second Grade Great Saint in a split second. Furthermore, he had heard that this little beast could transform, which would make him scarier. Just now, he didn’t perform any transformation but he was still able to instantly kill a Second Grade Great Saint. If he transformed, did that mean he would have no problem killing a Third Grade Great Saint?

How could a person reach such incredible extent? What surprised the elder more was the way his companion died. He had seen it very clearly that his companion’s body had turned into an ordinary body after all the energy and essence were sucked dry. The scene was too gruesome. At the present moment, an inexplicable fear emerged in his heart.

“Heh! Heh! Let me have this old guy.” Big Yellow chuckled.

“Let me do it.”

Jiang Chen came to Big Yellow’s front. He needed a competent adversary very much to test his strength after the recent advancement to Ninth Grade Minor Saint. Besides, he wasn’t at the normal Ninth Grade Minor Saint grade, he had reached the peak of it and was only a bit away to advance into Great Saint realm. As such, killing any ordinary Third Grade Great Saint would be

effortless to him.

However, there was gap between the Minor Saint realm and the Great Saint realm that couldn't be bypassed. Thus, he would need to turn into a half-dragon in order to kill the Third Grade Great Saint.

With a sway, his appearance changed into a dragon-scaled body. Then, he thrust at the Third Grade Great Saint with his True Dragon Palm.

“I don't believe that I can't defeat a Ninth Grade Minor Saint using my power as a Third Grade Great Saint.” The elder was infuriated.

A black blade materialised in his hand. The blade was encompassed with strong Great Saint Qi, it was no doubt the rarely seen Great Saint weapon.

The big blade was swiped, creating chilling sound of metal. The blade tore the void apart before it landed on Jiang Chen's True Dragon Palm.

Chi La

The two attacks collided and produced a deafening roar. Countless of spatial waves surged and Jiang Chen's True Dragon Palm was ripped apart. The combat power of combining the strength of a Third Grade Great Saint and a Great Saint weapon

was really terrifying.

However, it didn't concern Jiang Chen at all. He moved his arm and swung the newly-appeared Heavenly Saint Sword at the elder in lightning speed.

His strength was so strong it could move mountains, his entire body was filled with boundless of energy like the vast ocean. The elder's face changed drastically when he felt the gap between him and Jiang Chen, and immediately, he lifted the large blade in his hand to meet Jiang Chen's strike.

Clang

The swords clashed. The big blade was bounced away from the elder's grip under the frenzied attack of the Heavenly Saint Sword, but Jiang Chen's sword didn't slow down which had completely caught the elder off guard. An arm of his was cut down by the slash.

“Argh...!”

The elder uttered a miserable cry, and was then killed by a wild bombardment coming from Jiang Chen. The residual energy in his body and the Great Saint Weapon were absorbed by the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda. Jiang Chen could clearly feel that the materialized first floor in the pagoda became a little bigger and a dozen new dragon marks were formed in his body.

However, while the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda was still rotating, Jiang Chen's Qi was becoming more brutal. Both of his eyes started to turn red. The brutal Qi rushed out of his body. Clearly, the newly-formed dragon marks were more aggressive than the previous dragon marks.

“Little Chen, what's wrong with you?”

Big Yellow's facial expression turned ugly when he saw the drastic change in Jiang Chen. He had never seen Jiang Chen like this. Currently, Jiang Chen's eyes were red, and he looked like a wild beast that had lost its senses, a killing machine.

Roar

Jiang Chen let out a deep growl. The way he looked at Big Yellow scared him off.

“Motherf*cker, so this is it.”

Jiang Chen felt that he was losing his senses. Then, he quickly sat on the ground cross-legged and recited the Lotus Sutra given by Great Master Ran Feng. It could purify one's soul and heart. He continued the recitation for half an hour before he recovered his senses.

“What was going on just now, Little Chen? It was so frightening.”

Big Yellow was a little traumatized.

“It was because the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda absorbed the essence of humans. Although I cultivate dragon transformation art, I can’t deny the fact that I am still a human. It is true that human beings can kill each other but consuming the bodies of humans was a violation of the natural law. It makes me no different than a bloodthirsty maniac. It would be fine if I leave their corpses there, but I sucked their essence and their combat souls dry. This method of killing was undeniably merciless. It was akin to destroying my own conscience. As my blood was connected to the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda, after absorbing the essence of humans, a certain amount of brutal Qi started to accumulate in my body. This kind of violent Qi directly affected my mind, turning me into a beast that only know how to kill. It was utterly terrifying.”

Jiang Chen too was in terror. It if wasn’t for the Lotus Sutra, he was afraid that he wouldn’t be able to control his emotions and it was likely that he would attack Big Yellow. For those Great Saint corpses the pagoda absorbed earlier, they were bodies that had been dead for a very long time. In addition, there were some bodies of demons and devils among those corpses, so the side effect wasn’t very significant. On the other hand, the two elders of Narang Family were both living humans. After killing them, their essence were sucked dry and one of their bodies were even consumed by the pagoda. This was equivalent to inhumane practice. As such, the dragon marks that were condensed would be violent as well, which would severely affect the mind.

“I see. You will have to be careful about this next time.”

Big Yellow hastily warned Jiang Chen. The sudden change just now had given him a bad and strange feeling.

“Exactly. It appears that I can’t absorb human essence anymore. After all, my origin is human. If I refine and absorb any beings other than my category such as demons, devils and monsters, I will be fine,” said Jiang Chen.

Now, he finally understood the true purpose of Ancestral Dragon Pagoda. Although it was a supreme treasure of true dragon, it was in Jiang Chen’s possession now. When his blood connected with the treasure, the treasure must accept that his origin was a human.

“Are you able to suppress the brutal Qi inside your body now?” Big Yellow asked.

He was still feeling worried. In fact, there was no way he wouldn’t be concerned about this. Jian Chen’s appearance just now was way too scary. If that brutal Qi was still lingering in his body, no one could tell when he would turn into a killing maniac again.

“Only a tiny amount of brutal Qi is left. This is my first time anyway. I have already used Lotus Sutra and the edifying light to get rid of most of it. So, it won’t be affecting me again,” said Jiang Chen.

Given his ability, it was easy for him to eliminate the brutal Qi from his body. However, that gust of brutal Qi was really frightening. If it was any other person who experienced this

terrible situation, the person would probably be controlled by it. After all, Jiang Chen was the Greatest Saint and he cultivated Great Soul Derivation Technique. The firmness of his heart was incomparable to anyone.

“It’s good to hear that, you f*cking scared me to death just now.”

Big Yellow was slightly angered because he thought that this guy would really finish him off.

“Hey, come on. Let me rub your dog head gently to help you with the shock.”

Jiang Chen chuckled. He held Big Yellow’s head without warning and rubbed his head crazily.

“Jiang Chen, damn you! You dare to rub Master Dog’s head! Ouch...”

Big Yellow was struggled to break free. Then, he opened his mouth and bit on Jiang Chen’s buttock.

“Haha...”

Jiang Chen laughed delightfully, and very quickly, disappeared in the spatial zone. Big Yellow hastily chased after him.

Chapter 917 - We Are One Family

The overlapping spatial zones in those countless of spatial nodes looked like a maze. A dark silhouette flashed past and went into a spatial zone. This was a white-haired youth. He wasn't a stranger, he was Han Yan.

Han Yan felt an indistinct call not long after he entered the battlefield. So, he followed it until here. Given his present cultivation, it would be very dangerous for him to venture into the deep regions of the spatial zone. If he encountered a strong evil soul, he would undoubtedly die.

However, it seemed like the mysterious summoning force was guiding him. He followed the direction; he had gone past a lot of big spatial zones but he encountered no dangers. Furthermore, many of the spatial zones that he went past were empty and nothing good was found.

“What on earth is calling for me? I have flown for such a long time but there is still nothing. My present cultivation grade can't protect me if I encounter any powerful monsters, but there is no turning back now. I can only continue following that mysterious summoning force. I would like to see what is actually that's calling for me.”

Han Yan's eyes revealed a trace of resoluteness. Now that he had made it this far, going back was no longer be an option. Furthermore, he had an intuition that the mysterious summoning force was his great luck.

Meanwhile, in another spatial zone, a bloodthirsty battle was being played. The whole atmosphere was filled of nose-stinging stench of blood. There were over thirty powerful evil souls surrounding six men. The men were wearing the same uniform and looked similarly young. They were the cultivators of the Gu Family. Many corpses of evil souls had already been piled up around them.

The evil souls looked ferocious. They walked like zombies but their combat strength were incredibly powerful and destructive.

The faces of the remaining six men looked miserable. Two of their members were already lying on the ground and one of them had lost his head. The six who were still alive were covered in blood and injured badly. Some even had their arms missing.

The leader among them was Gu Liufeng, but his current condition was unfavourable. He was gasping for air. It was imaginable that a lot of their energy had been spent battling the the evil souls. When they were traveling into different spatial zones, all of a sudden, they were struck by a spatial whirlwind and they were brought here. This place was full of evil souls. They were able to deal with the evil souls that came out at the beginning, but the ones that came out later was getting stronger and they were gradually losing their stand. The truly powerful evil souls emerged when Gu Liufeng ripped off the head of a First Grade Great Saint evil soul. The strongest evil soul now was a Second Grade Great Saint. There were two more First Grade Great Saint evil souls among them while the rest were also very strong.

Although this group of young geniuses weren't weak, but

compared to these evil souls, they were weaker. Now, they were surrounded by these evil souls, and they couldn't bear their shrill cries. These monsters were sticking out their long tongues and had totally treated them as prey.

“Brother Liufeng, looks like we are going to die today.”

“Yeah, I hn't expected that we would be trapped in the siege of these evil souls while looking for treasures. Unless there is a miracle, otherwise we will surely die.”

“What? I don't want to die yet.”

.....

The spirit of every Gu Clan geniuses dropped drastically. Their hearts were now filled with despair. Although Gu Liufeng was the backbone of the team, he was only a half-step Great Saint. It was already considered very good when he killed that First Grade Great Saint. Now, with the presence of a Second Grade Great Saint, he wouldn't be able to take care of himself, let alone the others.

“Shut up.”

Gu Liufeng yelled without turning his head. “If we die, so be it! What's so scary about death? We should still fight hard even if we die.”

Gu Liufeng drew out his combat weapon. It was a large golden

shield. When he held the shield, a strong roar burst out from it. He then bellowed at those evil souls. “Come one!”

Let’s not talk about other things. His performance alone was already enough to earn the admiration of the people, only a few in the world could stay so calm while facing death.

“Jie! Jie!...” (snickering)

Those evil souls snickered grimly. It gave the geniuses the feeling of madness, as if hundreds of claws were scratching their ears. Then, along with the roar of the evil soul’s leader, all of them charged towards the six geniuses together.

Upon seeing this scene, the geniuses fell into complete in despair. Some have already closed their eyes and had given up on defending, whereas Gu Liufeng laughed loudly, but there was a hint of sadness in his laughter. He was the pride, and the number one genius of the young generation of the Gu Family, how could he be willing to die in this place?

The Second Grade Great Saint evil soul stuck out its scary sharp claw and reached Gu Liufeng in a blink. He was very clear that even if he exhausted all of his available skills, he would still die in the hands of this evil soul.

Hong Long

At this critical moment, a giant dragon claw descended from the

sky. It was a blood-red dragon claw that blocked in front of Gu Liufeng and wrapped around the incoming evil soul.

The earth and mountain shook. The powerful evil soul were immediately pulverised by the dragon claw. What frightened them even more was that the corpse of the evil soul was taken away by the dragon claw and disappeared.

Meanwhile, rays of golden light rushed out from the void, pulverising all the evil souls. After a few blinks, all of the evil souls that besieged the geniuses were all dead. None of them were alive and none of their corpses were complete.

This scene shocked the six geniuses. Gu Liufeng was still holding the golden shield in his hand, but his opponent was already gone. One strike to kill a Second Grade Great Saint and instantly killing all the other evil souls? The attacker must be a very terrifying person.

The scene didn't look very chaotic, but it was tidy instead. The six geniuses hadn't recovered from their shock yet. They just stood rooted on the ground with the similar expressions. They couldn't believe what just happened in front of them. Looking at the bodies of those evil souls that were scattered around, besides feeling shocked, they also felt joyful. They were already in total despair and believed that they would certainly die. It was beyond their expectation that such a miraculous turnaround would happen.

The huge difference between dying and being alive was enough to excite a person to the extreme. At the same time, they were thinking about the same question: Who had just saved them? An

Elder of the Gu Family? No, no one in the Gu Family had such a technique. The technique they saw just now was a giant blood-red dragon claw that gave them a sense of familiarity.

At this moment, two silhouettes emerged in front of them. It was a dog and a man. The dog might be unfamiliar to them, but this white-robed youth wasn't, especially to Gu Liufeng. Back in the Gu Family Meeting, he was defeated by this white-robed young man.

“Jiang Chen.”

“It was you who saved us.”

When they saw Jiang Chen, they were very delighted. The rejection that they had for him had all vanished at this instant. They absolutely regarded Jiang Chen as a member of their family now.

“We just happened to be passing by here. Are you all okay?”

Said Jiang Chen. He couldn't help but sigh when he saw the two bodies of the Gu Family members lying on the ground, but it wasn't a big deal anyway. This ancient battlefield was originally a dangerous place. This would happen to anyone at any time. Death was a common thing and it could happen at any time.

“Brother Jiang, thanks for saving us. I, Gu Liufeng owe you a life.”

Gu Liufeng kept his golden shield and saluted Jiang Chen with cupped fists. This was the kindness of saving his life, Gu Liufeng wouldn't dare to neglect it as he was an upright person. Back in the Gu Family Meeting, he sincerely admitted his defeat in front of Jiang Chen, it erased most of his envy in Jiang Chen. Today, Jiang Chen saved him. Naturally, he would be shocked but at the same time grateful ; he had no idea how much Jiang Chen had grown. Last time, he was only capable of killing someone as powerful as Shi Han, but after this short period of time, he had grown to such a point that he could eliminate a Second Grade Great Saint easily.

Gu Liufeng knew that the gap between them was getting bigger. It would only get wider as time went by. He would never be able to catch up with Jiang Chen's growth in his life.

“Jiang Chen, I didn't expect you to grow so fast. I have to admit, I'm not as good as you.”

Gu Liufeng shook his head with a smile.

“There is no need to be overly courteous with me. You and I are one family. When you all are in trouble, how could I, Jiang Chen do nothing about it?”

Jiang Chen smiled.

“Prince Jiang is right. He is already engaged with Miss Ningzhu and that means we are a family. There is no need for formalities in a family.”

“Yes, yes, we are a family now.”

Several other geniuses added their remarks hastily and with humility.

“I see that you guys are injured quite badly. Take these pills, they will help you recover your injuries very quickly.”

Jiang Chen casually fork out a few pills and gave each of them a pill. These pills were vulnerary medicine made out of wood essence. Although these geniuses were badly injured, it didn't affect their core. As long as they took these pills, they would be able to recover very quickly.

“Thank you, brother Jiang.”

Gu Liufeng no longer used his formal expression. He immediately swallowed the pill the moment he took it. He was crystal clear that he needed to be in his top form all the time as long as he still in this place, because no one knew when would danger befall them.

Chapter 918 - The Ancient Devil

The rest swallowed the pill as well. One by one, their facial expression changed drastically. As the geniuses of the Gu Family, they themselves had brought some vulnerary medicine too, but theirs were just a piece of trash compared to Jiang Chen's.

“This pill is amazing! Almost half of my injuries are already healed.”

“My injuries are completely healed. This medicine is truly great. Its recovery rate can be compared to a withered tree coming back to life again.”

“Not only has Prince Jiang saved our lives, he has also given us such a high rank vulnerary medicine. I really don't know how to repay such kindness.”

.....

The geniuses of the Gu Family were shocked. They had never seen such a powerful healing medicine. As one of the eight large families, the Gu Family had a vast amount of resources. The amount of vulnerary pills alone was uncountable because they had many alchemists. These geniuses were the outstanding group in the Gu Family and because of that, they could get more resources than any ordinary genius, but that didn't prevent them from being shocked by Jiang Chen's pills.

Naturally, they didn't know that besides the large amount of

concentrated herbs, the pills was also incorporated with wood essence, which could boost the healing rate to seconds.

Jiang Chen smiled. His gaze then shifted to the bodies of the evil souls on the ground. He secretly circulated the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda to absorb all of the energy in their bodies. Due to most of them being Minor Saints, the effect of the absorption of the pagoda was too little for the pagoda always followed Jiang Chen's grade.

However, after sucking all of the evil souls' bodies, it allowed Jiang Chen to reaffirm the thing that had been bugging him. Before this, he had absorbed the essence of the two Narang elders which prompted the production of the brutal Qi, but the absorption of the evil souls didn't cause any signs of side effect.

In this case, it reminded him that he couldn't absorb the essence of humans because he is a human too, but any energy besides human's energy was good to be absorbed.

Upon seeing what just happened, Gu Liufeng and the others had a look of shock again. They didn't know why Jiang Chen had kept all the corpses of the evil souls, but they didn't dare ask because this was Jiang Chen's matter. They didn't need to know too much about it. All they knew was that Jiang Chen was no longer the previous Jiang Chen that they knew.

"Brother Gu, now that all of you are fine, I will take my leave. There are still other evil souls in this spatial zone but their cultivation are not as strong as the previous evil souls. I absolutely believe that you all can handle them on your own. Moreover, the higher the number of evil souls in one place, the more likely for

you to find treasures that were left behind by the Great Saints. Also, try your best to reunite with the experts of your family, don't get separated from them because there are too many spatial zones here and the level of danger is far greater than what you think." Jiang Chen told Gu Liufeng and the others.

"Alright, we will heed your advice. We really lack knowledge of this place before coming here." Gu Liufeng nodded.

When Jiang Chen was about to leave with Big Yellow, he suddenly thought of something. He looked at Gu Liufeng again. "Brother Gu, I wonder whether Sister Ning has come to the battlefield."

"Ning Zhu didn't join us in this trip. Gu Mu has gone to the Southern Continent to pick up her father. I think that their family should have been reunited once again by now, so she didn't come with us," replied Gu Liufeng.

"En, goodbye."

Jiang Chen bade farewell and vanished along with Big Yellow. Gu Xuantian was a person who kept his promise. He had sent Gu Mu to bring Wu Tianyang to the Gu Family to reunite with his daughter and wife. Naturally, they would need to cherish such moment of reunion. It made sense that Wu Ningzhu didn't come here. To Jiang Chen, Wu Ningzhu's absence had reduced a load of his burden because this place was overly dangerous.

As for the treasures of this spatial zone, Jiang Chen wasn't

interested about those. He might as well took the initiative to leave all those treasures to Gu Liufeng and the other geniuses. After all, they had fought hard against those evil souls.

Han Yan had lost track of how many spatial zones he had gone through, but the summoning force was getting stronger. He could feel that it was just a short distance away. It was very lucky for a Minor Saint like him to pass through all those spatial zones without encountering any threats.

“Come, come, come!”

Suddenly, a voice sounded in Han Yan’s mind. The voice was very deep and hoarse as though the speaker had been silent for too long. The speaker couldn’t even speak a simple word coherently.

Han Yan was surprised because the voice was talking to him. He could feel that the mysterious summoning force was similar to this mysterious voice. He took a deep breath and continued on his path. He had no idea what was calling him in this ancient battlefield, but since he had already made it all the way here, he wouldn’t go back.

A spatial node emerged in front of him. After gasping for another deep breath, he jumped into it with a flicker.

Suddenly, great changes were taking place in front of him. The spatial zone was very small. It seemed to be only a dozen of miles in area, but the atmosphere here was filled with devil Qi and devil waves that produced gusts of chilling wind.

Han Yan took a breath and felt refreshed. He could even feel his soul being nourished by this Qi. To him, this environment was simply a great treasure.

“I smell the scent of an Ancient Devil. It’s connected to my origin.”

Han Yan was astonished. He looked forth and saw a giant at the center of the spatial zone.

“You have come.”

That giant spoke again. Its voice was a lot smoother this time. It was a huge devil that was roughly thirty meters tall. There were two horns on top of its head but it had the face of a human. Its camel-sized eyes were looking at Han Yan without blinking.

“Ancient Devil.” Han Yan exclaimed.

He could feel the origin of Qi from this giant devil. That is to say, this giant was a true Ancient Devil, but its Qi declining. He could feel that the vital force of the devil was gradually getting weaker. It seemed that it had been badly wounded. Besides, it had been here for so long and it was almost reaching the end of its lifespan.

“At last, you have come.”

The Ancient Devil revealed a smile on its face.

Upon seeing the condition of the Ancient Devil, Han Yan felt sort of sad and palpitations from his bloodline. He strode forward to the devil and saluted deeply, “Senior.”

Although the devil was on the verge of death, Han Yan could feel the mighty strength of it while standing in front of it. It was like the apex form of power. Due to Han Yan’s bloodline being affected by it, he could feel the true cultivation of the Ancient Devil, which increased the astonishment and the respect that he had for it. This Ancient Devil was actually a mighty Ninth Grade Great Saint!

“Great. I can feel your bloodline the moment you entered this place. Listen, I’m now on the verge of death and will die soon. Your body consists of the complete Ancient Divine Devil Bloodline like mine. Before I die, I want to transfer my bloodline into your body to impart my powers to you. Only those who have the true Ancient Divine Devil Bloodline are able to bear my powers. You are only a Third Grade Minor Saint now but after obtaining my inheritance, you will gain infinite benefits. Your cultivation will also improve by leaps and bounds and straightaway break through into the Great Saint realm.”

The Ancient Devil said, “I am dying. I don’t wish to see my abilities and powers lost forever. Let me know your name.”

“This junior is called Han Yan,” replied Han Yan.

“Good name. Now leave your divine sense open. I am going to use a special way to connect the origin of your bloodline. Your

bloodline is similar to mine so it would allow you to receive my inheritance directly,” instructed the Ancient Devil.

Han Yan frowned after hearing this. If he followed what the Ancient Devil asked, he would become vulnerable. All of his defences would be removed, exposing the origin of his deeper soul to the Ancient Devil. If this devil have any ill intention, he would certainly be doomed.

“Don’t worry, son. My lifespan is about to end. Now, I just want to pass on my inheritance to another person and you are the most suitable successor. So, hesitate no more.”

The Ancient Devil lowered his tone a little. It gave people the feeling that he was going to collapse at any second.

“Alright.” Han Yan nodded.

After removing all the doubts in his mind, he immediately let go of all his defences and revealed the origin of his bloodline to the Ancient Devil, but he didn’t notice that a subtle expression of evil flashed in the devil’s eyes, as though its plan had worked.

“Very well, I will impart my inheritance to you now. This will also be considered as a bond that I have built with you before I die.” The Ancient Devil said.

A black beam of light shot out from the spot between his eyebrows into Han Yan’s, reaching the origin of Han Yan very

quickly and connected with his bloodline.

Weng *Weng*

At this moment, the black light trembled violently and Han Yan had the feeling that his soul was being ripped off, and immediately, he spurted out a mouthful of blood.

“You...”

Han Yan realised that something was wrong. He looked up at the devil.

“Haha! You are a stupid and naïve boy. You have been struck by my Ancient Devil Soul Seizing Art. Now, I have complete control of your soul and your bloodline. After refining your bloodline, I will have a chance to return to my pinnacle state. Haha...”

The Ancient Devil burst into wild laughter. It was true that he was about to die just now, which explained why he couldn't attack Han Yan. So, he deceived Han Yan with his cunning tricks before he casted the Ancient Devil Soul Seizing Art to gain full control of Han Yan.

Chapter 919 - Han Yan's Crisis

“Despicable.”

Han Yan couldn't help but curse. While thinking that he was the one who initiated removing his defences that let the opponent plant an evil spell inside his soul and control his bloodline, he regretted his decision so much that he wanted to slap himself. Given the experiences that he had gained along the way of his life, he had never thought that he would lose his life because he trusted someone too easily at such a critical juncture.

In fact, his psychological state was shaken by the bloodline of the Ancient Devil. He thought that the devil had chosen him as the successor. Plus, the devil was almost dead, which made him lower his guard. He thought that the dying senior was truly imparting its powers to him.

He only understood what kind of monster the legendary Ancient Devil was now. It was ferocious, evil and atrocious. It was the ancestor of the Devil Race. How possibly could this forefather impart his powers to someone even if it was about to die?

Although Han Yan had the pure Ancient Devil Bloodline, he was still a human and had been living with the humans. His bloodline was gradually unlocked during the course of his growth. Thus, there was an essential difference between him and the devil in the physical aspect.

Unfortunately, it was too late for him to say anything now. This

Ancient Devil was a mighty Ninth Grade Great Saint. It was going to seize his soul and bloodline using the Ancient Devil Soul Seizing Art, and his body would eventually become its own. He now looked like a human in a tight cage, immobilized.

Han Yan regretted it thoroughly. Although it was a Ninth Grade Great Saint Ancient Devil, its body condition was very poor. It didn't even have the strength to attack. If it wasn't for him removing his defences, the devil wouldn't be able to get near him, let alone control him.

“Despicable? Little devil, you are too tender. I suggest you to not resist. Let me occupy your body, corrode your soul and integrate with your bloodline. Then, you and I will be one. Isn't that good?”

The Ancient Devil revealed a shady smile as its plan succeeded. It finally saw a ray of hope after being stuck in this ruined place for so long. So, it would naturally be very excited.

“Don't even think about it.”

Han Yan's eyes were full of anger. He would never give up on this. Even if he would end up dead, he would never let this devil get his bloodline and soul easily.

“Humph! Boy, don't do this the hard way! The Ancient Devil Soul Seizing Art was already casted on you, which means that your soul is destined to be corroded and refined by me. It is pointless to resist because it will only bring you endless torture. I now have plenty of time and I can slowly torture you to death.” Ancient Devil let out a

cold humph.

In fact, it had already gained full control of its target and any resistance from this puny junior would only take a little of its time to refine him. The devil felt very joyful when it imagined that it would be reincarnated soon.

“Old devil, you will not succeed.”

Han Yan gritted his teeth. At this time, he suddenly thought of something. A golden talisman exploded out from his Qi Sea as he called it via divine sense.

Within the overlapping spatial zones, in a very gloomy spatial zone, a massacre was currently happening. Jiang Chen and Big Yellow were fighting with a few dozen of evil souls and monsters. All the essences of the evil souls and monsters were absorbed by Jiang Chen to materialize the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda.

As the massacre continued, Jiang Chen’s cultivation improved, bringing him closer to the Great Saint realm, and the first floor of the pagoda was about to be fully materialized.

“Dang! The speed of condensation of this pagoda is just too slow.” Big Yellow said with annoyance when he saw that the pagoda only improved a little after killing so many evil souls and monsters.

“I have an intuition that if I don’t advance to the Great Saint

realm, it would be likely that the first floor of the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda won't be condensed out, but if my cultivation advanced to the Great Saint realm, not only would the first floor be fully condensed, but also a portion of the second floor." Jiang Chen guessed.

Now, it seemed that breaking through into the Great Saint realm was extremely important.

"Little Chen, come and save me now."

All of a sudden, a message appeared in Jiang Chen's mind. His facial expression darkened abruptly. He stopped killing the evil souls.

"What's the matter?" Big Yellow asked.

"Not good, Ah Yan is in danger. Let's go find him now."

His facial expression turned heavy. He remembered that he gave Han Yan a spirit talisman last time. The message that called for his help was no doubt the spirit talisman that he gave to Han Yan. He knew Han Yan very well. Han Yan was a little devil king, a very powerful cultivator, but now, he was calling for Jiang Chen's help. So, Han Yan must have encountered a very critical situation.

"What?"

Big Yellow's facial expression changed drastically as well.

Without delay, the two of them turned into shadows and dashed towards the direction of Han Yan. Jiang Chen could correctly sense the location of Han Yan because he was the one who crafted the spirit talisman.

The laughter of the Ancient Devil resounded in the entire void. It could make people's hair stand on its end. This was a very special, small spatial zone with an unnoticeable spatial node. Normally, no one would be able to find the spatial node. Han Yan was only able to come here because of the navigation of the Ancient Devil.

“Little brat! Give up on your useless resistance. You won't be able to change the outcome even if you continue doing this. You will only suffer more pain.”

The Ancient Devil was using the Ancient Devil Soul Seizing Art to attack Han Yan while its mouth never stopped persuading Han Yan to stop his resistance.

Currently, Han Yan was sitting on the ground. His body was trembling uncontrollably. He was currently suffering a horrendous pain in his origin, soul and bloodline, as though they were about to be ripped apart at any second. This kind of suffering was a hundred times greater than any physical torture.

“No, I'll never give up.”

Han Yan gritted his teeth, trying his best to keep his mind alert. He knew that if he lost his consciousness, he would be finished and be fully manipulated by the Ancient Devil.

However, he felt that he was going to be crippled after holding it for more than ten minutes. This was the most dangerous experience that would really eat up his life.

The Ancient Devil was pleased with itself. It liked to see someone being tortured to death. It had forgotten how many years it had been since it felt this kind of pleasure.

At this moment, the spatial node was forced open by someone. Two silhouettes dashed into the small spatial zone in a flash and came to Han Yan and the Ancient Devil.

“Little Chen.”

Seeing Jiang Chen and Big Yellow, Han Yan’s painful face couldn’t help but show a trace of surprise. In his eyes, there was nothing in this world that Jiang Chen couldn’t solve. As long as Jiang Chen appeared, he still have hope.

“What’s going on?”

Jiang Chen and Big Yellow’s faces became very unpleasant. Although they didn’t know what was happening, they could see the suffering from Han Yan’s face.

“How did you two get in?”

The Ancient Devil stared at Jiang Chen and Big Yellow violently. It was surely a very bad thing when outsiders intrude into this spatial zone at a time like this.

“Ancient Devil.”

Jiang Chen’s eyes sparkled. He recognized the Ancient Devil with just a single glance.

“This old devil deceived me, it has planted the Ancient Devil Soul Seizing Art inside my origin. It is going to corrode my soul, absorb my bloodline and take possession of my body.” Han Yan said while withstanding the pain. His tone was shivering and somewhat distorted.

“You fool! How could you believe the words of an Ancient Devil?”

Big Yellow was infuriated and was getting impatient. Although he had no clue about what had really happened, but he heard the word ‘deceive’ loud and clear.

“Haha! So they are your friends, but does it matter? You are now being controlled by me. It won’t change anything no matter how many of your friends come.” The Ancient Devil laughed maniacally.

“Ancient Devil, I suggest you let go of my friend now. Otherwise, I will grant you a death without burial.” Jiang Chen shouted at the devil.

“Death without burial? This is certainly a joke. Do you think that I did not prepare for this? Even if I just stood here for you to kill me, would you dare do it? I have already integrated myself with the soul and origin of this kid. If I die, he will die too. If you don’t believe me, you can always try to attack me. Haha...”

The Ancient Devil was incomparably arrogant. It was an old devil that had lived for so many years. It was a cunning fox that had mastered the technique of deception. This explained why Han Yan fell into its trick.

“F*ck! That’s mean!”

Big Yellow scratched his ears and cheeks out of annoyance. It seemed like Han Yan was going to lose his strength soon but they could do nothing about it because the Ancient Devil was right. The two of them were already connected. If the Ancient Devil died, Han Yan wouldn’t be able to live either.

“Humph! Ancient Devil, do you think that you will succeed? You are just digging your own grave!”

Jiang Chen gave a cold humph.

“Haha! Stupid human, do you still think that you can save your friend here?”

The Ancient Devil laughed loudly. It totally didn’t put Jiang

Chen in its eyes.

Jiang Chen ignored the Ancient Devil's taunt. The urgent matter right now was to solve the crisis of Han Yan. He then said, "Ah Yan, listen to me. I will impart the Great Soul Derivation Technique to you now. With your talent, although you won't be able to master it within a short period of time, with my help, it would be able to fortify your soul and prevent it from being eroded by the Ancient Devil."

"Alright..." Han Yan nodded.

"Haha! This is funny. It's too late to practice any kind of spiritual skills now."

The Ancient Devil laughed.

"Ah Yan, let me tell you the secret of the Ancient Devil. As far as I know, this Ancient Devil Soul Seizing Art is its special ability, a gifted innate skill. You haven't heard of this before because your cultivation was still weak. The Ancient Devil Soul Seizing Art inside you is not yet activated. However, you also possessed the pure Ancient Divine Devil Bloodline, which means you also have the ability to control just like the Ancient Devil controls you," said Jiang Chen.

Chapter 920 - The Tiger Which Went Down to Level Land Encountered the Vicious Dog

After listening to Jiang Chen's words, Han Yan's body trembled violently. The Ancient Devil's facial expression changed dramatically. His cloudy eyes suddenly lit up and stared at Jiang Chen in disbelief. "How do you know the Ancient Divine Devil Bloodline so well?"

The Ancient Devil couldn't help but feel surprised, because Jiang Chen was right. The Ancient Devil Soul Seizing Art was truly its unique innate ability. Although Han Yan hadn't awakened this ability yet, he had the pure bloodline and was able to control the seed of this spell.

The Ancient Devil had predicted that Han Yan didn't know about the relation between the Ancient Devil Soul Seizing Art and his bloodline. That's why it could enter his origin smoothly. Now that he had known the secret of the relation, he would be able to compete with it to gain control of the seed of the spell. Even though Han Yan was just a Minor Saint, the Ancient Devil wasn't hoping to see this.

"I know not only these things, I also know that once Ah Yan gains control of that spiritual seed, you will receive a tremendous backlash and after that, it will be he who refines you instead of you refining yourself."

Jiang Chen's mouth revealed a hint of sneer. "So how? Are you afraid now?"

The Ancient Devil's face darkened for a moment. It couldn't imagine that an outsider could have such profound understanding of the Ancient Divine Devil Bloodline. His understanding was even greater than the possessor of the bloodline, Han Yan. Despite that, it wasn't afraid because their difference in cultivation grade was far too wide and totally incomparable.

“Humph! So what, if you are right? Although I'm dying, I'm still a powerful Ninth Grade Great Saint. My soul and bloodline are many times greater than this brat's. It is just a wishful thinking to compete with me for the control of the seed.”

The Ancient Devil let out a cold humph. It was very confident in its abilities. How could an Ancient Devil pay attention to a puny human? If it was back at its peak form, it just needed a glance to put these two human brats to the brinks of death.

Last time in the battlefield, it was seriously injured but was able to survive for many years. However, its lifespan was nearly reaching the end and it was lucky enough to have encountered a young person with the pure Ancient Divine Devil Bloodline. It was so excited because this was its only chance and it was sure it wasn't going to let it slip.

“Then you should try it. Your life is approaching the end. Even your soul is dissipating. I would like to see how long you can last in this situation.”

Jiang Chen fluctuated his Qi and strode towards Han Yan. He

didn't attack the Ancient Devil because its bloodline was connected to Han Yan's. If he killed the Ancient Devil, his friend would die too. The Ancient Devil on the other hand didn't have the capability to attack either. It only could grit its teeth and watch Jiang Chen interfering with the event. If it attacked, it would be when it had full control of Han Yan.

Jiang Chen sat beside Han Yan. He rotated the Great Soul Derivation Technique, wrapping around Han Yan. Then, the incantation of the Great Soul Derivation Technique surged into Han Yan's mind like a clear stream of water. Han Yan's body shook. He was enduring all the pain while feeling the uniqueness of the Great Soul Derivation Technique.

Meanwhile, Jiang Chen permeated his spiritual force into Han Yan's deeper soul to help him fortify his soul.

"Ah Yan, while trying to comprehend the incantation of the Great Soul Derivation Technique, try to use your bloodline to control the spiritual seed as well. This old devil won't be able to hold long. As long as your soul grows stronger, its soul will disappear slowly, which gives you the chance to snatch the victory from defeat. This is a crisis to you but also an opportunity you cannot afford to miss."

Jiang Chen's voice was heard in Han Yan's deeper soul. This situation was the so-called blessing and disaster happening all at the same time. It didn't happen every time that when the disaster came, it came with the blessing. If Han Yan could survive this crisis, he would be able to obtain a great treasure. One should know that this was an Ancient Devil of Ninth Grade Great Saint.

This was a great encounter which he wouldn't dream of.

“Okay.”

Han Yan spurted out a mouthful of blood. His body was trembling violently, but his eyes were very resolute. He gritted his teeth and closed his eyes to comprehend the Great Soul Derivation Technique. In fact, he would find it easier to cultivate this technique as compared to Jiang Chen at the beginning stage. This was because Jiang Chen had also impart the ways to cultivate this technique and plenty of other experiences related to the cultivation of this technique. In other words, Han Yan had gotten the shortcut in cultivating this spiritual technique. Even if he couldn't complete the cultivation of Great Soul Derivation Technique within a short period of time, he would still be able to fortify his soul with Jiang Chen's help.

What he needed to do now was to engage in a tug-of-war with the Ancient Devil. As long as he stayed alive, there was a chance of turning it around.

At the same time, Han Yan was doing what Jiang Chen told him to. He was secretly circulating the Ancient Divine Devil Bloodline to try and control the spiritual seed. He didn't spend a lot of effort in this attempt. Later, the spiritual seed started to shake violently. The force from the two sources made the spiritual seed like the centre of the rope. These two sources were tugging the seed to either one side or to the other side, trying to gain control of it.

While Han Yan was using his bloodline trying to gain control of the spiritual seed, it somewhat acknowledged Han Yan's bloodline

to some extent. Therefore, his suffering had been reduced. He finally could heave a sigh of relief and saw hope.

“Bastard!”

Feeling the tremble from the spiritual seed, the Ancient Devil cursed. It had the impulse to spew out blood in his heart. Back in its pinnacle state, all kinds of divine cultivators had to avoid it when they saw it. Now after losing its strength and lifespan, it couldn't even take care of a young brat.

“Two sh*tty brats! You dare to go against me? You will surely die, in a horrendous way!”

The Ancient Devil growled and gnashed its teeth.

“If I were you, I would shut up, because you won't have much strength to talk soon. A dying person should cherish the last moment to enjoy this beautiful world. I'm sorry. I forgot that this world is sickly unpleasant.”

Jiang Chen mocked the Ancient Devil. “Old devil, you must have been very lonely in this ghost land for a long time. It is like a prison. If it were up to me, I would rather die than to suffer this loneliness. In fact, you are quite a very pitiful man. Don't worry, after your death, I will do a good favour for you. I will incinerate your body so that the other beasts won't eat you up. You don't have to thank me for that because I have always been a kind man and I do that without hoping for rewards.”

Jiang Chen's chatter was ceaseless. Every line of words severely disturbed the Ancient Devil's mind. This was actually what Jiang Chen wanted. He wanted the Ancient Devil's emotions to go haywire to create a chance for Han Yan.

“Shut up, shut up now!”

The Ancient Devil was infuriated. Its emotion was in a wavy situation. It had forgotten how long it had stayed in this desolate spatial zone. That kind of chilly loneliness was simply fatal. It was exact the same like what Jiang Chen had described which caused it to outburst with anger.

Big Yellow who was standing in the distance on guard let out a snicker. He marched towards the Ancient Devil step by step. He had seen the formation deployed by this Ancient Devil. It was a grand formation of defence that could block the attack of experts. It was true that the Ancient Devil had prepared for this event but this grand formation was just too easy for the Big Yellow who was the master of Formation Holy Book.

“Heh...heh...”

Big Yellow continued to snicker as he strode towards the Ancient Devil. It noticed Big Yellow's movement but didn't care about it. It could see that this dog was an unusual being, a First Grade Great Saint, but this dog wouldn't be able to enter its formation.

Thus, the Ancient Devil acted indifferent towards Big Yellow's actions. It only had one objective now, which was to gain full

control of Han Yan. As long as it could completely refine this young possessor of the Ancient Divine Devil Bloodline, it would regain another new life. After that, killing would be so simple.

But then, the following incident gave the Ancient Devil the feeling of great irritation.

It saw this sturdy big yellow dog open the mouth and spat out some kind of talisman symbols that unexpectedly tore a hole in its formation. Then, the big yellow dog walked swaggeringly into the formation.

“How is that possible?”

The Ancient Devil exclaimed with shock. It couldn't believe its own eyes. Even if the formation it deployed wasn't good enough, it wouldn't allow anyone to enter so easily. Could it be because its formation had lost its effect? Not possible. He checked it just now. The only explanation was that this dog broke its formation himself.

“Stupid dog! Shove off! Or else I will trample you to death.”

The Ancient Devil shouted at Big Yellow.

“Ah...! You have such a hot temper and a big and long head. You want to trample me to death? Come, trample me now. Master dog is just under your feet. You seem to have no strength to even lift your feet.”

Big Yellow wagged its tail towards the Ancient Devil. It rolled its eyes feeling helpless. This was truly like the same situation where the tiger which went down to level land encountered the vicious dog and got bullied by it. Furthermore, this was also a shameless dog.

“You don’t have the strength, am I right? It’s hard for you to do that. If you don’t trample me, I am going to bite you.”

Big Yellow said. He opened his mouth and bit on the Ancient Devil’s thigh. The physique of the Ancient Devil was very firm and solid. It was the physique of a Ninth Grade Great Saint. It was afraid that no ordinary cultivator would be able to make a scratch on its hide even with combat weapons.

Too bad, Big Yellow’s teeth was scarier than any ordinary combat weapons. If Big Yellow went mad, he could even rip this Ancient Devil apart with his mouth alone.

Chi La

Big Yellow tugged with his teeth, tearing off a bloody flesh out of the Ancient Devil’s body. Without waiting for the devil to howl in pain, he took another bite.

Chapter 921 - The Disappearance of the Spatial Zones

“Argh...”

The Ancient Devil couldn't bear the pain and let out a roar. The fact that Big Yellow had bitten off two pieces of its flesh did not really matter because they were just trivial injuries, but the frustration and annoyance it felt was indescribable. It was a mighty and dignified Ninth Grade Great Saint Ancient Devil. How would it had thought that it would one day be bullied by a dog?

“Stupid dog, I won't forgive you for what you did. I will eat you.”

The Ancient Devil threatened Big Yellow loudly, then it spurted out a mouthful of blood due to his overwhelming anger.

Due to the high fluctuation in emotions, the spiritual seed started to tremble again. It was showing signs of moving towards Han Yan's side. This scene frightened the Ancient Devil. It then stabilized its mind quickly.

“What? You want to eat master dog? Then master dog will eat you first. Although your flesh stinks, master dog can still swallow it.”

After saying this, Big Yellow bit on the Ancient Devil's butt. A large piece of flesh was ripped off from the butt with a 'Chi La' sound. Blood was spewing out. It was much more painful than

sticking a rod directly up his butt.

“Haha... Ancient Devil, even though you are a dignified Ninth Grade Great Saint, you are being bitten by a dog. If I were you, I would smash my head till I die.”

Jiang Chen laughed loudly while making sarcastic remarks.

“Bastard, a*shole...”

The Ancient Devil had the impulse to get mad but it knew the most important thing was to deal with Han Yan first. It quickly settle its mind down, but this young man and this dog were abhorrent, especially this dog. They affected it so much it simply couldn't calm its mind and could go berserk at any second.

Currently, the Ancient Devil was fighting a war in the spiritual world while receiving provocations from Big Yellow and Jiang Chen with its physical body being bitten off by a stupid dog. This is driving it crazy. Naturally, it knew what these two brats were trying to do. They wanted to disturb its mind so that Han Yan could gain the upper hand in the spiritual world. Despite knowing this, there was nothing it could do to stop them.

“Kaka...”

Big Yellow laughed. Then he leaped and bit off the flesh of the other half of its butt. The scene looked like chrysanthemums falling from above. It was unparalleled.

The Ancient Devil was enraged. It could no longer calm its mind. Since Big Yellow was merely hurting its body it wouldn't hurt Han Yan at all. This fact had goaded Big Yellow to continue with his biting.

On the other hand, Han Yan was comprehending the Great Soul Derivation Technique while consolidating his soul. At the same time, he was gaining control of the spiritual seed. Due to the instability of the Ancient Devil's emotions, its soul was losing its strength. This had given Han Yan the chance to pull the spiritual seed near to its control.

This situation excited Han Yan as he was starting to see great hope. Once he gained control over the spiritual seed, the Ancient Devil would receive tremendous amount of backlash. Afterwards, it was he who would refine the Ancient Devil instead.

In the following moment, Big Yellow was bouncing up and down, opening his mouth to bite off the flesh from different parts of the Ancient Devil's body. The Ancient Devil was howling continuously. The ground was full of the Ancient Devil's bloody flesh. A stout thigh was bitten until only bones were left.

This situation lasted for a day and a night. At this time, nothing fleshy was left on the body of the Ancient Devil. They were all bitten off by Big Yellow, piece by piece. The whole scene looked very grotesque.

On the other side, Han Yan had finally prevailed over the Ancient

Devil. He had gain full control of the spiritual seed using his bloodline.

Weng *Weng*

The spiritual seed vibrated violently. The Ancient Devil let out an agonizing cry as it was suffering the great backlash. Currently, it was completely defenceless and powerless.

“No...”

The Ancient Devil snarled in a reluctant tone. It didn't think that something like this would happen. It's only chance of reincarnation was scraped away and it turned out that it was the prey of its target. This was undeniably a tragic circumstance.

Seeing this, Big Yellow finally stopped his biting. He was nearly out of breath. His effort wasn't in vain when he saw Han Yan succeeding in the struggle. Jiang Chen also withdrew his spiritual energy away from Han Yan. He knew that once Han Yan took control of the spiritual seed, not only he would win the tug-of-war, he would also control the soul and the bloodline of the Ancient Devil. What Han Yan wanted to do next was to refine this Ancient Devil completely. It was hard to imagine how powerful Han Yan would become after refining this Ninth Grade Great Saint Ancient Devil.

Swoosh

Han Yan opened his eyes all of a sudden. Two beams of light shot out from his eyes. With a sway, he appeared above the Ancient Devil, floating. Waves of devil Qi surged out of his body and shrouded around the Ancient Devil like a cage.

“Little Chen, Big Yellow, thank you.”

Han Yan expressed his gratitude to his two best friends with a smile.

“Since when do we emphasize on formalities? This is your great luck, take advantage of it.”

Jiang Chen said with a smile. This was what he longed to see. He was extremely happy to see the ones closest to him growing rapidly.

“That’s right. This is my great luck. I am going to refine this Ancient Devil now but it will take some time. I don’t need you two to stay here with me. I can cope with the rest myself. There are still a lot of treasures in the ancient battlefield. I don’t want you guys to miss it. You all have already miss one day of exploring because of me.”

Han Yan said. There were too many cultivators who came to this ancient battlefield. The number of experts were as much as the numbers of clouds in the sky. Treasure hunt was a race against time. He knew that his two best friends had wasted one day just for him and he could manage whatever that was left here. Even if Jiang Chen and Big Yellow stayed here, they wouldn’t be much of a

help. Furthermore, if the two of them missed their lucky encounters because of him, he would feel very guilty.

“Well, in that case, we’ll go first.”

Jiang Chen nodded. He did have a lot of things to do. He had to continue materializing the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda. He wanted to break through into the Great Saint realm in this ancient battlefield. There were too many people who wanted him dead. So, increasing his cultivation grade was the key in handling these people. If he could advance to the First Grade Great Saint, he would be able to handle any of them.

Subsequently, Jiang Chen and Big Yellow left the spatial zone, leaving Han Yan and the Ancient Devil here.

Outside the spatial zone, Big Yellow said. “Little Chen, won’t somebody else come in here to disturb Ah Yan?”

“There won’t be anybody that will come in here. This is a hidden small space specially created by the Ancient Devil. Without the message from Ah Yan, even I won’t be able to trace it this far. Plus, we had been in there for a day and a night. We saw no one else coming in. This place should be very safe for Ah Yan.”

Jiang Chen shook his head. He was quite confident that Han Yan would be safe refining the Ancient Devil in this secret space.

After putting the worries for Han Yan aside, the two of them

began to fly towards the other spatial zone, but after a short flight, Jiang Chen discovered something unusual.

“Big Yellow, do you sense that a lot of spatial zones are gone?”

Jiang Chen released his divine sense and swept it across the void. He found out that the total number of the spatial nodes were reduced by at least 90 percent. There weren't many spatial nodes left.

“Yeah, what's going on here? Why has so many spatial zones disappear?”

Big Yellow could also sense the anomaly. They remembered that there were overlapping spatial zones here one day before and spatial zones were everywhere, but most of them were gone now. This was definitely an unexpected situation to them.

“If my guess is right, those spatial zones that were gone were the empty spatial zones. These remaining spatial zones consisted of plenty of evil souls and treasures.”

Jiang Chen guessed.

“Isn't this great? We don't have to struggle to find the right spatial zone anymore. We can just find anyone of them to slaughter the evil souls and monsters to condense your Ancestral Dragon Pagoda.”

Said Big Yellow.

“You are right, but this situation is disadvantageous to us. The reduction of the spatial zones is equivalent to a higher chance of meeting the other experts. We have too many enemies, all the experts of the five large families and the geniuses of Saint Origin Palace wants to kill me. If they meet me, a battle will be inevitable.”

Said Jiang Chen. Before this, there were plenty of spatial zones. So even with a lot of people coming into the ancient battlefield, it was difficult to meet these experts, but now it was different, most of the spatial zones had disappeared and the chances of meeting each other would be much greater.

“Who cares! We won’t be afraid of them even if we meet them. Besides, Gu Family and Demon Race are on our side.”

Big Yellow sounded unworried. This dog was fearless to virtually anything. If they met the enemy, they would simply just have a great battle. There was no big deal about it.

“Exactly. Be it the evil souls or the enemy, the following time will be a mad killing time. Big Yellow, are you ready?”

Jiang Chen flicked his arm and the Heavenly Saint Sword materialised in his hand, creating a buzzing sound. The surface of the sword was flickering with blood-red image of a dragon.

“Kaka, master dog has been very hungry and thirsty.”

Big Yellow looked excited.

A young man and a dog began to fly forth and found a spatial node very quickly. Then, they entered it without hesitation.

Roar

A shrill roar was heard as they entered. It was a ferocious evil soul that opened its ferocious mouth charging at them when it spotted them.

Pu Chi

The Heavenly Saint Sword swung, cutting the evil soul in half.

Chapter 922 - Kong Yang's Courage and Uprightness

This was only a Minor Saint evil soul, so Jiang Chen was too lazy to absorb it using the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda.

Howl

There were really plenty of evil souls here. After sensing Jiang Chen and Big Yellow's intrusion, a few evil souls charged at them from the darkness. This time Jiang Chen didn't strike. He left it all to Big Yellow.

Big Yellow used his steel head to dash forward. Those few evil souls were instantly smashed to pieces. They then heard a continuous roar in the spatial zone. At random times, they could also hear the rumble of battle. It was the sound of the combat waves. It seemed like there were more than evil souls and monsters existed in this spatial zone, there were also a lot of human cultivators here.

Jiang Chen and Big Yellow exchanged a glance and flew towards the inner region. Presently, a few people suddenly appeared in their sight. Then, there was a man who looked extremely fazed and full of blood. He was running away from the few people as they yelled and chased after him.

“Stand right there and leave your combat armour.”

A mighty Ninth Grade Minor Saint roared.

When the fleeing man saw Jiang Chen and Big Yellow, he felt like he had seen his saviour, and immediately, he shouted. “Brother Jiang, save me!”

As a matter of fact, he knew that he still had hope the moment he saw Jiang Chen and Big Yellow. He knew all too well the power of this young man and dog. Although the people who were chasing him were powerful geniuses of the Sky Ranking, they were no match for the two.

“Kong Yu.”

Jiang Chen and Big Yellow yelped, this bloody man was no stranger to them, he is the youngest son of Peacock King, Kong Yu. The scene was already very obvious, those people were hunting him.

Swoosh

They stood in front of Kong Yu, staring coldly at those few people who were chasing him, they had never seen them before, but they could tell that they were the experts of the Pure Land just from their uniform.

“Who are you? I suggest you to stay out of it. I am Narang He and they are from the Shi and Desolate Family which you can’t afford to offend.”

Narang He didn't recognize Jiang Chen. Even though he felt that this white-clothed young man wasn't an easy opponent, he himself was strong and was the genius of Narang Family. Thus, he didn't need to fear this young man. That's why he spoke to Jiang Chen in an arrogant tone.

“Kong Yu, hand over the combat armour, otherwise, I will send you down to accompany your brother and that stupid leopard.”

A man from the Shi Family yelled at Kong Yu, ignoring the existence of Jiang Chen and Big Yellow. Their minds were just thinking about the combat armour in Kong Yu's hands. In fact, if they really thought about it – this young man and dog – they wouldn't have a problem figuring out that it was Jiang Chen and Big Yellow. After all, almost no one in the Pure Land didn't know the famous Jiang Chen.

“A bunch of fools. If I were you, I would disappear from here at once. Although I have a feud with the five large families, I'm too lazy to kill you all. Get out of here and vanish at this instant.”

Jiang Chen said very impatiently.

“Asking us to get out of here? This must be a joke. Who do you think you are? Since you refused to get lost, we will just kill you as well. Anyone who offends the Narang Family will only face one outcome – death.”

Narang He pointed his finger at Jiang Chen. He even released his

Qi, ready to fight against Jiang Chen, while the experts of the Shi and Desolate Family were frowning, as if they felt that something was wrong.

Pu Chi

Narang He was only able to release his Qi. His body suddenly shook, petrified. He looked down and saw a cold long sword piercing through his body. Blood was gushing out from the hole and he could feel that his vital force was losing rapidly.

“You...”

Narang He looked over at Jiang Chen, feeling stunned. He was a powerful Ninth Grade Minor Saint, the genius of the Sky Ranking, the genius of the geniuses, but he was instantly defeated by his opponent. He didn't even know when did his opponent attacked.

Only now did he recall the name.

“Remember this, the man who killed you is called Jiang Chen. I gave you a chance to live but you didn't appreciate it.”

Jiang Chen's words was like sharp knife poking into Narang He's heart. He now regretted this in his heart, he was too focused on the combat armour that Kong Yu have that he failed to recognize Jiang Chen. It was a pity that it was already too late for that.

“Jiang Chen, he is Jiang Chen.”

The genius of Shi Family cried out in shock. Without even bothering what would happen to Narang He, they immediately spun around and left, fearing that a seconds delay would result in death. Despite their hatred towards Jiang Chen, they were still afraid of him. In their hearts, Jiang Chen was really a disastrous star, an evil king. Although they all had a powerful cultivation base and were the top geniuses on the Sky Ranking, they still couldn't be compared to Jiang Chen. In spite of their arrogance and their desire for revenge, they still understood this irrefutable fact.

“Thank you, brother Jiang. Otherwise, I would be buried here today.”

Kong Yu cupped his fists to express his heartfelt gratitude.

“You just got some kind of combat armour, so why were they hunting you like that?”

Big Yellow asked curiously.

On Kong Yu's arm was an armour that illuminated a golden light. It looked extraordinary and indestructible, it exuded some sort of divine aura.

“This is the Golden Silk Combat Armour, a Great Saint Armor. You are very lucky. No wonder they wanted to kill you. A Great Saint Weapon itself is extremely rare, let alone a Great Saint Armor. This is made from the golden silk of Western Domain. It is indestructible and has astonishing defensive power.”

Jiang Chen was able to identify the origin of the combat armour with just a single glance, which explained why Narang He and the others were chasing after Kong Yu.

“Oh! Brother Jiang, you need to save my big brother and Leopard Wei now.”

Kong Yu suddenly thought of something and said hurriedly.

“What happened to them?”

Jiang Chen frowned. He knew the big brother that Kong Yu mentioned was Kong Yang, the number one genius of the Demon Race and third on the Sky Ranking. Judging from Kong Yu's expression, the both of them seemed to have encountered a crisis.

“Big brother and Leopard Wei found a treasure left behind by a Great Saint expert, but unexpectedly, they encountered that monstrous genius of the Desolate Family, Desolate Yuan. I have no idea what Desolate Yuan has gotten that made him improve so much, he is already a Great Saint genius now. My big brother had also advanced to the Great Saint realm, he was supposed have sufficient power to fight Desolate Yuan, but Desolate Yuan's cultivation grade had reached the of peak First Grade Great Saint, only a step away from the Second Grade Great Saint. He must have obtained some kind of benefits in the ancient battlefield, so my big brother wouldn't be a match for him, much less for Leopard Wei who was not even a Great Saint yet. Plus, there were geniuses from the Saint Origin Palace also.”

Kong Yu told them the situation of Leopard Wei and Kong Yan quickly. The both of them were now at the most critical moment. If they were late, they would only see their dead bodies.

“Let’s go over there now.”

Without saying another word, Jiang Chen flew towards the inner region. He had an excellent relationship with Peacock King. Currently, Peacock King was helping him guard the Martial Saint Dynasty. Kong Yang was the son of Peacock King. If something were to happen to him, he would feel extremely guilty and wouldn’t have the face to look at Peacock King anymore.

Kong Yu wiped off a handful of sweat and felt lucky that he met Jiang Chen. He knew that Jiang Chen had the capability to save his big brother.

Deep in the zone, before the mountain cave shrouded in formation, a fierce battle was ongoing. Many bystanders had surrounded them to watch the fight.

There were three people on the battlefield, two of whom looked very fazed. They were Kong Yang and Leopard Wei from the Demon Race. Kong Yang had a better look as he was a mighty First Grade Great Saint. Even though he was no match for Desolate Yuan, it was fundamentally impossible for Desolate Yuan to kill him within a short period of time. Leopard Wei on the other hand looked miserably bad. Despite the benefits that he had obtained from the Suspended Tower, he didn’t have enough time to fully

digest it. He was only a half-step Great Saint, there was still a step away from the Great Saint realm.

The present Leopard Wei had blood all over his body. His Qi had fully shrivelled up, and he looked fragile and weak, completely out of battle strength. Kong Yang's Qi wrapped around him, trying his best to protect him.

“Kong Yang, fighting against me only has one outcome – death. I heard that your race has already taken that damned Jiang Chen as an ally. Then, you are the enemy of the Desolate Yuan. Today, I will kill the both of you first, then all the geniuses of the Demon Race. When I meet that Jiang Chen again next time, I will surely rip him into pieces.”

Desolate Yuan said cynically. When he lost to Jiang Chen, it was the biggest humiliation that he had ever faced. Today, he had improved tremendously in such a short time after receiving the huge benefit. If he met Jiang Chen again, he had the absolute certainty of killing him.

Two young men were standing not far away from the scene. They had a snobbish look as though they did not put everyone in this world in their eyes. They had the same cultivation as Desolate Yuan, peak First Grade Great Saint, but they were cultivators with the noblest status – Saint Origin Palace.

“Desolate Yuan, don't waste any more time, finish them off already.”

One spoke. He was called Desolate Cong, he was also a member of the Desolate Family.

“Rest assured. None of them will live.”

Desolate Yuan sneered, definitely not putting Kong Yang and Leopard Wei in his eyes. These two men were already dead in his heart.

“Kong Yang, just leave me.”

Leopard Wei gritted his teeth and said. The situation was already obvious. Kong Yang was no match for Desolate Yuan and he still needed to protect him. He was afraid that Kong Yang wouldn't be able to protect himself eventually, costing his own life. He knew about Kong Yang's ability – the innate ability of Peacock King – that could allow him to move at lightning speed. If Kong Yang escaped now, he might have the chance to live, but he chose to stay behind instead.

“Shut up.”

Kong Yang reprimanded without turning his head.

Leopard Wei's eyes turned red, he felt warmth in his heart. During the fierce internal conflicts in the Demon Race, he treated Kong Yang as his biggest rival, but now, Kong Yang was standing in front of him, protecting his life.

Chapter 923 - Killing the Geniuses of Saint Origin Palace

Leopard Wei no longer said anything. Although Kong Yang was formerly opponent, he knew him all too well. Kong Yang was a person who would never escape on his own, because if that was the case, he wouldn't be Kong Yang.

“It is a sad thing that we – the two great geniuses of Demon Race – will fall at such a place.” Leopard Wei sighed helplessly.

The present circumstance was crystal clear. Kong Yang was severely injured, as such he couldn't fight Desolate Yuan. Not only that, there was Desolate Cong, who was also a member of Desolate Family and a genius of Saint Origin Palace, who didn't seem to have the intention of letting them go.

“Kong Yang, even though I am going to kill you today, I have to say that you are the genius I most admire among all the geniuses on the Sky Ranking. It's a bit of pity that we can't be friends.” Desolate Yuan said while shaking his head.

“You are right. We are fated not to be friends, because someone like you aren't qualified to become a friend of Kong Yang.”

Right after Desolate Yuan's voice dropped, a voice suddenly sounded from behind. It wasn't Kong Yang's, it was Jiang Chen's.

Hearing this line, everyone on the scene was petrified. They

turned towards the source of the sound, including Kong Yang and Leopard Wei, and saw three silhouettes materializing in seconds. They were two men and a dog. One of them was a youth covered with blood, he was the Kong Yu who escaped.

“Jiang Chen.”

Desolate Yuan and Leopard Wei exclaimed at the same time as they didn't expect to see him here.

Seeing Jiang Chen, majestic combat intent burst out Desolate Yuan's body. He was gritting his teeth, holding himself back from rushing over and slice Jiang Chen to pieces. From young until now, he had never lost a battle to any of his peers except to Jiang Chen. This was undeniably a great insult to his life. In order to scrape away this insult, he only had one way – that was to kill Jiang Chen.

On the other hand, Leopard Wei had entirely different thought. He felt like he had seen the sunlight the moment he saw Jiang Chen, shining upon his gloomy heart. He could feel that Jiang Chen was now many times more powerful than before. He knew the scariness of Jiang Chen after his battle with him. Now that Jiang Chen appeared, he and Kong Yang would be saved. He believed that Desolate Yuan wasn't necessarily stronger than Jiang Chen.

Kong Yang looked over at Jiang Chen with astonished eyes. He had already heard about Jiang Chen beforehand, but it's just today that he saw Jiang Chen in person. He was quite interested in the man who could kill Shi Han, but he didn't expect his first meeting

with Jiang Chen would be in such a scene.

“Desolate Yuan, it’s no use looking at me fiercely because no matter how angry you are, it won’t change the fact that you are the loser. Last time you ran away from the battle. Today, it is your misfortune to meet me again. Of course, if you choose to run away like a mourning dog again, there is still chance.”

Jiang Chen’s tone, words and face were filled with sarcasm. He totally didn’t put Desolate Yuan in his eyes.

“What? He beat Desolate Yuan?”

Many people were shocked, including Kong Yang and Leopard Wei and Kong Yu who was standing beside Jiang Chen. All of their eyes widened due to disbelief, particularly Leopard Wei who was still speculating whether Jiang Chen could defeat Desolate Yuan. He hadn’t thought that the two had battled beforehand. According to Jiang Chen, Desolate Yuan was defeated and ran away.

It was too shocking to hear that the number one genius on the Sky Ranking was defeated by Jiang Chen. They certainly wouldn’t believe it if this wasn’t coming from Jiang Chen’s mouth.

Moreover, they could see the expression on Desolate Yuan’s face. It was a face that had been defeated by Jiang Chen.

“Jiang Chen, I will claim back the insult you brought upon me. Today, I will kill you.” Desolate Yuan said maliciously.

Jiang Chen's words were like blades impaling his heart. It was the feeling when the wound was tore open bit by bit in the face of countless people. His hate for Jiang Chen now was higher than the mountain and deeper than the sea.

"You won't have the chance."

Jiang Chen crossed his hands behind his back while walking to Desolate Yuan one step after the other, blocking Kong Yang and Leopard Wei from the view. Kong Yu hurriedly stepped forward to pull Kong Yang and the seriously injured Leopard Wei.

"Big brother, are you alright?" Kong Yu was worried.

"I'm fine."

Kong Yang shook his head. Then, he and Leopard Wei took out a red pill each and swallowed it to heal their injuries. Kong Yang stared at Jiang Chen's back and said, "Jiang Chen, you have to be careful. Desolate Yuan has gotten some benefits in this ancient battlefield. He would be a difficult opponent."

Even though Jiang Chen had defeated Desolate Yuan, his present strength wasn't comparable to his previous strength. Well, of course, Kong Yang didn't know Jiang Chen defeated Desolate Yuan while he was merely an Eighth Grade Minor Saint. It was true that Desolate Yuan had gotten great benefits in this place, but Jiang Chen also got benefits but greater. Jiang Chen had already reached the peak Ninth Grade Minor Saint, which made his combat

strength unrivalled. Desolate Yuan was undeniably no match for him.

The two geniuses of Saint Origin Palace were studying Jiang Chen. After returning from Saint Origin Palace, the most they heard was Jiang Chen's name, his achievements and the feud between him and the five large families.

“Desolate Yuan, I think this man is a difficult opponent, let us join in the battle.”

Desolate Cong, the genius of Saint Origin Palace, said while the other genius of Huo Family was ready to move.

“No, don't interfere with my business. I must kill him myself.”

Desolate Yuan didn't accept their help. He didn't put even the geniuses of Saint Origin Palace in his eyes. Well, it made sense for a number one genius of Desolate Family. He had the right to be this arrogant. He had the right to not put Desolate Cong in his eyes. Although Desolate Cong had gotten a lot of cultivation resources in Saint Origin Palace, he would mostly be defeated by Desolate Yuan if they engaged in a battle.

“You really ought to listen to him though the three of you joining together won't have much chance either, but it is still better than you fighting me alone.” Jiang Chen shrugged and said flatly.

“Cut the nonsense. Jiang Chen, die now!”

Desolate Yuan's Qi shook, his entire body bent and distorted. In the next moment, he materialized before Jiang Chen with boundless energy and launched his most powerful attack. With him as the centre of the attack, a chaotic world was condensed, wrapping Jiang Chen completely. This condensed world was filled with vicious airflow that looked seemingly white. It gave everyone a kind of invisible pressure that bent all sides of the void. Everyone who was affected felt like they had entered some sort of prison. It made them feel incomparably unpleasant.

This was the newest technique of Desolate Yuan. Besides the tremendous pressure in the airflow, there were condensed sharp blades that could crush and kill everything.

“Is that all?”

It didn't concern Jiang Chen at all. Three golden dragons rushed out his body all of a sudden.

Roar...

The three golden dragons let out roars. Jiang Chen also transformed to half-dragon instantly, which boosted his combat strength crazily by tenfold. The indestructible small world was instantly pulverized by the attack of his Golden Dragon Seal, scattering around in small pieces.

Bang

The destruction of the condensed small world tremendously affected Desolate Yuan, sending him flying away. His facial expression instantly changed to shock. It was true that he improved a lot within this short period of time, but Jiang Chen's improvement was greater. Even with his most powerful attack, he was still not a match for Jiang Chen.

Before Desolate Yuan could react from his shock, Jiang Chen's body appeared above him and made a trample that carried whirlwind on his body.

“Desolate Yuan, I will not give you the chance to escape this time.”

Jiang Chen's face turned cold as he made the Azure Dragon Five Steps violently.

Bang First step.

Bang Second step.

Bang Third step.

Bang Fourth step.

Four steps landed on Desolate Yuan in an instant. Each step weighed as much as a hundred thousand kilograms. Desolate Yuan

was absolutely powerless. Every step made him spurt blood along with the sound of broken bones. This was truly a tragic scene.

“The fifth step.”

Jiang Chen was cruel and ruthless. He had always been like this towards his enemy. In the eyes of his enemies, he was the god of killing.

The successive scenes had shocked everyone present. A while ago, they thought that it would be a relatively equal match, but it turned out to be one-sided! Desolate Yuan was so vulnerable in front of Jiang Chen, like a dog that was going to die due to domestic abuse even though the abuse only lasted for a few seconds. This fully illustrated Jiang Chen's power and Desolate Yuan was certainly not the same level with him.

“Stop!”

When Jiang Chen was about to make the last step on Desolate Yuan, Desolate Cong, who was standing on the side, regained his senses. He immediately drew out his combat weapon and struck at Jiang Chen to save Desolate Yuan from the attack.

“Humph! You will die first.”

Jiang Chen let out a cold humph and drew out his Heavenly Saint Sword. A brilliant blood-red web of swords straightaway enveloped Desolate Cong that caused his facial expression to

change drastically. This situation recalled the remark made by most of his enemies: you won't know how strong Jiang Chen is until you fight him.

“No!”

Desolate Cong let out a shrill cry but it was over. In the absolute gap of strength, the only thing that awaited him was death. The Heavenly Saint Sword moved too fast, faster than a lightning bolt, and slashed Desolate Cong into half, turning everyone petrified. This genius who had just returned from Saint Origin Palace was killed. No one under the heavens would have such audacity to commit such killing.

Since the establishment of Saint Origin Palace, it became the absolute dominator of Saint Origin World, the supreme power in the world. Although Saint Origin Palace was built by the eight great families of Pure Land, it was detached from these eight families. Desolate Yuan and Desolate Cong were both members of Desolate Family but their statuses were entirely different and each of them represented different power. Jiang Chen killing Desolate Cong meant that he was waging war against the Saint Origin Palace. Jiang Chen was definitely the first person who opposed the Saint Origin Palace openly.

Subsequently, without caring about what other people felt, he made the violent fifth step of the Azure Dragon Five Steps on Desolate Yuan...

Chapter 924 - Fart Banging the Great Saint

Ka Cha

The fifth step of the Azure Dragon Five Steps was the most powerful and the most lethal. Desolate Yuan was already about to meet his end. There was no more strength left in him to resist, much less the strength to defend the last step of Jiang Chen. His chest sunk deep inside before the foot pierced through his body, all of his internal organs were ejected out.

Bang

Desolate Yuan's body fell heavily on the ground, twitching constantly. The present Desolate Yuan was bleeding from every part of his body but he wasn't completely dead yet. His eyes that were covered with blood revealed reluctance and fear.

He was the son of the heaven, the supreme genius, the number one on the Sky Ranking. He was considered a holy child since young and the number one genius of the Desolate Family. He was recognized by the higher ups in his family as the most probable genius that could break through into the Immortal realm. Yet, all of his hopes, honour and glory seemed so fragile in the face of death.

Pa

Jiang Chen raised his foot and stepped on Desolate Yuan's face.

“The number one on the Sky Ranking? The top genius of the Desolate Family? The supremely glorious figure in the Pure Land? What else can you brag about? You died just like an ordinary person, leaving nothing behind.”

Jiang Chen looked down at Desolate Yuan under his feet who was still twitching uncontrollably like a worm, trying hard to break free but couldn't. He lost count of how many times he looked at his opponents with such disdain. However, he didn't expect that such words would be used against him today.

“Die now.”

Jiang Chen stepped hard, pressing Desolate Yuan's head into the solid ground before lifting his leg up. Desolate Yuan's body made a few random wriggle on the ground before stopping entirely. Now, the legendary number one genius on the Sky Ranking, the people's little monstrous genius was dead. All of his deeds were supposed to become legends, but due to Jiang Chen's existence, his 'legends' only served as a foil for Jiang Chen's path in the future.

Hiss

At this moment, everyone breathed in a cold air. The present scene was like a dream to them. The number one genius on the Sky Ranking died just like that, simplistically killed by Jiang Chen. Their impression of Jiang Chen grew exponentially in their hearts. The dazzling stars, bright geniuses were nothing but floating clouds in front of him.

The genius of the Huo Family that came from Saint Origin Palace was completely stunned at the moment. His face was devoid of the pride he previously had. This was also like a dream to him. Even though he wasn't sure how powerful Desolate Yuan was, he knew how strong Desolate Cong was. Their powers would be evenly matched if the two of them fought.

However, Desolate Cong was instantly killed by Jiang Chen with a single slash, it only showed that even if he rushed forth, he would face the same outcome as Desolate Cong.

Run!

That was right. Just run. Perhaps he still had the time to do so now, or else he would certainly lose his life today.

Swoosh

However, he had no more time to run when he saw a big yellow sturdy dog standing in front of him, giving him no way to escape.

“Heh! Heh! Want to run now? It seems a little late for that.” Big Yellow chuckled.

“I didn't mess with you all.” The genius of the Huo Family frowned and said.

If it was before, he would have already killed this dog instantly, but he must bear it now, only by compromising would he have a chance to survive.

“It’s true that you didn’t mess with us, but does that really matter?”

Big Yellow’s words gave people the impulse to spurt blood. This was a remark that was beyond shameless, but they understood that Jiang Chen hadn’t gotten along with the Huo Family. Before the battle, this genius originally wanted join the fight, but after seeing Jiang Chen’s overpowering attack, he held himself back, or perhaps he didn’t have a chance because his other two comrades were instantly killed by Jiang Chen.

“Stupid dog! Get out of my way.” The genius of the Huo Family snarled, and immediately stuck out a palm, clawing at Big Yellow.

“Kaka...”

Big Yellow was totally unafraid. He was now a powerful First Grade Great Saint, a peak First Grade Great Saint. Back in the Dark Shadow stronghold, he could even kill a Third Grade Great Saint by himself. The one standing in front of him was merely a First Grade Great Saint. He wouldn’t fear this opponent even if he was the top genius of the Huo Family.

Bang

Big Yellow's head illuminated golden rays of light, colliding at the incoming palm. A bang was heard and the genius was sent forty meters flying away.

“What?”

The genius of the Huo Family was totally shocked and frustrated that he had the urge to puke blood. How could a great genius like him couldn't even handle a dog?

However, before he could react, Big Yellow struck again.

There were lots of people gathered around the battlefield. They were the cultivators that were already in this spatial zone earlier. Jiang Chen's power had already made them speechless. They hadn't thought that this dog would be so powerful that the genius of Huo Family was totally suppressed.

But then, there were a few of them that were not surprised about this incident. They already had a good understanding of Big Yellow. He was a powerful divine beast that was able to enter the Ninth Floor of the Suspended Tower and was recognized by the Totem Divine Seal, which made him the true genius of the Demon Race. It would be a disgrace if he couldn't even defeat a genius of the Huo Family.

Jiang Chen didn't want to waste any more time because many spatial zones were already gone. The movements here would most likely draw the attention of the powerful experts. He drew out his Heavenly Saint Sword and was about to swing it at the genius of

the Huo Family, but a buzzing sound came out from the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda at this time.

Jiang Chen was stunned. He quickly checked what happened. He then found out that the earth devil beast's cultivation grade in the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda had already advanced to Third Grade Great Saint. A similar situation also happened to the devil, it could advance to the Fourth Grade Great Saint at any time.

“Well, it seems like due the constant absorption of energy of the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda, it gave the two of them a great deal of benefits. The earth devil beast is already a Third Grade Great Saint. Its combat strength is now comparable to a Fourth Grade Great Saint, which will provide me enormous help.”

Jiang Chen was surprised. The earth devil beast and the devil were his slaves. The more powerful the earth devil beast was, the greater help it could give to him. With his current combat strength, he would be able to fight a Third Grade Great Saint, but if he encountered a Fourth Grade Great Saint, he would have no chance. Now that the earth devil beast had advanced to Third Grade Great Saint, it gave Jiang Chen the capability to handle a Fourth Grade Great Saint.

In order not to affect the advancement of the earth devil beast and the devil, Jiang Chen slowly put down his Heavenly Saint Sword, no longer having any intention to join in the fight between Big Yellow and the genius of the Huo Family. He could already see that the genius wouldn't be a match for Big Yellow. He would be eliminated by Big Yellow very soon.

Looking at Big Yellow's enthusiasm, Jiang Chen had a feeling that Big Yellow would definitely bite his butt if he interfered in the fight.

Bang

Under the fierce impact of Big Yellow, the genius of the Huo Family fell down from the sky, smashing to the ground heavily. Big Yellow was very fast. His body swooped down and landed hard on the genius, however, his movements looked very indecent as he landed with his butt pressing on the genius' face.

Seeing such a scene, Jiang Chen hurriedly covered his eyes and retreated to a distance. He already knew what kind of tragedy would happen without even looking at it. The genius would certainly die under Big Yellow's fart, he wouldn't be able to raise his head even if he became a ghost due to humiliation.

“Taste Grandpa's Invincible Whirlwind Fart!”

Big Yellow's foot was charged with force. His butt instantly magnified by a fold. Then, everyone heard an earth-shaking roar, almost like thunder. Green mass of air rushed out of his butt and exploded on the genius' face.

Hong Long

The gusts of air dispersed like a violent storm. Everyone could hear a scream that didn't sound like human coming from the

genius. His entire body was slammed against the ground, creating a large pit. Green smoke was rolling within the newly created hole.

“Argh... kill me now...”

The scream from the pit was creepy but the genius couldn't get all of his words out, his mouth was choking horrendously.

The people around were stupefied. They clearly saw Big Yellow's fart passed by and knew how horrifying it was. Very quickly, the fart flowed to their faces due to the air. The people's stupefied faces instantly changed.

“vomit What the h...! It stinks!”

“vomit vomit vomit vomit”

“I'm going to d-d-die. vomit”

Even those Minor Saints and Great Saint experts were caught off guard by Big Yellow's peerless fart. None of them could stand it. Some of them immediately puked at once. Many faces turned green and pale, while some of them cursed. This was undeniably the most terrible fart in the world.

Once the fart permeated through the air, many of them quickly ran to a distance, and looked back at Big Yellow in fear, however, they immediately shifted their attention to the large pit. Thinking about the horrific condition made them shiver.

They couldn't even bear the green air that dispersed in the air. It must be very miserable to be in the shoes of that genius now.

Someone used their divine sense and found that the genius was lying quietly deep in the pit, completely still, but judging from his Qi, he wasn't dead yet. He was still alive but lost the ability to move. The only explanation for this was that he had fainted.

Oh god, could a Great Saint really faint? This was simply impossible. One should know that he was a Great Saint. How could a Great Saint possibly faint? Despite all of their questions, the genius in front of them had really fainted like a clumsy bear.

Big Yellow had created a miracle by using his fart to knockout a Great Saint.

Chapter 925 - The Earth Devil Beast Struck

“Godlike.”

“I swear that from now on, Big Yellow will my idol.”

Kong Yu and Leopard Wei's expression were incomparably vibrant. Their admiration for Big Yellow now overwhelmed and flooded their emotions like a tidal wave. Using fart to knockout a Great Saint? Who could create such miracle? It seemed like only Big Yellow could do this.

“Tsk, even if this Huo Family bastard isn't dead, he will be crippled in the future for sure. Big Yellow not only knocked him out, but also caused a serious damage to him, irreparable damage. Additionally, this bastard won't be able to raise his head while walking anymore. So it's impossible for him to return to Saint Origin Palace.”

Kong Yang was clicking his tongue. He had already seen that this genius from the Huo Family wasn't just simply knocked out. Big Yellow's fart not only stinked, its power was also incredible. Although that genius was a powerful Great Saint, if he was replaced by an ordinary Minor Saint, this dog's fart would certainly tear him apart.

“Wanna fight Master Dog? You're too young for that.”

Big Yellow wagged his stout tail and raised his proud head, swaggering to Jiang Chen. It seemed that he had no intention of

killing the genius of the Huo Family. Jiang Chen had a smile on his face but he didn't intend to make a move either. It was no longer necessary to kill such a pathetic man because his future was already as good as dead.

There were quite a lot of geniuses from the five large families around. After seeing the scene, they quickly dispersed, fearing that Jiang Chen would kill them as well. Given their strengths, they were no match for these freaks at all.

Kong Yang came close to Jiang Chen. He held his fists and said, "Brother Jiang, I'm very grateful that you saved my life."

"You're welcome, Brother Kong. Your father and I have a very good relationship. He is now guarding my home, naturally I want to ensure the safety of his descendants. I think your injuries aren't light. Take this medicine quick."

Jiang Chen took out three pills and handed it to Kong Yang, Leopard Wei and Kong Yu each. Leopard Wei and Kong Yu had the most serious injuries compared to the rest. If they couldn't recover soon, it would leave a nasty side effect on their future cultivation.

The three of them didn't show much formalities. They were now standing on the same boat as Jiang Chen. For Kong Yang, today was the first time he saw Jiang Chen's might, he saw how terrifying a Ninth Grade Minor Saint could be. In his life, he rarely admired people, but today, Jiang Chen was the first one who gained his admiration.

After swallowing the pills, their faces changed dramatically. They felt the same as what Gu Liufeng and the others felt after consuming the pill. There was no doubt that they had plenty of vulnerary pills with them, but it was incomparable to Jiang Chen without a question.

“Good pill.”

Kong Yang couldn't help but praise.

“That's right, the speed of recovery of this pill is awesome. I was so badly hurt but almost half of my injuries are already healed in just a short time. It is incredible.” Leopard Wei said.

“That is of course, Jiang Chen not only has great combat strength, he also has great alchemy skill.” Big Yellow said in an incomparably proud tone, as though he was the alchemist instead of Jiang Chen.

“Okay, we can't stay here for long. Too many spatial zones are already gone and the ruckus here will most likely attract stronger experts here, which will create great trouble for us. We'll have to leave now,” said Jiang Chen.

“Alright.”

Kong Yang nodded, feeling that Jiang Chen's words were very reasonable.

Hong Long

However, just when they were about to leave, the void burst into a hole and three figures emerged. They were all elders in different clothes, this only showed that they were from three different families namely the Desolate, Huo and Narang Family respectively.

What was shocking was the strength of these three individuals. The two elders of Huo and Narang Family had already reached the Third Grade Great Saint while the elder of the Desolate Family had the scariest cultivation – a mighty Fourth Grade Great Saint.

Immediately after they saw the tragedy here, they got infuriated and sealed off the entire spatial zone.

“Look, it’s the elders.”

“Well, they are surely going to die this time. Jiang Chen has killed Desolate Yuan and the geniuses of the Saint Origin Palace. The elders will never let them go.”

.....

The appearance of the three elders delighted the disciples of the five large families who were currently fleeing.

On Kong Yang’s side, every one of their faces darkened. Three masters of the five large families had emerged before the masters of the Gu Family and the Demon Race. The two Third Grade Great

Saints were already out of their league, let alone the mighty Fourth Grade Great Saint. The idea of killing them wouldn't be as casual as talking.

Although Jiang Chen was strong, he was after all only a Ninth Grade Minor Saint. It was certainly impossible for him to fight the Fourth Grade Great Saint.

“Brother Jiang, what now?”

Kong Yang sounded worried. At this time, Jiang Chen had undoubtedly been regarded as the backbone of the team.

“No worries.”

Jiang Chen waved his hand, and gestured to Kong Yang to keep calm. If it was before, it would really be a life-threatening situation to encounter a Fourth Grade Great Saint, but just now, the earth devil beast had just advanced to Third Grade Great Saint. As such, it would have no problem fighting the Fourth Grade Great Saint of the Desolate Family.

“Desolate Yuan, Desolate Cong...”

When the elder of the Desolate Family saw the tragic death of the two young geniuses, his eyes suddenly turned red. The death of these two talents was undeniably a great loss to the Desolate Family.

“There is no need to call for them. They were killed by me. By the way, let me introduce myself, I am called Jiang Chen.” Jiang Chen said to the three Great Saints.

Even if he was currently facing such powerful experts, he didn't have any signs of nervousness. Kong Yang and the others wondered where did Jiang Chen get so much confidence.

“Damn, you little beast! You dared to kill two great geniuses of our family! You are asking for your death! I must kill you today to settle the scores that you have done to our people!”

The elder of the Desolate Family gritted his teeth and felt the urge to rush forward and devour Jiang Chen.

“The genius of the Huo Family is dead too. Jiang Chen, who gave you such an audacity to kill the geniuses of Saint Origin Palace?” The elder of the Huo Family raged at Jiang Chen.

“I have also sensed the death Qi of Narang Family's genius. It must be him who did it. All of the people here would have to die, including the people of the Demon Race who protected Jiang Chen. They are all our enemies!”

The elder of Narang Family yelled in an aggressive tone, it showed that he had no intention of letting Jiang Chen and the others go.

“Haha! Just with the strength of three old men? It must be a joke.

Bring out any skills that you have, I would like to see who will be killing who today.”

Jiang Chen laughed out loud, expressing his arrogance. It seemed like he did not put the three Great Saints in his eyes at all. Let’s not talk about whether he had the strength to fight these opponents first, his spirit alone could subdue people.

“Shamelessly bragging! It’s time to stop this little brat’s arrogance.”

The elder of the Desolate Family fluctuated his Qi and struck out a palm at the void, charging towards Jiang Chen. The target of the attack wasn’t just Jiang Chen, it included Big Yellow and the rest of his friends. It seemed like the elder intended to kill them all with just a single blow.

This man was a dignified Fourth Grade Great Saint, the Supreme Elder of the Desolate Family. It would undoubtedly be a disgrace for him to handle the juniors himself, but the death of Desolate Yuan and Desolate Cong left him no choice but to eliminate everyone that were related to their deaths in order to take revenge.

“It’s over.”

Kong Yu shuddered. A mighty Fourth Grade Great Saint was really beyond their ability. They could already feel the mountain like pressure from this palm, it suffocated them badly.

At this moment, even Kong Yang was overwhelmed with concerns, he had no idea how Jiang Chen would deal with this mighty Fourth Grade Great Saint. Yet, there wasn't a single panic shown on Jiang Chen's face, it was filled with confidence instead. His steadiness had relieved a large load of their worries.

“Earth devil beast, now.”

Jiang Chen called the earth devil beast and it rushed out of the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda. Everyone saw a large black hand materialising in the air and collided with the palm attack of the Great Saint.

Hong Long

The Heaven and Earth shook. The palm strike of the Great Saint was instantly pulverised by the large black hand.

Howl

Then, an earth-shaking howl was heard. A middle-aged man that looked as strong as iron tower appeared. He continued to let out howls. His body emitted countless of black devil waves that soared up to the sky, as if he was the incarnation of a giant devil.

“Haha...”

The earth devil beast burst into laughter. He had just advanced to the Third Grade Great Saint and he wanted to express his stifled

feelings in the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda. He was the king of the devil race and was a born fighter. He felt like he was the tiger that had been released into the mountains after being kept in the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda for so long.

“Who is this? What a powerful devil Qi. He isn’t human. He belongs to the devil race. His body has the bloodline of the devil race. This is an earth devil beast.”

The elder of Narang Family changed his expression the moment he discovered the earth devil beast.

“A Third Grade Great Saint earth devil beast is enough to deal with a Fourth Grade Great Saint. How could this little beast have a such powerful underling?”

The elder of the Huo Family was shocked as well. In fact, no one wasn’t shocked by the presence of the earth devil beast. They could already see how strong the beast was just from their first exchange. The blow of the Fourth Grade Great Saint was easily pulverized by it.

Chapter 926 - The Suppression of Water and Fire

“Wow, Jiang Chen is too domineering. How could he have such a powerful earth devil beast with him?”

Leopard Wei got so excited that he almost jumped. He originally thought that it was over, and had not thought that Jiang Chen still had a powerful trump card—sending the formidable earth devil beast out at this critical moment.

“Although the earth devil beast was merely a Third Grade Great Saint, its body has the bloodline of the top existence among the demon beasts and the king of the devils. Therefore, despite the fact that it is only a Third Grade Great Saint, it won’t have any trouble dealing with an ordinary Fourth Grade Great Saint. The thought of Jiang Chen having such a manoeuvre didn’t even cross my mind, but even if the earth devil beast can stop the elder of the Desolate Family, there are still two more Third Grade Great Saints, from the Huo and Narang Family respectively.”

Kong Yang breathed a sigh of relief. The emergence of the earth devil beast shocked him very much, but at the same time he became concerned. Even though the earth devil beast was strong enough to deal with the Fourth Grade Great Saint, there were still elders from the Huo and Narang Family, who is capable of handling them?.

Of course, this was because Kong Yang didn’t understand Jiang Chen’s method well enough. Jiang Chen wasn’t just a Ninth Grade Minor Saint, he was only a step away from the Great Saint realm.

There was no question that he could kill a Third Grade Great Saint if he transformed into a half-dragon. Besides, he still had a devil that hadn't been released yet.

“I know Jiang Chen. He would never do anything without certainty. That explains why he is so calm. It turns out that he still has a hidden trump card.” Kong Yu nodded.

He had come in contact with Jiang Chen back in Void Triangular Domain. Everything that Jiang Chen did in the domain was dominating, and seeing the confident face of Jiang Chen now, Kong Yu had reasons to believe that Jiang Chen had ways to deal with the other two Great Saints, or he might be already powerful enough to handle them by himself.

Big Yellow had a relaxed look on his face. He wagged his tail casually, totally disdaining the three Great Saints. Others might not know what Jiang Chen was planning but Big Yellow knew it very well. He knew very well how strong Jiang Chen was and how many trump cards he had.

“Jiang Chen, I didn't imagine that you are associated with the devils. I can tell that you are also a devil just like them!” The elder of Desolate Family denounced Jiang Chen loudly.

“It's none of your business who I associate with. Earth devil beast, kill him.”

Jiang Chen treated the elder's critic as fart, and immediately ordered the earth devil beast to attack.

“Yes, Master!”

The earth devil beast responded with a loud roar. It lunged towards the elder with incredible devil Qi.

“Let me handle this earth devil beast. You two go and get rid of the other brats. We must kill Jiang Chen today. This brat has become a serious threat and if we did not kill him as soon as possible, he will become disastrous.”

The elder of Desolate Family cried out the orders at the elders of Huo and Narang Family. In fact, the relationship between the three families was not very good, but their attitude was surprisingly consistent with regards to Jiang Chen. They all had the same objective of getting rid of Jiang Chen.

“Okay.”

The elders of Huo and Narang Family responded immediately. Then, they struck at Jiang Chen at the same time.

“Brother Jiang, what do we do now?”

Kong Yang looked at Jiang Chen, these two Great Saints would have no problem finishing them all.

“I want you all to stand back. I’ll take care of them,” said Jiang

Chen in a faint tone.

“This is...” Kong Yang frowned.

“This is what? Master Dog can also kill one of them, but Master Dog won’t act at all. These two old men are dead for sure,” said Big Yellow.

He swaggered towards one direction, leaving the battlefield to Jiang Chen.

Seeing this situation, Kong Yang and the other two quickly followed Big Yellow without hesitation.

“Jiang Chen, die now!”

The elder of the Huo Family, with boundless flame on his body, struck out his palm towards Jiang Chen.

Jiang Chen also sent a palm strike without speaking, but this was no ordinary palm strike—it was the Water Dragon Seal. A water dragon appeared and the temperature of the entire void suddenly dropped by a large margin. When the water dragon collided with the elder’s attack, the flame of the elder was instantly extinguished.

“What? What kind of water is this?” The elder exclaimed.

He was a mighty Third Grade Great Saint who cultivated the supreme cultivation law of the Huo Family. It consisted of strong fire element and was very effective to water, instantly turning the water to vapour. If he used his full power, he could even vaporized the ocean.

But then, the water dragon that Jiang Chen struck pulverised his attack completely. This was simply appalling.

He couldn't have known that Jiang Chen's Water Dragon Seal was not an ordinary water—it's the Heavenly Earth Pure Water. It was the coldest and heaviest water in the Heaven and Earth. A single drop of the water could penetrate through a mountain and was the natural enemy of all sources of fire. Only flames with supreme Yang energy can resist it and coincidentally, Jiang Chen had such flames.

“Huo Family's fire is just too weak. You are just going to be suppressed by me, and you won't be able to exert all of your combat strength.”

Jiang Chen pointed his hand at the elder of the Huo Family, and said with rudeness.

“In that case I will get rid of you.”

The elder of Narang Family lunged. An illusory mountain was condensed, smashing down at Jiang Chen from above.

“I don’t want to kill you, but even so, you also can’t live either.”

Jiang Chen revealed a trace of sneer at the corner of his mouth, totally disdaining the attack of the elder. He yelled, “Devil, come out now and have some warm up!”

Roar

As soon as his voice dropped, a gust of devil Qi soared up to the sky. A huge devil leaped into the void and destroyed the illusory mountain with a punch. The devil had the same frustration as the earth devil beast while in the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda. Its current cultivation has already reached the peak of Third Grade Great Saint. It was no doubt that this devil had been longing for the chance to kill.

The devil’s physique was extremely strong, including its flesh. Its combat strength was incredible. Adding its cultivation advantage, the elder of the Narang Family was clearly no match for it.

“Oh my god, what kind of monster is that? Its devil Qi is very powerful.”

“It’s a devil. The movement of the Devil Race is always under the constant watch of the Great Lightning Tune Temple. They had never thought that Jiang Chen also has a devil besides the earth devil beast. This is really terrifying.”

“What a powerful devil! Judging by the its Qi and cultivation, it

is much stronger than the elder of the Narang Family.”

No one wasn't surprised. Everyone was shocked and couldn't believe their own eyes. The earth devil beast was already scary enough even before the emergence of the devil. Jiang Chen's trump cards weren't only unusual, but also unpredictable.

Kong Yang and the other two were petrified. Now, they finally understood why Jiang Chen was so composed all along, but there was still a question bothering them in their heads: How did Jiang Chen subdue an earth devil beast and a devil by himself? Devils were defiant in nature and couldn't easily be controlled. As for the earth devil beast, it was virtually impossible to control it according to their knowledge and experience. It was the king of devils and possessed a strong bloodline. One could defeat an earth devil beast with great power but one could never control it.

But then again, Jiang Chen was able to do it. Regardless of what ways Jiang Chen used, they were utterly impressed.

“Jiang Chen, I can't believe that you have devils as your comrades. Are you trying to become the public enemy of the human race?”

“Jiang Chen, it seems that you are also a devil. Even though you are a human, your essence is no different than a devil. Anyone has the right to punish someone like you.”

The elders of the Narang and Huo Family seemed to be filled with hatred and resentment. However, they were just afraid.

“Haha! Stop bone-picking the sins that you think I have done. I, Jiang Chen, don’t need your judgement. You both have offended me and that will make me your devil, your eternal nightmare. Cut the crap and die!”

Jiang Chen’s black hair danced in the breeze. His Qi soared up to the sky and the Heavenly Saint Sword rippled out. The thick murderous intent from the sword permeated into the air. He would never be merciful towards his enemies, anyone who went against him would only face one ending – death.

Roar...

When Jiang Chen’s voice dropped, the devil released a gust of devil wave that rushed towards the elder of the Narang Family, and at the same time, Jiang Chen appeared before the elder of the Huo Family with his Heavenly Saint Sword in a blink. This time, Jiang Chen did not use the Heavenly Earth Pure Water. He had coated his sword with a layer of flames.

To the cultivators of the Huo Family, either it was the Heavenly Earth Pure Water or the True Thunderfire, both are able to completely suppress them. True Thunderfire and the True Dragon Fire were the king of flames. When the fire of the Huo Family elder encountered these two flames, his flames would definitely give in.

The elder of the Huo Family took out a long spear which was also coated with a scorching red fire that could incinerate everything but unfortunately, it trembled intensely when it touched the

flames of the Heavenly Saint Sword. That was fear, fear towards its king!

Clang

The long spear and the long sword collided, creating a sea of fire in the void, burning all the Heaven and Earth Yuan Force in the air instantly. Under such a fierce collision, the elder of Huo Family was unable to resist the powerful strike from Jiang Chen and was sent flying a hundred meters away.

Chapter 927 - Run Away

“This little beast is just a Ninth Grade Minor Saint, how can he have such powerful combat strength that I’m no match for him?” The elder of the Huo Family was shocked.

Even if Jiang Chen could suppress him with the use of his flames, they still have a huge gap between the two of them. Besides, advancing from the Minor Saint realm to Great Saint realm alone was already a large gap, let alone three grades of difference.

The elder had lived for so long but had never seen such a horrifying Ninth Grade Minor Saint. This was absolutely beyond his imagination and understanding.

“Brother Jiang is truly scary.”

Kong Yang couldn’t help but sigh. Knowing the gap between him and Jiang Chen, he was rendered speechless. One should know that Jiang Chen’s opponent was a mighty Third Grade Great Saint with a Great Saint Weapon.

Of course, there was no doubt that the weapon that the elder of the Huo Family was holding was a Great Saint Weapon, but Kong Yang didn’t know that despite the fact that the Heavenly Saint Sword was still below the Great Saint rank, its power was incomparable to the power of a common Great Saint Weapon.

On the other side, the earth devil beast exploded into its ferocious form. Its body alone was already as large as a small hill. Four of its

eyes flickered like ghosts. Its attack was gaining control in almost every round of battle.

The elder of the Desolate Family was grumbling due to the dominating strength of the earth devil beast. Although it was merely a Third Grade Great Saint, it had no problems fighting an opponent that was a grade higher. As such, it was impossible for the elder to gain the upper hand in battle.

In another battlefield, the devil was even more ferocious and domineering. The elder of the Narang Family was beaten so badly that he spurted blood repeatedly. He could tell that they weren't of equal level.

Jiang Chen too was powerful. His whole body was filled with Qi waves like the waves in the vast ocean. After three consecutive sword slashes, the elder of the Huo Family spurted out blood. The mighty power shook the spear in his hand that it almost slipped away from his hand.

Clang

Another slash of the sword was sent, not giving his opponent the chance to react. This time, the elder let out a wail. He lost his grip on his combat weapon and it was thrown from his hand. Jiang Chen stuck out his hand and caught it, he then kept it in his pouch.

“Hahahaha...”

Jiang Chen laughed wildly. His Qi was vigorous. Without waiting for the elder to react, he made another swipe with his sword.

Chi La

It was impossible to withstand the fierce strike of Jiang Chen's sword, even if he hadn't lost his ability to defend. An arm was cut off by the Heavenly Saint Sword. Blood rushed out of the wound and painted the void red.

The elder was no doubt terrified. He now understood that his level was absolutely incomparable to Jiang Chen's. He hadn't even gained the slightest bit of advantage in the whole fight, he was completely suppressed by Jiang Chen's True Thunderfire. Presently, one his arm had already been cut off and his combat strength was depleted. He would only lose his life if he continued to fight.

Swoosh

The elder of the Huo Family didn't dare to have the slightest bit of neglect, and immediately decided to escape, unfortunately, Jiang Chen wouldn't give him such chance. If he made this decision before the fight, he might be able to leave this place without Jiang Chen's obstruction, but it was already too late now. In addition, if Jiang Chen let him slip away given his present state, he would only be ridiculed by the people.

"It's too late to run now."

Jiang Chen immediately struck with the True Dragon Palm. A giant dragon claw that looked like an indestructible cage pressed down from the sky, shrouding the elder in it. Then, the elder was killed by Jiang Chen with a shrill scream.

“What a shame.”

Jiang Chen shook his head. This was a powerful Third Grade Great Saint. The Ancestral Dragon Pagoda would gain tremendous benefits after absorbing him, but after the dreadful experience last time, he dared not try again. That kind of frenzied rage was no joke.

“What?”

Jiang Chen’s speed in killing the elder shocked the other two Great Saints. Their initial thought was that killing Jiang Chen would be just a piece of cake, how could they ever imagine that it would end up like this?

The death of the elder from the Huo Family made them feel bad, especially the elder of the Narang Family who had been wounded by the devil. His breathing started to get rough.

Roar...

The devil let out roars as its attacks bombarded the elder.

“Argh... Argh...”

The elder of the Narang Family began to scream in pain. His combat strength was constantly depleting, where could he find the strength to defend against this devil? It seemed like he was going to fall in this place today.

“Blood Sacrifice.”

The elder of the Narang Family made a sudden roar. Bloody holes started to appear on his body. Blood pillars shot out from those bloody holes one after another. It was an extremely cruel and taboo spell as it inflicted damage on oneself to gain more power.

Now that his life was at stake, he had no choice but to cast the Blood Sacrifice. But then again, it was already too late for him to use this spell with his current state. He wouldn't get enough strength even if the Blood Sacrifice was used. Logically, this spell wasn't really used to defend oneself but to gain the ability to escape. So, all of his blood was sacrificed to boost his speed.

A blood-red circle of light appeared outside of his body. With extreme speed he vanished with a swoosh, fleeing directly into the deeper region of the spatial zone.

“You only now know how to run, but it's all too late.” Jiang Chen sneered.

How could he possibly let the elder escape? Even if his opponent had entered into the void with maximum speed, Jiang Chen could still capture him back. His terrifying Great Soul Derivation

Technique penetrated into the interior of the void.

Once again Jiang struck out his True Dragon Palm and torn open the void. The elder who had already escaped was caught by the palm as if it was carrying a chicken.

The scene dumbfounded everyone. One should know that the elder was a Third Grade Great Saint, a supreme being in their eyes, a dream which they had been striving to achieve in their lifetime. That kind of level was already akin to a divinity in their eyes. Yet, this godlike figure didn't even have the ability to escape.

“Don't kill me Jiang Chen, let me go.”

The elder of the Narang Family was scared to death and quickly begged for mercy. No one wanted to die. No one could remain calm in the face of death, even Great Saints were not an exception. The stronger the person, the more he would be afraid of death.

“Did you get kicked in the head? You want me to let you go? If I fell into your hands, would you be merciful enough to let me go? I'm afraid the answer is no, so stop your nonsense.”

Jiang Chen wasn't a bit swayed by his pleading. He killed the elder straightaway in an instant. Presently, two Third Grade Great Saints had already died in Jiang Chen's hands. Such loss was certainly not insignificant to the two large families.

“Jiang Chen brat! You have completely enraged the five large

families. The next one to die would certainly be you!”

The elder of the Desolate Family bellowed a cruel remark, then he disappeared into a stream of light. The situation was already very obvious. It would only be a dream to kill Jiang Chen in the presence of the earth devil beast. Plus, the earth devil beast was so powerful that his life would certainly be endangered if the battle continued.

Roar...

The opponent fled, leaving the earth devil beast roaring in rage.

“Alright, beast. he’s leaving and we can’t stop him,” said Jiang Chen.

The elder was a mighty Fourth Grade Great Saint after all. Even if the earth devil beast could overwhelm him in battle, it couldn’t stop him from fleeing. It wasn’t simple to kill a Fourth Grade Great Saint, unless the elder continued to fight until the very end, and the moment he suffered a severe injury it would hamper his ability to flee.

Therefore, not even Jiang Chen could stop the elder if he was determined to leave.

Although the earth devil beast felt unsatisfied because of this, it couldn’t do anything other than letting the elder escape. Then, Jiang Chen ordered it back to the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda.

The battlefield was a tragedy. The entire spatial zone was almost fully destroyed. The ferocity and scenes of the battle were still lingering in the spectators minds. It made them understand one thing: Great Saints could also be killed.

Jiang Chen came to Kong Yang and the other two who had just regained their senses from shock. The three of them gasped for a deep breath. The way they looked at Jiang Chen had entirely changed now.

If Jiang Chen only relied on the strength of the earth devil beast and the devil to kill the two Great Saints, perhaps they would be impressed by Jiang Chen's ability to subdue these two devils and wouldn't be as shocked. However, it was truly appalling to see a Ninth Grade Minor Saint killing Third Grade Great Saints so easily. Kong Yang knew that he had underestimated Jiang Chen again.

“Brother Jiang, you are truly a talent that only appears once in ten thousand years. Although you and I only met for the first time, I, Kong Yang, certainly admire you.”

Kong Yang saluted Jiang Chen with cupped fists. All of his words came from the bottom of his heart. As the third genius on the Sky Ranking and bearing the title of the top genius of the Demon Race with the mighty bloodline of the Peacock Race, he always held his nose up and had never admired anyone, not even the two geniuses, Shi Han and Desolate Yuan, who were above his ranking because he believed that he would surpass them one day.

Today, his admiration for Jiang Chen had grown so much.

“Brother Kong is being overly polite. Anyway, we can’t stay here any longer. We must leave now because that old man managed to escape, he would definitely bring stronger experts and masters here. Let’s not say Fifth Grade Great Saint experts, we will be doomed if a few more Fourth Grade Great Saints came here.” Jiang Chen said grimly.

He knew that beside the mighty Sixth Grade Great Saints of the eight large families, almost all of the experts had come to the ancient battlefield, including Fifth Grade Great Saints.

Chapter 928 - The Blazing Heart

“Alright.” Kong Yang nodded.

What Jiang Chen said was no doubt reasonable. The opening of the ancient battlefield this time was special, receiving great attention from the eight large families. So, not only did the younger generation come to this place, but also the senior experts—Fifth Grade Great Saints being the most powerful among them. Although the earth devil beast was strong, if it encountered a Fifth Grade Great Saint, it would be dead without a doubt because there was almost no chance of winning.

Therefore, the urgent task right now was to leave this place as soon as possible.

Not long after Jiang Chen and the rest left, some powerful experts appeared. There were two of them. One was the elder of the Desolate Family who fled moments ago. Besides him was another elder from their family but his cultivation was a Fifth Grade Great Saint. They swept around the entire spatial zone but found no signs of Jiang Chen and the others.

“It looks like they are gone,” said the Fourth Grade Great Saint fiercely.

“Humph! Never mind. The spatial zones are still disappearing and the remaining spatial zones will only get lesser. It would be a very simple thing to find Jiang Chen. This time, we absolutely can’t let him walk out of the ancient battlefield alive.”

The Fifth Grade Great Saint let out a humph. “Too bad, Desolate Yuan has made the ultimate sacrifice. We must avenge him. Jiang Chen made us lose such a bright genius.”

“That little beast should be gotten rid of as quickly as possible. He grows too quick. It was only a short period of time after he came back from Void Triangular Domain but he already has the ability to kill Third Grade Great Saints. If he continues to grow, sooner or later, he will become a major problem,” said the Fourth Grade Great Saint.

He couldn't help but clench his fists, producing a bone cracking sound when he thought of how terrifying Jiang Chen was. Jiang Chen was too powerful, he had never seen any genius that could reach such a heaven defying extent: killing Third Grade Great Saint while he was only a Ninth Grade Minor Saint. As such, wouldn't it be a disaster if he advanced to the Great Saint realm?

Not long after Jiang Chen and his friends left the spatial zone, they met the experts of the Demon Race. After handing over Kong Yang and the rest to them, he left with Big Yellow. He and Big Yellow were going to massacre the evil souls and monsters later, they separated from the group since that may expose the secret of the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda.

Over the next few days, the two of them had flown to different spatial zones, killing countless of evil souls and monsters and obtaining vast amount of energy. More than half of the first floor of the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda had been condensed. Jiang Chen's cultivation was reaching the very peak of the Ninth Grade Minor

Saint.

At the moment, Jiang Chen was only left with five hundred dragon marks before he could advance to the Great Saint realm, but because of these five hundred dragon marks, it made him incomparably distressed.

“God! Isn’t this Ancestral Dragon Pagoda overly abnormal? This much energy is still not enough to complete the condensation of the first floor?” Big Yellow felt depressed.

“The problem now isn’t the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda but myself.” Jiang Chen thought of the key factor to the problem.

“You are the problem?” Big Yellow was confused.

“It’s true that the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda should have absorbed enough energy to condense the first floor, but the result shows otherwise. The key factor is that I haven’t reached the Great Saint realm yet. I am the reincarnation of the Greatest Saint and there is basically no bottlenecks in my cultivation, but the Great Saint realm is a new threshold after all. I hadn’t thought that the rate of condensation has become so difficult while approaching the Great Saint realm.”

Jiang Chen felt a little helpless as the condensation of dragon marks were becoming harder. He knew that this was due to the restriction of the threshold to the Great Saint realm. As such, the final five hundred dragon marks would be undeniably difficult to condense.

“I don’t think that aiming for those evil souls and monsters is still going to work anymore. In order to advance to the Great Saint realm, I may have to find my luck. Once I break through into the Great Saint realm, not only will the condensation of the first floor of the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda be completed, but also a portion of the second floor will be condensed out. Now, let’s go to the deepest region of this ancient battlefield,” said Jiang Chen.

He was still full of interest in the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda. He had no idea what was the true function of the pagoda besides helping him condense dragon marks, and also keep things just like a spatial ring or a bag of holding. Of course, the pagoda still had a great defensive power after witnessing the collision of the pagoda and Big Yellow.

“Now the spatial zones are getting lesser and lesser. I believe that a lot of experts have already gone to the deepest area. I’m afraid it will be very dangerous if we head over there now.” Big Yellow said.

“The risk of getting fortune is beyond the control of the present. I will face more danger if I can’t advance to the Great Saint realm as soon as possible.”

Jiang Chen’s Qi shook as he flew towards the deepest zone at his top speed, like a sailfish.

It been days since the opening of the ancient battlefield. Many treasures had already been excavated out. It’s safe to say that the eight large families had generally gained a lot from this trip, but at

the same time, lost a lot of talents due to the hidden threats and dangers in the spatial zones. Presently, many spatial zones had already crumbled and the remaining ones were reducing in number. Thus, experts were moving to the deepest zone trying to seek for greater treasures.

At the present moment, in a spatial zone in the deepest region of the ancient battlefield, many people gathered. There were at least a thousand of them here. There were also some rogue cultivators besides the eight large families.

Everyone was drifting in the air, looking unblinkingly at the magma in front of them.

Yes, it was a magma floating in mid-air. At the centre of the spatial zone was a wide stretch of magma that covered roughly tens of miles in radius. It looked like an ocean of magma.

It was thick and blood-red in colour. An intense wave of heat was emanating from it, causing the temperature in this spatial zone to rise tremendously. Some Minor Saint experts felt somewhat uncomfortable while being in such a high temperature atmosphere.

Minor Saints—either it was their physique or their Yuan Force, both had reached an incredible extent. Any ordinary flame wouldn't have any effect on them, but the heat produced from this magma made them feel a little uncomfortable. It only showed how terrifying this ocean of magma is.

It was imaginable that if a Minor Saint slipped into this ocean of magma, he or she would instantly be incinerated into nothingness, not leaving any remains behind.

“Where did this magma come from? It is very weird that it floats in the air.”

“Exactly. And its temperature is too high compared to normal.”

“It is frightening. I guess that there must be a strong being inside the magma. Otherwise it won’t be floating. Look, the Great Saint experts from the eight large families are analysing this ocean of magma. They should be able to find the source of this magma.”

.....

No one was at peace. The number of cultivators continued to increase and these newcomers also fixed their eyes on the ocean of magma the moment they appeared. Magma could only be formed under harsh condition, but the magma they were seeing right now is floating in the air. There was no doubt that this was the first time that they saw a floating magma.

“There seems to be a layer of invisible barrier outside this ocean of magma preventing our divine sense from entering it. However, I can also sense a strong presence inside, perhaps there are great treasures within the magma,” said an elder of the Huo Family. He was a strong Great Saint, a Fifth Grade Great Saint. Despite his divine sense being blocked, his sharp senses allowed him to sense the extraordinary qualities of the magma.

To the experts of the Huo Family, they were most interested in the treasures inside the magma because their bodies were of fire properties. If they could obtain any great treasure in the magma, the entire Huo Family would profit tremendously.

“There must be a certain truth for this magma to appear out of nowhere. There would certainly be a great amount of luck and treasures especially in a strange place like this. This magma has to be something very special,” said the elder of the Gu Family.

Roar...

Just then, a roar came out of the magma, and then, a blood-red dragon a few dozen meters long spiralled upwards from the ocean of magma. This dragon was fully condensed out of magma. It was a true magma dragon.

After the magma dragon appeared, its flaming eyes swept across the surroundings. Both of its eyes gave off an incomparably burning light. Everyone could sense the hostility coming from this magma dragon. Anyone could tell that this was a heartless creature just from its eye.

“Amazing. The Qi of this magma dragon is equivalent to a Third Grade Great Saint.” An elder of the Narang Family cried in surprise.

“It is the ‘heart of blaze’ from which this dragon evolved. My god, there is actually a heart of blaze in this spatial zone.”

An expert exclaimed when he realized the characteristic of the magma dragon.

“What? The heart of blaze? The heart of blaze that only exists in legends? It is also considered as the heart of heaven and earth. I can’t believe it actually exists.”

“The heart of blaze is also known as the Burning Flame. If anyone is able to integrate it into their heart, one would be able to disdain all the beings under the heavens. If the Huo Family can obtain this, we will be able to produce a rare genius that can break through to the Immortal realm.”

“It’s too precious. This is what they called a real treasure. We have to get it because it will bring us immeasurable benefits. One heart of blaze is enough to change the future of our family.”

Chapter 929 - The Mantis stalks the Cicada, but behind them lurks the Oriole

Roar...

The magma dragon roared once more. Then, it gave a sarcastic sneer to everyone around. Yes, that was a taunt, a challenge, a direct challenge. The expression of the magma dragon showed that it didn't put humans in its eyes.

The dragon seemed to have intelligence due to the heart of blaze. Although it was sneering at them, it still noticed that there were some who it couldn't afford to offend. Therefore, instead of attacking the experts, it went back into the ocean of magma to stay hidden.

Hong Long Long...

The magma rolled and layers of flare rippled outwards.

Coincidentally, one man and one dog emerged as the scene disrupted the others attention. They then quickly retreated far away so as to not alert anyone.

“This is precious, truly a precious treasure. Did you see that? My luck has come. As long as I can get the heart of blaze, I will be able to advance to the Great Saint realm. If that happened, the condensation of the first floor and second floor of the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda will be complete. The third floor may even be

condensed out.”

Jiang Chen’s eyes glowed with scorching light. No one knew better than him about the preciousness of the heart of blaze. He was now at the very peak of the Ninth Grade Minor Saint, a stage which was very difficult to pass. The last five hundred dragon marks were no longer a matter of energy, it was about luck, to spark up the potential from his origin and stimulate his advancement to the Great Saint realm.

Luck was undoubtedly very difficult to obtain. The heart of blaze was a great luck because it would certainly be enough to let Jiang Chen advance to the next realm. Given his ability, his combat strength would surely increase exponentially after the advancement. At that time, it would be easy for him to kill a Fourth Grade Great Saint and even a Fifth Grade Great Saint if he was in the half-dragon form.

“You are right. The heart of blaze is really a rare treasure, but it is impossible to get it given the present scenario.”

Big Yellow pursed his lips. Aside from the other Great Saints, sixteen Fifth Grade Great Saints from the eight large families were present here. Now that the heart of blaze had emerged, which of the large family wouldn’t want to seize it? It was no different than a fool’s dream when Jiang Chen wanted to snatch this treasure under the various experts eyes.

“What do you know? As the saying goes, when the mantis stalks the cicada, behind them lurks the oriole. Let me tell you this, that magma dragon was condensed by the heart of blaze, or the heart of

blaze is inside the dragon's body. This dragon has intelligence and its cultivation has already reached the Third Grade Great Saint. It isn't easy to deal with the life of heaven and earth. The true strength of the magma dragon is equivalent to a Fifth Grade Great Saint human expert. With its ability, it would be very difficult for an ordinary Fifth Grade Great Saint expert to match it. If, without the help of the eight large families, depending on your strength and mine alone would only get us swallowed by the magma dragon and we'll get nothing in the end."

The corner of Jiang Chen's mouth curled to one side and his eyes shone with wisdom.

"Hehe... I know. You want to exploit the effort of the eight large families to deal with the magma dragon and be the one to profit in the end, like the fisherman who captures the snipe and clam." Big Yellow gave a shady smile.

The tacit understanding between the two of them were exceptionally good. He could understand what Jiang Chen meant by just looking at his eyes.

"Yes, the heart of blaze is indeed very precious. This group of people will never put their hands away from this thing. But, the effort of one family won't be enough to take the heart of blaze. Thus, all of them would have to combine their efforts to grab ahold of this heart of blaze and then decide how to allocate it. As for us, we'll just wait for the right opportunity."

Jiang Chen squinted his eyes. His eyesight was powerful enough to see through the outcome of the situation.

Presently, there was a tense atmosphere among the experts of the eight large families. They were all thinking about how to get the heart of blaze in their hands. The relationship between the eight large families had always been bad. They were always fighting for their own, not allying with anyone until the Gu Family and the Demon Race took advantage of the situation.

Because of Jiang Chen, the Gu Family and the Demon Race had formed an alliance. At least they weren't enemies now and could stand together during at critical moments.

“Ladies and gentlemen, the heart of blaze plays a vital role in the Huo Family. I hope you all will show us the courtesy today by letting us get it. We will give you the appropriate treasures someday.” The Fifth Grade Great Saint of the Huo Family said.

“This must be a joke. What kind of face do you, Huo Family, have? The heart of blaze is equally important to our Gu Family as well, and this treasure isn't only discovered by your family.” The Fifth Grade Great Saint from the Gu Family said with a sneer.

It would be a great joke to pull their hands away from the treasure because this wasn't the style of the Gu Family.

“That's right, this treasure was found by everybody. There is no reason for the Huo Family to solely possess it.” The elder of the Bin Family said.

This family had been standing in the neutral position even with

regards to Jiang Chen. Furthermore, this situation didn't involve Jiang Chen. They naturally wouldn't give in because the heart of blaze was a significant matter for the eight large families.

“Fine. Stop the argument, everyone. I don't think that the Huo Family has such capability of subduing the dragon by themselves. I believe you all aren't fools. You should have seen how terrifying the power of this dragon. Do you think that the two Fifth Grade Great Saints of the Huo Family alone can take down the dragon and obtain the heart of blaze?” An elder of the Dan Family said.

His sentence had put many people in deep thoughts, including the elder of the Huo Family. The elder of the Dan Family was right. The heart of blaze was no doubt a good treasure, but it wasn't that easy to obtain. After all, the highest grade among them was just a Fifth Grade Great Saint. Not a single family would be able to obtain the heart of blaze easily. If the Huo Family acted alone, not only could they not get the heart of blaze, many of them might be severely injured or die.

“Dan Family is right. I suggest that we attack together to take down this dragon first, we will decide about the distribution later. What do you all think?” An elder from the Shi Family said.

“How will you distribute it?” A man from the Narang Family asked.

This was the most important question to everyone. A world-shattering war would certainly begin if the distribution wasn't properly done.

“Isn’t it obvious? Just divide the heart of blaze into eight portions. One family will get one portion.” An expert of from the Demon Race yelled.

“Agreed.” An expert from the Desolate Family responded after a moment of consideration.

The experts of the other families nodded as well. Although the experts of Huo Family felt reluctant about the development of the matter, they couldn’t do anything about it. The effect of the heart of blaze would severely be affected once it was split into eight portions, but this was without a doubt the most equitable distribution. Otherwise, the experts from the other families would certainly start a war and that would lead to unimaginable consequences.

Ultimately, the experts of the eight large families reached a compromise. All of the Fifth Grade Great Saints and Fourth Grade Great Saints released their Qi, ready to strike the ocean of magma.

“Look, they are ready to go.” From far away, Big Yellow was chuckling.

“The show has begun.”

Jiang Chen had a look of delight on his face. The eight large families reacted according to his expectation. This was the only way that they could deal with the dragon.

“Let me try the power of this magma dragon.”

One Fifth Grade Great Saint elder of the Huo Family stood out. He made a step forward while rotating his Qi. The flames in his palm expanded into a burning light beam. This was a light beam that contained unknown amount of destructive force. It then charged towards the ocean of magma.

Hong Long

As the powerful strike reached the ocean of magma, a layer of bright flame barrier became visible on the outer surface of the magma, blocking the attack of the elder from entering it.

Roar...

A furious roar came out from the ocean of magma. The action had undoubtedly enraged the magma dragon. The dragon reappeared, spitting out huge fireballs made up of high temperature magma, rushing out in all directions with great speed.

“Argh...”

Screams resounded. Although the experts of the eight major families were able to defend themselves in time, the fireballs caused a certain number of casualties when they lashed the weaker juniors.

“Retreat everyone! Leave! only Fourth Grade and Fifth Grade Great Saints are to stay here.”

The elder of the Huo Family was in shock. The other experts combined their efforts to destroy the fireballs. Even so, they still lost some men which wasn't supposed to happen. This scenario made the experts from the eight major families to grind their teeth in frustration.

“What the heck? This T-Rex is quite scary. You are right and thanks to these experts, we don't need to risk our lives.” Big Yellow was shocked by the current scene.

“The life of Heaven and Earth is the most terrifying creature. I can see that the magma dragon was just condensed not long ago. If it continues to evolve, in less than three years, it will surpass all the experts in the Pure Land,” said Jiang Chen.

This was all due to the credit of the heart of blaze. Today was a luck which he couldn't miss. Not only was the heart of blaze a great treasure, but also the magma which contained massive amount of scorching energy. The magma alone could help the Huo Family produce many geniuses.

All the experts didn't dare to neglect the existence of the ocean of magma. They, especially the elder of the Huo Family, had finally witnessed the horrors of the magma dragon. They finally understood that working together was the wisest choice. If they only relied on their Huo Family alone, it would be impossible to get the job done, unless their Sixth Grade Great Saint was present.

Chapter 930 - Fierce Battle with the Evil Dragon

The fireball attack gave everyone the creeps and caused a panic among the crowd of cultivators. Many of the cultivators from the eight major families had retreated to a safe distance. Looking at the scattered bodies that had been hit by the fireballs, their heart skipped many beats. All of them had no doubt, underestimated the strength of the magma dragon.

As a matter of fact, when they heard that the magma dragon was merely a Third Grade Great Saint, they became relaxed. After all, there were numerous experts from the eight major families in this spatial zone. Putting aside the few dozens of Fourth Grade Great Saints, there were sixteen Fifth Grade Great Saints here. With these many elders, they were sure that the creature could not cause any disaster.

“People, let us first break the defence barrier of the magma. Only by breaking the barrier could we subdue the magma dragon and obtain the heart of blaze,” said an expert of the Desolate Family.

“Exactly, the defensive strength of the barrier is not ordinary. Individual effort will not be enough to crush the barrier. As long as we can break past the barrier, the magma dragon won’t be able to hold us off despite its extraordinary strength.”

An elder of Huo Family who made the strike out of impatience and anger just now understood the terrifying power of the magma dragon.

“Cut the crap. Let’s do it.”

The Qi of a Great Saint from the Demon Race fluctuated and soared up to the sky. A Heavenly Leopard came to life. This Great Saint was a great expert from the Heavenly Leopard Race. He had an extremely high position and status, he had tens of thousands of underlings in the Demon Race. The giant Heavenly Leopard roared as he lunged at the magma.

At the same time, the other experts struck without waiting any longer. Some struck out frenzied combat skills, some condensed giant things or objects in the void above, some released swords made out of fire, some struck out the wheel of darkness and some launched themselves with their Great Saint Weapon. Sixteen Fifth Grade Great Saints and roughly ten Fourth Grade Great Saints attacked together. At this instant, the entire spatial zone was about to blow up. There was Qi of destruction and excess energy waves were everywhere. These gave those who were far away palpitations.

Energy waves with gorgeous colors was flying all over the sky. Everything was basked by nine colors of light which made the scene look extremely beautiful, but behind the beautiful scene was destruction.

Innumerable people could feel a sense of pressure from the battlefield. Not just the Minor Saints, even half of the Great Saints felt suffocated.

“This is terrifying. I’m afraid that I can only witness such a scene today in my lifetime.”

“The Great Saint experts attacked altogether. This scene can only be described as heart-shaking. See, the void is changing color, we better stay away from it as far as possible to prevent any unintended casualties.”

“You’re right. We can’t take part in such a fight and being close to the battlefield will only put our lives in danger.”

.....

The scene gave everyone the creeps. It was too horrific and many of them had never seen it in their lives. It was the first time that the eight major families united truthfully, of course, it was all about the profit and personal interest.

Hong Long

All the incoming attacks outside the magma could virtually pulverize all the magma, but the shocking layer of the defensive barrier was extraordinarily powerful. Despite the joint attacks of so many experts, the defensive barrier only shook, only a few cracks appeared on it instead of breaking.

“Its defensive strength is really incredible!”

“Continue to attack everyone! The cracks on the surface of the

shield indicates that it is breakable.” A Great Saint shouted.

This time, a lot of people were shocked by the fact that their massive joint attack couldn't even break past the barrier. It made their previous thought of handling the magma dragon alone a serious joke. This barrier alone could make an expert run out of energy.

Hong Long

Once again, dozens of Great Saints launched their fierce attacks. The defensive barrier now trembled more intensely. Besides that, more cracks which made countless of experts happy appeared on the surface. If such a scenario continued, it would take at most two more round of attacks to bring the barrier down.

Roar...

However, at this time, the magma dragon raged. Its huge body flew out of the ocean of magma again. Its body shook, sending out countless of fireballs once more, but this time, the experts were prepared. They didn't let the fireballs hit the people behind them, otherwise it would be another disaster.

The magma dragon was incomparably angry. Its eyes turned colder. It opened its huge mouth and went straight to those experts carrying the ocean of magma.

“Be careful everybody! Stick together and attack!” An expert

from the Desolate Family yelled.

All the other experts didn't dare neglect the warning because they knew that this vile dragon wouldn't be easy to deal with. Immediately, they launched their attacks, but the magma dragon was violent and ferocious. It used the shield to block their joint attack and swallowed a Fourth Grade Great Saint with its huge mouth.

“Argh...”

The Fourth Grade Great Saint uttered a miserable cry before he was completely swallowed. He was swallowed by the magma dragon, not a piece of him was left behind.

Hiss

The ruthless scene made countless of them suck in a breath of cold air. It was too horrifying, a mighty Fourth Grade Great Saint was instantly swallowed just like that. It was no doubt a ghastly scene. None of them have ever thought that such a scene would happen if they didn't see it with their own eyes.

“Damn it! This evil dragon is way too scary. It's fortunate that we didn't attack.”

Big Yellow couldn't help but shiver. The joint attacks of so many experts must be earth-shattering and destructive, but not only did such attack not harm the dragon, but it made them lose a Fourth

Grade Great Saint instead.

“The dragon is relying on the power of the magma. If it loses the magma, even with the heart of blaze, it won’t be able exert so much of its power. However a life that was conceived by the heaven and earth like this dragon could never be underestimated. If we attacked earlier, we would end up just like that Fourth Grade Great Saint,” said Jiang Chen with a smile.

“That’s amazing.”

Big Yellow couldn’t help but praise.

“Anyhow, the magmatic dragon is bound to die today. Its defense can sustain either one or two more joint attacks from the Great Saints. Once its defensive barrier is broken, the magma dragon will certainly fall into a critical situation. With so many combined attacks, it is only a matter of time before it is killed.” Jiang Chen said.

On the fiery battlefield, the experts had already lost a Fourth Grade Great Saint which sent deep fright to all of the other Fourth Grade Great Saints. They dreaded that they would be the next one to be eaten by the dragon.

“Listen. All Fourth Grade Great Saints, stand behind us.” An expert from the Gu Family barked. The dragon was way too scary and they wanted no more unintended casualties.

Hua La

All the other Fourth Grade Great Saints quickly retreated to the back, ready to launch another attack from behind. Sixteen Fifth Grade Great Saints had tightly encircled the magma, they wouldn't give the dragon a chance to hurt their people again.

“Now! The defensive shield is about to fall apart.” An expert from the Huo Family shouted.

All of the Fifth Grade Great Saints launched another strike. Powerful combat skills and Great Saint Weapons spilled out boundless of energy waves as it hit hard on the defensive barrier.

Roar...

The moment the defensive barrier is broken, the magma dragon roared. It was fully enraged. Its huge body that was carrying the ocean of magma went frenzied in the void. Infinite energy and fireballs occupied the air.

“Again!”

All of the Fifth Grade Great Saints were exhilarated. The magma dragon's defense was broken, they didn't believe the dragon could withstand another wave of attack.

The sky was shaking, rolling energy was everywhere. Nine-colored light drowned everything in the spatial zone. All of the

Fifth Grade Great Saints attacked continuously. At this critical juncture, they saw the hope of victory.

Roar...

The magma dragon finally let out a wail. Even with the support of the magma, it still couldn't bear the continuous attacks of so many experts. Everyone could see that its body grew a fold longer as it sucked the magma into its body. At this time, the ocean of magma disappeared and the void was only left with a tyrannical dragon.

The magmatic dragon's wails were continuous as it received the attacks. It was dragging its body, attempting to flee.

"The dragon is going to escape, lock this place down." Someone yelled.

How could they possibly let the magma dragon escape after the things they had done and lost? All of the Fifth Grade Great Saints seemed to have gone mad. Their eyes were red as they sealed the spatial zone off.

Currently, the magma dragon had become the turtle in a jar. It had fallen into a big cage. It roared furiously but it was useless.

"Hahaha..."

The elder of the Huo Family began to bray with laughter. The

sixteen Fifth Grade Great Saints attacked once again. They had noticed that the magma dragon could heal itself by using the magma. So, they had to take advantage of the situation to snatch away all the chances for the dragon to stay strong.

*Ao Wu!”

Finally, half of the magma dragon’s body was pulverized by their joint attack and the ocean of magma reappeared. The magmatic dragon drilled into the ocean of magma but it could no longer hide.

Hong Long

The earth-shattering attacks came again. The magma dragon was totally powerless to defend against the attacks. It kept wailing. It could feel that its body was becoming shorter every time it wailed.

“Now is the chance.”

From a far distance, Jiang Chen’s eyes sparkled. He had been focusing on the situation in the battlefield. Seeing that the magma dragon was about to fall, he was ready to launch at any second.

Chapter 931 - Seriously Bold

At the present moment, Jiang Chen was like a ghost hiding in the dark, ready to act at any time. The situation was almost ripe. The moment that he had been waiting for has finally come. He had reasons to believe that the magma dragon wouldn't be able to hold on for three more minutes under such bombarding attacks.

“Haha! The magma dragon is going down in no time!”

The Great Saint of the Huo Family laughed loudly. Seeing the magma dragon becoming smaller, each of their faces were filled with delight. Their attacks were overwhelming, the dragon just simply couldn't resist it.

“Keep going. Don't give it the chance to recover.”

An expert from the Desolate Family yelled. The other experts didn't dare neglect the order. They hastily launched another strike with all of their might. The magma dragon wouldn't die as long as the heart of blaze was within it. It wasn't easy for them to achieve this victory, so they couldn't allow the magma dragon to recover.

Hong Long

The raging attack landed and hit the dragon once more, causing it to give out an agonizing wail. It then roared and responded with its fireballs strike and magma pillars. However, it had already been severely injured. So its attacking power was only half of its original damage. To the eight major families, this wasn't a threat at all.

Although the magma dragon felt annoyed, there was nothing it could do about it. In such a scene, it had no chance of escaping, let alone the strength to defend. It could only depend on the remaining magma to stay resilient now.

The attacks from the experts did not stop. Every time the attacks landed on the magma dragon, its body would shrink by an inch. Two minutes later, the dragon let out another miserable wail. Its body was only three meters in size now.

The current cultivation of the magma dragon had dropped to the First Grade Great Saint. It no longer had the strength to fight the Fifth Grade Great Saints. At this time, there was a fist-sized red crystal in its neck that was visible from the outside. It was the heart of blaze.

“Look, the heart of blaze is in the dragon’s body.”

“Sure enough, it is the heart of blaze. Let’s blast the body of the dragon to shreds and the heart of blaze will automatically fall into our hands.”

“Haha! Amazing... At last, this is the heart of blaze that only exists in legends. Even if our family only get an eighth of it, it will still be a rare treasure that can be used to produce a great genius.”

.....

The magmatic dragon was already on the brink of collapse. Many

of them could clearly see the heart of blaze in its neck. Given the magma dragon's current situation, even with the protection of the magma, it could only, at most, endure for another round of attacks before it disintegrated. After that, the heart of blaze would fall into the eight major families' hands and even the magma would also be divided into eight portions.

However, they surely didn't know that there was a pair of eyes in the darkness fixing at the heart of blaze.

“My chance has come.”

Jiang Chen's eyes glowed with strange colors. The opportunity has finally knocked on his door.

“Be careful. This is no joke.”

Big Yellow reminded in a solemn tone. The experts of the eight major families had already spent so much time and effort in defeating this magma dragon, and they were about to get their desired result. If the heart of blaze was robbed away by Jiang Chen, they would certainly not be able to accept it. Adding the feud and conflicts that Jiang Chen had with the five major families, they would surely go berserk. It would be odd if they didn't blow up Jiang Chen to pieces.

“Humph! Profit from danger. As long as the experts of the Gu Family and the Demon Race help me to hold off them for a while, then I have already succeeded.”

Jiang Chen let out a cold humph. This was his only chance of advancing to the Great Saint realm, he couldn't miss it.

Swoosh

Jiang Chen's body disappeared in a flash with the spatial shift and moved in extreme speed. He passed through the experts and entered into the magma in just a few blinks.

Hong Long

Everyone could hear a loud noise erupting from the void, after that, the Fifth Grade Great Saints who made their last attack saw a blood-red dragon claw falling from the sky, grabbing the magma dragon.

Plop

A being that looked like dragon and human plopped into the molten lava and disappeared along with the dragon and the heart of blaze.

“What?”

Someone exclaimed.

“Who is it? Dare to rob our treasure?! You are courting death!”

Everyone was instantly enraged.

“It’s Jiang Chen. He is certainly Jiang Chen. This bastard has been hiding in the dark all along and snatched away the heart of blaze at the most critical moment.”

A Fourth Grade Great Saint elder who lost to Jiang Chen’s earth devil beast earlier shouted immediately. For an instant, Jiang Chen’s name created a commotion in the crowd. The faces of those Fifth Grade Great Saints changed dramatically and every one of them was gritting their teeth. They all hated Jiang Chen to the core of their bones. One of their most important tasks in coming here was to kill Jiang Chen.

Just now, Jiang Chen appeared on his own before they could take any action. The thing was that he did not only appear, he appeared and snatched away their fruits of labor. This was undeniably unacceptable to them.

“Kill him and peel him alive! He dares to take advantage of us.”

The Fifth Grade Great Saint of the Desolate Family raged.

“Elders, help me to stall them; I am in the midst of advancing to the Great Saint realm. When I succeed, I will repay you all with great rewards.”

At this time, Jiang Chen’s divine sense permeated out the magma and into the ears of all the elders of the Demon Race and the Gu

Family. Without delay, they immediately stood out to block those elders from the other six major families.

The relationship between the two major families and Jiang Chen had already been established earlier. Jiang Chen was able to enter the Suspended Tower and was closely related to Big Yellow. The Gu Family on the other hand had acknowledged Jiang Chen as their son-in-law and a member of their family, even the patriarch, Gu Xuantian had a brother-like relationship with him.

Since they were all one family, they were naturally obliged to help. In their point of view, giving the heart of blaze to Jiang Chen would be a lot better than dividing the heart of blaze into eight portions.

“Gu Family, Demon Race, what are you all doing?”

A Great Saint from the Huo Family bellowed.

“Don’t you think that it’s too much for so many elders to bully a junior?”

An elder from the Heavenly Leopard Race shouted.

“Too much? Does this old leopard have any idea what he is talking about? That little runt obviously used us to deal with the magma dragon and then rob the treasure away at the very last minute. We must kill him and the heart of blaze would be ours.”

“That’s right. That little runt clearly wanted the heart of blaze. Besides, we have great conflicts with that person. It’s nice that he revealed himself, it saved us the effort of finding him.”

“Cut your nonsense. You two families better get out of the way now or we won’t be polite.”

.....

The experts of the five major families were totally infuriated. They had given out their best to defeat the magma dragon. They would really cough out blood if the heart of blaze was gotten by Jiang Chen.

“Even if you want to be impolite, so what? Jiang Chen is our son-in-law now and also a member of our Gu Family. Whoever wants to kill him will need to get through us first.”

The elders of the Gu Family showed their dominance but they did not attack in order to buy Jiang Chen some time.

The most important thing for Jiang Chen now was time, which he wouldn’t waste while he was in the magma. The magma dragon didn’t resist much when it was crushed by Jiang Chen. Then, the heart of blaze was swallowed by him as he circulated his dragon transformation skill to its maximum and began to refine the heart of blaze quickly.

The dragon marks were quickly condensed. One hundred, two

hundred and three hundred were condensed in just a short moment. Now there were only two hundred left before he reached the Great Saint realm.

Hong Long

The sound of a roar in the magma was deafening. Then, a large amount of magma quickly disappeared. This incident had drawn the attention of all the experts.

“What’s that little runt doing in the magma? He has already gotten the heart of blaze. He is now absorbing the magma. We have to stop him quickly. If the heart of blaze is fully refined by him, all of our efforts will be in vain.”

An elder of the Dan Family said loudly.

“Stop the crap! Huo, and Shi Family, you two block the Demon Race and the Gu Family. The others, come with me to catch that Jiang Chen.”

The face of the elder from the Desolate Family darkened. They realized that the Gu Family and the Demon Race were helping Jiang Chen buy some time. Once Jiang Chen fully refined the heart of blaze, all of their fruits would become Jiang Chen’s.

However, they didn’t believe that Jiang Chen would be able to fully refine the heart of blaze in such a short period of time. This was a supreme treasure of the Heaven and Earth. It couldn’t be

refined as easily as the other things.

“Attack.”

The expert of the Huo Family bellowed, leading the others to attack the Gu Family. On the other side, the experts of the Shi Family also launched their attacks on the Demon Race. The eight major families that were united just now had engaged in battle in an instant. The faces of the experts from the Gu Family and the Demon Race turned unpleasant. They wanted to buy Jiang Chen some time but they were powerless in the face of so many opponents. Now, they were hampered by the experts of the Huo and Shi Family. There was no way to help Jiang Chen stop the other four major families.

Regarding the issue of Jiang Chen, the Bin Family had always been in neutral position. After all, none of their people were killed by Jiang Chen in Void Triangular Domain. But then again, the current issue was related to the heart of blaze, which they couldn't ignore. If they didn't help the other four major families deal with Jiang Chen, they might lose all the chance of getting their precious heart back.

To the Bin Family, Jiang Chen would certainly die. His present situation had almost zero chance of survival. He had offended so many experts, even if he had nine lives, it wouldn't be enough for him to stay alive.

Chapter 932 - First Grade Great Saint

“This bastard does have the nerve! He still dared to rob the treasure in such a circumstance. He must not know what death is.”

“Exactly. It is ridiculous to think that no one dared to hunt him down because of the interference of the Gu Family and the Demon Race. He should know that the heart of blaze is the fruit of the eight major families’ labour. If this really fell into someone else’s hands, where would these families put their face?”

“Rest assured. He will surely die without a doubt. Currently, the Shi and Huo Family are blocking the Gu Family and the Demon Race, leaving Jiang Chen all alone. He is just a Minor Saint after all. Even if he has heavenly skills, it would be impossible for him to match so many Fifth Grade Great Saints.”

.....

A lot of bystanders were mocking Jiang Chen, but at the same time, they were impressed by Jiang Chen’s courage. It was like there was no limit to his courage, which could also be described as madness. However, in the eyes of so many people, such audacity was a kind of stupidity. It showed how ignorant Jiang Chen was. They didn’t understand why a genius like him couldn’t see the situation clearly, robbing a treasure in such a circumstance would certainly cost him his life.

“It turns out that Brother Jiang has been hiding in the dark, but his situation now is critical.”

Kong Yang stood from a very far distance. He could clearly see the scene from afar; it gave him an unsettling feeling.

“Brother Jiang is truly the hero of the world. The heart of blaze which is also called the Burning Flame precisely matches someone like Brother Jiang. If Brother Jiang refined it, the benefits that he would obtain will be unimaginable. He can also exert the power of the heart of blaze to the fullest. Unfortunately, his current situation is too dangerous. Plus, we are still too weak, there is nothing that we can do besides watching helplessly.” Gu Liufeng sighed as he shook his head.

This was a genius who had been completely subdued by Jiang Chen, but even he knew how dangerous Jiang Chen’s situation was. Among the experts of the Desolate, Dan, Narang and Bin Family, there were 8 Fifth Grade Great Saints and nearly 20 Fourth Grade Great Saints. Under the influence of such combat power, not even the magma dragon could bear it, let alone Jiang Chen.

Flames pervaded the entire battlefield. Destructive energy raged everywhere, making the whole void about to explode. The geniuses of the Gu Family and the Demon Race had been completely contained. On the other side, the experts of the four major families were all ready to attack Jiang Chen. At this point, Jiang Chen could only rely on himself.

Presently, Jiang Chen’s dragon transformation skill had been circulated to its fullest. In the blink of an eye, another one hundred dragon marks were formed. There’s only a hundred more dragon marks left to reach the First Grade Great Saint, but time was his

biggest problem now.

Hong Long...

His enemies apparently didn't want to give him time. Huge energy waves that blotted out the sky and covered up the earth swept towards the magma. The energy was boundless. A direct hit would result in Jiang Chen being torn apart.

“Ancestral Dragon Pagoda, don't let me down. Just help me stop this attack and I'll succeed in my advancement to the Great Saint realm.”

Jiang Chen gritted his teeth and released the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda. Jiang Chen was fully enveloped in the giant blood-red pagoda. The earth devil beast and the devil were currently pumping their energy into the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda, hoping to increase its power.

Hong Long

The experts of the four major families struck the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda simultaneously. All of the bystanders stared at the current scene. Kong Yang, Big Yellow and the others noticed that their breathing became difficult. No one knew how powerful this joint attack would be, but there's one thing that they were sure about, if this attack struck them, they would certainly be pulverized without a doubt.

Jiang Chen was now betting his life on the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda. He had placed all of his hopes on it. Although the first floor of the pagoda had yet to completely condensed, it was a dragon's supreme treasure. In addition, the collision between Big Yellow and the pagoda proved that it had an impressively high defensive capability.

Ka Ka...

Huge energy waves struck the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda. It suddenly shook violently and produced a cracking sound. Lines of cracks were seen all over of its surface. It was about to be broken at any second.

Jiang Chen's body suffered a great shock, he spurted out blood. The earth devil beast and the devil also had the same reaction and their faces turned very ugly.

"Master, the ancient pagoda is about to crumble. Another joint attack from the experts would certainly cost us our lives." The earth devil beast said.

"Shut up." Jiang Chen ordered.

The circumstances was within his expectation. The Ancestral Dragon Pagoda had just been formed recently. It was already considered quite good that it didn't crumble after receiving the joint attacks of his powerful enemies. This had already exceeded his expectations.

To Jiang Chen, this short amount of time was already enough. He believed that the appearance of the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda would faze his opponents temporarily, which would give him sufficient time to break through to the Great Saint realm.

In truth, the reaction from the crowd was just as Jiang Chen expected. Everyone's eyes fell upon the blood-red ancient pagoda with surprise.

“What is that thing? It can stop our attacks?”

“This little runt does have a lot of treasures! But it would be impossible for this treasure to stop us. Look, it's about to crumble soon. Let's attack once more, break his treasure apart and bring him out!”

“Humph! It's ridiculous that this little beast thinks that a defensive treasure like this can stop us.”

The experts of the four major families were amazed by the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda, but it was just temporary. They were ready to launch another attack.

The experts of the Gu Family and the Demon Race were very anxious, they didn't know what other skills Jiang Chen had at this critical juncture.

At this moment, Jiang Chen's eyes became brighter than the stars. His expression hardened as he raced against time. The

remaining number of dragon marks had been fully condensed. Vast amount of True Meta Stones were consumed extravagantly, and the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda was trying its best to absorb the magma to restore itself.

Ka!!!!!!

Broke though!

The Great Saint realm was finally broken through. His Qi rushed out his body like a wild storm and great waves. At this time, the attacks of the experts were about to reach him.

He kept the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda. He had spent a lot of effort to condense this pagoda out, once it was broken, he would need to re-condense it again. Also, after advancing to the Great Saint realm, the pagoda trembled violently. The broken parts of the pagoda started to restore gradually at the speed that was visible to the naked eye.

Roar...

He yelled facing the sky. His body grew a fold larger, making him look like a peerless dragon. He struck out the Five Elemental Combat Dragon Seal. Fifteen powerful dragons roared, charging at the experts of the four major families.

Hong Long!

The stormy energy was like a turbulent wave, covering the entire battlefield in a flash. Everyone's eyes widened in surprise, staring at what's in front of them. Whether it was his enemies or his friends, all of them were startled.

“Oh my god! What am I seeing here? Jiang Chen has advanced to the Great Saint realm?”

“That's right. It was the Qi of a Great Saint. It was a little overly powerful that he could refine the heart of blaze in such a short period of time.”

“Haha! Brother Jiang is surely crazy. He actually advanced to the Great Saint realm in such predicament. He was able to kill a Third Grade Great Saint when he was still a Ninth Grade Minor Saint, now that he has advanced to the Great Saint realm, I'm afraid that he is powerful enough to kill a Fourth Grade Great Saint, he may even have the strength to fight an ordinary Fifth Grade Great Saint, but there are eight Fifth Grade Great Saints here. I'm not sure whether he can handle all of them, he has just advanced.”

.....

No one wasn't surprised. Who would have thought that Jiang Chen would be able to break through to the Great Saint realm in such a short period of time? In everyone's eyes, Jiang Chen was supposed to be dead without a doubt, there was no chance of survival when he was attacked by so many experts.

However, for those who were always able to create miracles,

nothing was impossible. Today, Jiang Chen had once again created a miracle at this critical minute.

“Son of a b*tch, this little beast has really refined the heart of blaze.”

“Damn! He has advanced to the Great Saint realm now, I don’t know if our attacks would be able to kill him.”

“Seal this place now. We can’t let this little beast escape.”

.....

The experts of the four major families were infuriated, to the point that they want to cough up blood. They had spent painstaking effort to eliminate the magma dragon in order to obtain the heart of blaze, but their fruit was eventually snatched by Jiang Chen. How could they accept it?

At this moment, the experts of the Gu Family and the Demon Race stopped attacking, and looked at the centre of the raging stormy waves. Each of their eyes glinted with a strange light.

The chaotic energy dispersed and dissipated. Jiang Chen’s figure reappeared in front of everyone. Currently, he looked like a dragon and a human, but his size had grown larger and sturdier. There was a trace of blood at the corner of his mouth that was clearly caused by the collision just now.

The gap between the Great Saint realm wasn't small and was different from the Minor Saint realm. Therefore, the half-dragon Jiang Chen could forcefully fight a Fifth Grade Great Saint but it would be virtually impossible for him to kill them. Just now, when he defended the attacks of 8 Fifth Grade Great Saints and 20 Fourth Grade Great Saints, he was inevitably injured.

“Great.”

The experts of Gu Family were delighted, at the same time, surprised. They saw that Jiang Chen had advanced to the First Grade Great Saint and was still intact after the attack of so many experts. This was truly an unprecedented scene.

“Bastard! Everyone, let's attack again. We must kill this beast today. If we let him continue to grow, sooner or later, he will become a great threat.” The Fifth Grade Great Saint from the Desolate Family gritted his teeth and shouted.

The potential of Jiang Chen started to terrify them.

Chapter 933 - The Roar and Howl of Dragon and Phoenix

The scene, which had just been silent for a moment, once again began bustling with commotion. Although the Shi and Gu Family weren't battling anymore, with the Shi and Huo Family in front of the two families, neither of them would be able to help Jiang Chen.

The Qi of destruction pervaded the air. Any action from a Great Saint could destroy a portion of the heaven and earth, so the destruction of one side of the void was something common.

Presently, the four major families had sealed the whole spatial zone to prevent Jiang Chen from escaping. The Bin Family who had been standing in the neutral side was now involved because they now understood the terrifying potential talent of Jiang Chen. A brat who had just advanced to Great Saint realm was able to withstand the attacks of so many experts. If they did not see it with their own eyes, they wouldn't have believed that there was actually such an abnormal being in the world. It was imaginable that if they let Jiang Chen continue to develop, he was going to be a massive trouble to their family. As such, there was no way they could stay neutral anymore.

Today, the Bin Family chose to eliminate Jiang Chen. So if Jiang Chen grew very strong one day, he would seek revenge on them. Given the advantage they had, they might as well combine with the other three major families to get rid of this potential problem eternally.

Presently, Jiang Chen was absolutely not putting these experts in

his eyes anymore. Although his current strength wasn't enough to defeat Fifth Grade Great Saints, he was certainly not afraid of them. He was now focusing all his concentration on the heart of blaze. It was truly amazing because it had helped him condense another thousand dragon marks in this brief moment, making the total 81, 000 dragon marks. He would only need a thousand more to advance to Second Grade Great Saint.

Hong Long

The attacks of the four major families approached him again, fracturing the void as they passed and making the atmosphere of the spatial zone turbulent. He was now drowned by a violent storm, but he lifted his head and his eyes glowed with ferocious light.

Five elemental combat dragons were frantically struck out, hitting against the incoming waves of attacks.

A whirlwind was formed. Jiang Chen was completely sucked into it and fell into its centre. A joint attack like this was too strong. To put in bluntly, if a Fourth Grade Great Saint fell into this whirlwind, he would die instantly, or even a Fifth Grade Great Saint would be seriously injured. After all, this was a joint attack of 8 Fifth Grade Great Saints and 20 Fourth Grade Great Saints. It was imaginable how strong their joint attack was.

*Deng Deng Deng ... *

Jiang Chen was thrown out by the manic energy. All the dragons

he struck was totally destroyed. Once again, he was badly hit and many mouthful of blood gushed out his mouth.

“Jiang Chen, you are indeed a miracle—a newly-advanced Great Saint brat can stay alive after two rounds of our joint attack, but you are still too weak compared to us. With our combined strengths, you will die!” A Great Saint of Desolate Family yelled.

“Kill him and retrieve the heart of blaze!” An elder of Dan Family cried in a serious tone. He wanted to rush forth at once to tear Jiang Chen apart.

“A bunch of old people. It’s you all who forced me to do this.”

Jiang Chen rubbed the blood at the corner of his mouth, his eyes glistened with ferocity. It infuriated him that this bunch of old experts disturbed him while he was concentrating on condensing the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda and comprehending the heart of blaze with their joint attacks. In that case, they should not blame him for being rude.

“You little beast, you have just advanced to Great Saint realm, do you still have ways to fight us?” A Great Saint of the Narang Family smirked at him.

“Hehe, this group of old people is going to taste the bitterness.”

Big Yellow was standing in the distance, smiling sinisterly. Others didn’t know what Jiang Chen was up to, but it was very

clear to him. Everything would be alright the moment Jiang Chen advanced to Great Saint realm. No one would be able to oppose him.

“Big Yellow, could it be that Brother Jiang has some great skills left?” Kong Yu was in doubt.

“That’s right. Although Brother Jiang has advanced to Great Saint realm, he is merely a First Grade Great Saint. He is already considered very heaven defying, the fact that he can stay alive after the joint attacks of so many experts. But, the huge gap between them won’t give Brother Jiang a chance to achieve victory.”

Leopard Wei was looking at Big Yellow in surprise, because he really had no clue about what other means that Jiang Chen have to fight those Fifth Grade Great Saints.

“You have all neglected one thing. It’s true that Jiang Chen has advanced to Great Saint realm, but why hasn’t the heavenly tribulation struck him?” Big Yellow said, chuckling.

“This is the thing that I have been wondering about. Anyone should know that the advancement to Great Saint realm will lead to heavenly tribulation, but why hasn’t the heavenly tribulation struck after Brother Jiang advanced to Great Saint realm? What’s going on?”

Kong Yang looked over at Big Yellow. As a senior, he had greater influence in his speech and knew better about the advancement to Great Saint realm. During his advancement, the heavenly

tribulation struck him the moment he advanced, but the present situation that Jiang Chen faced was undoubtedly very strange.

“It’s because Jiang Chen can control the time of the heavenly tribulation will strike. You all will see.”

Big Yellow had a look of confidence. He not only knew that Jiang Chen had the ability to release the heavenly tribulation, but also that Jiang Chen would advance to Second Grade Great Saint after the tribulation. When that happens, killing Fifth Grade Great Saints would be very easy. He might even be strong enough to fight a Sixth Grade Great Saint. When that happens, no one in the Pure Land would be able to kill him. It gave Big Yellow a thrill while thinking about it.

“What? Control when the heavenly tribulation will come? I have never heard of something like this.” Kong Yang exclaimed.

He couldn’t believe his own ears. Even with the experience and knowledge he had, he had never heard of people who could control when the heavenly tribulation will strike.

The experts of the four major families were ready to launch another attack. They had totally viewed Jiang Chen as their prey. Today, they were bound to destroy him here. But then, due to the anger caused by the matter of the heart of blaze, they had neglected one important thing—the heavenly tribulation of Jiang Chen. Although they were in an ancient battlefield that existed eons ago, it wouldn’t stop Jiang Chen from releasing the heavenly tribulation which existed at anywhere. No matter where you he was or what types of spatial zone he’s in, he could unleash the

heavenly tribulation at any time. No experts, even the high and mighty beings in the Immortal World, could ever escape from the wrath of the heavenly tribulation.

Jiang Chen's eyes glowed with cruelty. He had already known that these old people would not let him go, making it impossible for him to study the heart of blaze. In that case, he wouldn't need to be polite anymore. He would just unleash the lightning tribulation to let these people taste the wrath of it.

Hong Long

The moment the experts attacked, a rumble was heard from the heaven and earth. The colour of the sky changed. Sounds of thunder was everywhere, and clouds covered the sky. It all happened in only a few blinks of an eye. Endless lightning flashed. Then, a huge tornado of lightning appeared right above Jiang Chen's head.

"It's the heavenly tribulation, get back!" A Great Saint of Desolate Family hurriedly yelled.

The heavenly tribulation wasn't a joke. Once a person was caught by it, he or she would have to confront the tribulation and will most probably die within it.

Seeing the present scene, all the experts hastily retreated. Who would still want to kill Jiang Chen at this point in time? It would be over if they were captured by the heavenly tribulation.

“Why is this brat’s heavenly tribulation so strange? Why did the heavenly tribulation strike him now and not at the moment when he advanced to the Great Saint realm?”

“We can’t care about that anymore. Everybody, retreat! If you are caught by it, the consequences will be unimaginable!”

“Humph! Jiang Chen will surely die. After the heavenly tribulation, he will certainly be severely injured. Then, it will be a piece of cake to kill him.”

.....

The entire spatial zone shook intensely. Everyone started to retreat, they wouldn’t dare to neglect the gravity of this situation. No one would dare to joke around with their own lives in front of this tribulation.

The faces of the experts of Gu Family and Demon Race were filled with worries. They didn’t know that the heavenly tribulation was deliberately released by Jiang Chen, and how proficient Jiang Chen was at surviving the tribulation. They were worried about Jiang Chen’s condition after the heavenly tribulation. He would surely fall into a state of weakness, who would be able to save him at that time?

Roar...

Howl...

The thunderbolt in the sky trembled! A long, golden dragon a few hundred meters long swirled in the deep thunderclouds, roaring. Aside from the long dragon, there was also a large bird beside it, emitting nine-coloured light. The huge bird looked incomparably divine. Its body was flowing with an exuberant aura. Although it wasn't a real physical being, it gave people an urge to admire and worship it.

Divine Bird Phoenix. That's right, it was the legendary Divine Bird Phoenix!

“God, the roar and howl of the dragon and phoenix. Could this be the legendary Dragon Phoenix Major Tribulation? How can this be possible?”

“T-ttt-this...this is really the legendary Dragon Phoenix Major Tribulation. The roar and howl of the dragon and phoenix are their symbol. Nothing like this have ever happened in the history of tribulation.”

“When a person advances to Great Saint realm, the person will face the Nine Major Tribulations which is a very scary and deadly tribulation. Nothing like this tribulation has ever occurred in any experts' tribulation. This is the first time I am seeing this.”

.....

Chapter 934 - The Insane Ancestral Dragon Pagoda

The Dragon Phoenix Major Tribulation was a legendary major tribulation; the tribulation that are faced by immortals. As such, no tribulation such as this had ever occurred across the Saint Origin World. The most dangerous tribulation in this world was merely the Nine Major Tribulations. Today, the Dragon Phoenix Major Tribulation befell upon Jiang Chen the moment he advanced to the Great Saint realm. The strange view of the dragon and phoenix, and their rumbling roars and howls had shocked countless of people. Regardless of what the outcome was, his name would certainly be included in the history of Saint Origin World. It was a moment that would go down in history when both the dragon and phoenix appeared in a tribulation.

“Heaven defying! Jiang Chen is too heaven defying! One should know that the heavenly tribulation entirely depends on how heaven defying the person is. Only people who are absolutely heaven defying can initiate the Dragon Phoenix Major Tribulation.”

The elder of the Heavenly Leopard Race gazed at the dragon and phoenix and sighed.

“It is true that Big Yellow possessed the Divine Beast Bloodline and has obtained the Totem Divine Seal. However, the tribulation that he initiated was merely the Nine Major Tribulations. Compared to Jiang Chen, Jiang Chen is overly heaven defying. However, the Dragon Phoenix Major Tribulation is horrifyingly deadly. It won’t be easy to survive through it.”

“Exactly. Such a scary major tribulation would undeniably put the person’s limit to the test. It’s so destructive that the person would end up dead in the tribulation. Ee if the person survives, he will certainly fall into a very serious state of weakness, which is very disadvantageous considering the situation that Jiang Chen is in.”

“Unfortunately, we are unable to provide any help. Jiang Chen could only depend on himself. He has been creating miracles along the way. Today, he has obtained the heart of blaze which is tremendously beneficial to him. So, I hope that he will create another miracle again.”

The Great Saints of Gu Family and Demon Race let out sighs as they spoke. They were amazed by the Dragon Phoenix Major Tribulation and at the same time, worried for Jiang Chen. There was no way that they would feel relaxed about his situation. It was true that the view of the Dragon Phoenix Major Tribulation was breathtaking. However, no one would dare to imagine how powerful the tribulation was. Even if Jiang Chen survived the tribulation, he would surely end up in a very bad condition. So, how could he defend himself against the six major families at that time?

But then again, they could only worry for him. There was nothing that they could do to help. Not even a Ninth Grade Great Saint could help resolve the tribulation, only the individual who initiated the heavenly tribulation could do it. If others attempted to interrupt the tribulation, they would be captured by the heavenly tribulation and be burnt to death by lightning fire.

Beneath the thunderstorm, Jiang Chen lifted his head, both of his blood-red eyes glared at the dragon and phoenix above, a smirk was revealed at the corner of his mouth.

“Dragon Phoenix Major Tribulation... The dragon transformation skill is really extraordinary. It actually initiated the Dragon Phoenix Major Tribulation. Anyway, this major tribulation is going to push my cultivation to the Second Grade Great Saint. After that, I will kill all of them.”

Jiang Chen said in his heart. As a matter of fact, this was really beyond his expectation. He had anticipated that the tribulation this time would be scarier than the Devil Dragon Tribulation when he advanced to the Minor Saint realm, but not to this extent.

“Come on.”

Jiang Chen’s Qi fluctuated as he yelled at the lightning clouds.

Roar...

Howl...

The dragon and the phoenix roared and howled, looking at Jiang Chen with ruthless eyes. The heavenly force would never tolerate a person who dare challenge the power of Heaven. Anyone who provoked the existence of the heavenly force would die in the lightning tribulation. This was what the Dragon Phoenix Major

Tribulation was for; it was used to destroy everything.

Hong Long

Thunder resounded throughout the sky, as lightning flashed, causing countless of sparks to condense. The body of the dragon and the phoenix grew larger. Then, each of them spat out a mass of fire; It was the thunder fire, the flame that was formed using lightning, similar to Jiang Chen's True Thunderfire.

However, these two masses of True Thunderfire contained endless heavenly Qi that made its power unimaginable, charging down at Jiang Chen.

Weng *Weng*

At this moment, the two floors of the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda that were already condensed, vibrated violently and let out a harsh buzzing sound. Jiang Chen was stunned when he saw the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda automatically rushed out of his body, crashing into the two masses of True Thunderfire.

Hong Long

As the two masses of thunderfire collided with the pagoda, it shook violently, but what surprised everybody was that the two masses of thunderfire were straightaway engulfed by the pagoda.

Cracking sound

Electricity flashed on the surface of the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda, with dense electrical webs everywhere, making it look very divine. Furthermore, after absorbing the two masses of thunderfire, the third floor started to condense.

Jiang Chen was so delighted by this scene that he almost cried out.

“Haha! This is insane.”

Jiang Chen laughed. The Ancestral Dragon Pagoda claimed that it could refine and absorb any kinds of energy from Heaven and Earth, but he didn't expect it to absorb the energy of lightning. He was supposed to experience the Dragon Phoenix Major Tribulation by himself, but the experience was forcibly robbed away by the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda.

Anyway, Jiang Chen's bloodline was also connected to the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda. This explained why the pagoda went forth voluntarily. It doesn't matter if it was the pagoda or Jiang Chen that experienced the tribulation, it would be the same as they were one unit.

Hong Long

Roars and howls were heard again. Two thicker lightning struck. Each lightning was like a giant serpent, carrying unknown amount of power.

Originally, Jiang Chen was worried whether the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda could handle it, but after it engulfed the two masses of lightning and remained intact, it relieved his concerns. It seemed like the defensive power of the pagoda grew stronger after the two floors were condensed. Naturally, he felt happy when the pagoda started condensing the third floor under the tribulation.

More importantly, Jiang Chen's concerns about the Dragon Phoenix Major Tribulation and the numerous powerful enemies waiting to kill him had become unnecessary. With the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda, not only could it help him defend against the heavenly tribulation, it could also absorb all the energy of the lightning strikes, much to his benefit.

No matter from which aspect, this was a very awesome thing and he couldn't help but feel exhilarated.

Due to origin of the pagoda being linked to Jiang Chen, the huge amount of lightning energy absorbed would also benefit him. Although the benefits were limited, it was still better than nothing.

However, the lightning energy that entered the pagoda was making the earth devil beast and the devil suffer. Both of them were beings with extreme devil Qi. They would be suppressed by the Supreme Yang Qi of the lightning because it was their natural enemy.

“Earth devil beast, devil, quickly hide yourselves in the spatial

ring.”

Jiang Chen opened the spatial ring to let them in.

“I have the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda as my protection while undergoing the tribulation. I will now enter the pagoda to receive the lightning energy within it, and at the same time, study the heart of blaze.”

Jiang Chen’s body fluttered; he entered the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda. At this moment, he switched back to his human form, sitting cross-legged in the electrical webs and began to put his concentration on the heart of blaze. He had already completely refined the heart of blaze, but his heart has not integrated with it yet. He believed that he would gain something good if he completely integrated with it.

Roar...

Howl...

When the Dragon Phoenix Major Tribulation felt that they couldn’t do any harm to Jiang Chen, they got furious and began to bombard the pagoda with greater strike, but it didn’t concern the pagoda at all, it just absorbed any types and amount of energy.

The scene stupefied everyone, making them forget that their mouths were left open. They couldn’t believe what they were seeing.

“Look! What kind of treasure is that blood-red pagoda? How could it possibly help Jiang Chen defend against the heavenly tribulation? This is freaking me out.”

“Yeah. It’s terrifying. The ancient pagoda didn’t seem powerful earlier, it was even almost broken by the joint attack of the experts. However, it has already restored the damages that it suffered. Where did Jiang Chen get this treasure from? Isn’t this akin to madness, the fact that it can even defend against the heavenly tribulation?”

“Damn! Why does this little beast have such luck? I thought that he would certainly going to die under this Dragon Phoenix Major Tribulation. Now, it seems like he is probably going to survive this tribulation.”

“Humph! Even if he survives, so what? He will surely become weak, even if he doesn’t fall into a weakened state, killing a First Grade Great Saint is just going to be as easy as stepping on insects.”

.....

The experts of the six major families had the urge to grind their teeth. They had thought that Jiang Chen would die the moment they discovered that it was the Dragon Phoenix Major Tribulation. They wouldn’t have imagined that Jiang Chen would have such a trump card that could help him defend against the heavenly tribulation.

“Holy sh*it! This pagoda is too awesome!”

Big Yellow was shocked. He already knew it the moment he saw the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda came out. As a matter of fact, he was quite worried for Jiang Chen when the Dragon Phoenix Major Tribulation appeared despite his confidence in Jiang Chen. Now it seemed like he doesn't need to worry for him anymore. The Ancestral Dragon Pagoda was going to help Jiang Chen withstand everything.

“This guy is really a monster, and he has created another miracle. However, what kind of treasure that ancient pagoda is.”

“Jiang Chen is a man with great fortune. A person like him will certainly have a boundless future ahead of him. It seems like building a rapport with him is truly the right and wise choice. In the near future, when the Saint Origin World falls into great chaos, Jiang Chen will surely play the most important role in that situation.”

“That's right. Now, we don't have to worry about what kind of damage the Dragon Phoenix Major Tribulation would do to him. We just need to watch what kind of miracle he would create after the tribulation.”

The Great Saint experts of the Gu Family and Demon Race breathed a long sigh of relief. With this kind of treasure, the tribulation wouldn't do him any harm regardless of how powerful the tribulation is. He was now sitting in the sea of lightning, as if he was bathing himself. He didn't feel a tiny bit of discomfort at all.

Jiang Chen didn't take have the effort to care about how astonished the others felt. All his focus had been placed on the heart of blaze. While absorbing the energy of lightning, he was integrating his heart with the heart of blaze to reach at the perfect state. He was also waiting for a miracle to happen.

Chapter 935 - Flaming Wings

Hong Long Long

Rumbles resounded in the void above. The dragon and phoenix were making incessant thunderfire strikes on the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda but to no avail. Every mass of lightning and fire was absorbed the moment it struck the pagoda. The Third Floor of the pagoda was being condensed rapidly, half of it had already emerged.

In the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda, Jiang Chen had completely fallen into the perfect state of cultivation. Besides the increasing number of dragon marks stimulated by the absorption of the heavenly lightning, the most important thing was the integration with the heart of blaze or the Burning Flame. Currently, it had fully integrated with Jiang Chen's heart.

When the two hearts are combined in perfect harmony, a huge burst of Qi rushed out of Jiang Chen's body. That Qi represented an outstanding person, a truly supreme hero. The heart of blaze had added the aura of awe to the domineering Jiang Chen, making people feel compelled to admire him.

The aura of awe wasn't the only thing that benefited Jiang Chen, there was also a tangible benefit that he acquired. Behind him, illusory wings of fire gradually materialized until it became real wings of fire.

The wings of fire, unlike his dragon wings, evolved through the

heart of blaze. In other words, the heart of blaze had turned into a pair of dazzling wings of fire.

“Flaming Wings.”

The two words appeared in his mind. His eyes turned fiery red. A casual flutter of his wings radiated endless fiery waves. The power became even more unbelievable when the heart of blaze was combined with the True Thunderfire and True Dragon Fire.

The Flaming Wings allowed him to fly ten thousand miles in a breath. Across the boundless world, he could reach any place with just a single will. It was true that it couldn't deal considerable damage but its enhancement in speed was unimaginable. To Jiang Chen, using the Flaming Wings together with the Spatial Shift could bring him into the internal void with a casual move which made it impossible even for a Seventh Grade Great Saint to kill him.

“Haha! This is exhilarating!” Jiang Chen laughed.

This was indeed a very pleasing thing. The benefits that he reaped in this ancient battlefield was marvelous. Leaving the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda alone, the heart of blaze was enough to make him exhilarated.

With a flicker, he kept his wings of fire. His eyes gazed through the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda at those experts of six major families, revealing a smirk. This wasn't the first time he exploited the tribulation. If he chased after those experts in a frenzied manner,

many would die under the strikes of the Dragon Phoenix Major Tribulation.

If it was before, he wouldn't guarantee that the tribulation strikes would hit them as there were a lot of Fifth Grade Great Saints among them. Furthermore, many would choose to run because they feared the lightning tribulation. But now, with the Flaming Wings, whoever he wanted dead would die. It was too easy to catch up to the Fifth Grade Great Saints.

“I will let you all live a little longer, I won't let you all miss such a great opportunity of meeting the heavenly tribulation.”

Jiang Chen looked around at the lightning sparks that surrounded his body and began to prepare the refinement of the Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon Pill. There was no more of this pill left with him. After giving away some in Martial Saint Dynasty, the remaining ones were used as part of the betrothal gifts for Gu Family.

A sacred medicine like the Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon Pill was very precious, even to Jiang Chen. It was best if he could make some of them now. Today, the Gu Family and Demon Race had assisted him a lot, it was no doubt a great favor. If it wasn't because of them buying him time at the beginning, he wouldn't have refined the heart of blaze and the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda would certainly be smashed to pieces.

Now that the heart of blaze had been fully refined and integrated and the magma had been fully absorbed, there was nothing else he could reward the Gu Family and Demon Race except by giving

them the Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon Pills that he was going to concoct right now. He believed that these two major families were still very interested with this pill.

Hu...

Having Jiang Chen as the center, the True Thunderfire and True Dragon Fire merged together, forming a sea of fire. Spiritual energy rushed out Jiang Chen's body like tidal waves, integrating itself with the flames.

Then, Jiang Chen began to juggle out some medicinal herbs and Nine Solar Saint Water and threw them into the flames. With the help of the lightning energy, he began concocting as if there was no one else present.

“What's Jiang Chen doing?”

“He is concocting pills, the Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon Pills. Yes, there is no doubt about it. Only Jiang Chen is able to concoct such a pill in this world.” An expert of Gu Family cried.

“What? The legendary Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon Pill?”

The elder of the Heavenly Leopard Race exclaimed in surprise. They didn't see a real Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon Pill before but they had heard of the name. Among the varieties of pills, the Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon Pill was undoubtedly the pill of the highest grade.

“That’s right. That day when Jiang Chen came to Gu Family to propose marriage to Wu Ningzhu, there were three Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon Pills in the betrothal gifts that he brought. They were concocted by him personally. I didn’t believe it at first but after seeing him concocting the pills now, it must be the Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon Pills that he is concocting,” said an expert of the Gu Family.

Many of them were shocked as they stared at Jiang Chen without blinking, especially the experts of Dan Family. To them, alchemy was always the easiest thing of all, it was their pride, but none in the Dan Family was able to concoct Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon Pill.

“Dammit! I don’t believe he can really concoct Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon Pill. The alchemy skill of our family is the best in the world. How can Jiang Chen possibly concoct a pill our family can’t?”

The elders of the Dan Family’s faces hardened. Alchemy was their greatest pride, but now, they felt a pressure from Jiang Chen pressing down the things that they were proud at, shaming their names and giving them unpleasant feelings.

Despite their resentment towards Jiang Chen, they disregarded him as their enemy, their eyes are now fixed on Jiang Chen attentively as they wanted to find out how Jiang Chen concoct the pill. It would be a rare opportunity that happened every hundred years to see the process of concoction in real time.

“Haha! Dan Family are known as the number one alchemist in the world, I wonder where your level will be when you are compared to Jiang Chen.” An elder of the Gu Family laughed sarcastically.

“Humph! We still don’t know if he will succeed in his concoction.” An expert of the Dan Family let out a cold humph.

The most important aspect of alchemy was the state of mind integrating with the spiritual energy. The more superior the pill, the more stringent the requirements required. He firmly believed that no one would be able to concoct pills during the time of tribulation, not even with the help of the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda.

Well, of course. If they knew that this wasn’t the first time Jiang Chen concocted Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon Pill, and the fact that he wasn’t helped by the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda at that time, they would surely feel bitter in their hearts.

“Ai! I really admire Jiang Chen. He is truly the rarest genius of our world. Not only are his combat power and skills heaven defying, he is also a great alchemist. A genius like him rarely appears once every ten thousand years, moreover there’s no such genius in the history of Saint Origin World.”

Kong Yang couldn’t help shaking his head. He knew that he could never catch to Jiang Chen in his lifetime. In the future, he could only look up to Jiang Chen in admiration.

Gu Liufeng had a similar expression. Both him and Kong Yang were famous figures on the Sky Ranking, but they felt that the difference between them and Jiang Chen wasn't measurable anymore.

Not only them, those geniuses who came from Saint Origin Palace had their face turned ugly as well. They had always been the elites of the geniuses, the greatest of their generation. It was their pride, their honor to be able to cultivate in Saint Origin Palace because that was a symbol of status, but after seeing Jiang Chen's strength, skills and power, they had to lower their heads. All of them were overshadowed by Jiang Chen's existence.

Lightning rippled as all eyes were fixed on Jiang Chen wanting to see the birth of the Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon Pill.

Jiang Chen's hands were constantly dancing while sending out dharma seals at maximum speed. Those without proficiency in alchemy didn't understand what he was doing, but the experts of the Dan Family's face darkened, some even felt difficulty in breathing because Jiang Chen's alchemy skill was too amazing. They had to admit that watching the concoction of Jiang Chen was enjoyable and it had opened their eyes in the field of alchemy.

Very quickly, the first Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon Pill was fully concocted. It was reddish-gold in colour and wrapped with lightning sparks. They could see the shadow of dragon rippling within the pill that made it look extremely divine.

"Look, he succeeded. It's so easy for him to concoct a Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon Pill, there is almost no chance of failure!"

The experts of Dan Family exclaimed once more. At this time, they forgot that Jiang Chen was their enemy and started to praise him.

“Is this really the Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon Pill? Sure enough, it looks very divine. It is exactly the same as the legendary Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon Pill. There is no difference at all.”

“This is a supreme sacred medicine. If I can get a Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon Pill, earth-shaking changes will take place in my whole physique. My talent will be remolded, allowing for greater cultivation advancement.”

“Do you see that? Another pill is concocted, the third, the fourth...the sixth, it is just too fast. There is virtually no chances of failure.”

“For god sake! Is he human? How can there be such an abnormal creature in the Heaven and Earth. To be a great alchemist, one needs to place all the concentration on alchemy, which makes his combat strength lower than their peers. But this person not only has incredible combat strength, but also heaven defying alchemy skill. I can't believe this if I'm not seeing this with my own eyes.”

“We must kill him! Wait until the end of the tribulation, he must die. He is exceedingly heaven defying. He is going to be a great threat if he isn't eliminated as soon as possible.

.....

The experts of the six major families all changed their facial expressions. They were totally amazed by Jiang Chen's heaven defying skills and strength.

Chapter 936 - The Peerless Devil God

The concoction that took place in the lightning was a magnificent spectacle. It was even more awe-inspiring as compared to the dragon and the phoenix. The crowd couldn't believe their eyes. However, for Jiang Chen, a person who cultivated the Great Soul Derivation Technique, this level of concoction was nothing. He could concoct these pills, even without the help of the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda. It was just that concocting it would become slightly more difficult without the aid of it.

Hong Long

Seeing Jiang Chen's resistance, the dragon and the phoenix were furious, began to continuously bombarding him with crazy strikes that almost ruined the entire spatial zone. Cracks started to form on the boundary, and it seemed like this place would collapse at any second now.

Jiang Chen lifted his head while looking at the dragon and the phoenix. He said in a plain tone. "It's about time. I just need a few more pills and I will settle the score with them."

A cruel smile was revealed at the corner of his mouth. The Dragon Phoenix Major Tribulation had been bombarding him for some time now and it was approaching the end. Jiang Chen would never miss this great opportunity as he knew that the more he reached the end of the tribulation, the greater the power of the strikes, much greater than any of the previous strikes.

In short, this major tribulation had brought enormous amount of benefit to Jiang Chen and it was mainly because of the power of the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda. Presently, the Third Floor was almost fully condensed. It was certain that the condensation would complete after the tribulation. At that time, his power would definitely be powerful.

There was no question about the defensive capability of the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda, but its offensive capability was yet to be known. Anyway, now wasn't the time to test its power. He could slowly explore them and decipher the secrets of the pagoda slowly in the future.

Soon, the second round of concoction was over. There were a total of twenty Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon Pills in his hands. Twenty of these pills were hovering all around his body with joy.

“Oh my god!He succeeded in concocting twenty Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon Pills in such a short time without any failure? Is he even human??

A Great Saint of Dan Family trembled. He was a powerful alchemist. He was considered one of the most outstanding alchemist across the Saint Origin World, but Jiang Chen's performance in the concoction today had made him feel like his life was in vain. It turned out that there was such a delicate and exquisite alchemy skill that existed in the Heaven and Earth. Putting everything aside, just by watching Jiang Chen's concoction, it had benefited him a lot. When he returned to Dan Family, he would thoroughly reexamine his concocting skill and soon, his mastery in alchemy would become a notch higher.

Of course, it was hard to know if he would be able to go back alive today.

At the present moment, plenty of the Dan Family members felt somewhat regretful. If they didn't make Jiang Chen their enemy in Void Triangular Domain, they might perhaps be able to ally themselves with Jiang Chen like the Gu Family and Demon Race. In that case, it would absolutely benefit their family.

But then, there was no medicine that could heal regrets. Now, they were already the life-or-death enemy of Jiang Chen akin to the relationship between water and fire. Between them was only resentment and revenge that was forged by blood, that there was no way to resolve.

“Twenty Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon Pills...This is unreal.”

“I live with no regrets, especially after seeing the brilliance of this concoction in real time. Comparing Jiang Chen to those high ranked alchemists that i have seen, regardless if it is in the aspect of skill or success rate, they are definitely at least several notches lower than Jiang Chen.”

“Agreed. To be able to concoct twenty Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon Pills in itself is a miracle. Across the whole Saint Origin World, it seems only Jiang Chen can achieve such a result. Now, the self-proclaimed number one family of alchemists, Dan Family, is like a child who just merely knows the basics in front of Jiang Chen. Both of them are on totally different levels.”

.....

The Great Saints of Gu Family and Demon Race praised Jiang Chen generously, as the elders of Heavenly Leopard Race started to sneer at the Dan Family. As a matter of fact, it was true that Jiang Chen's capability in alchemy had put Dan Family to shame.

Roar...

Howl...

Roars and howls sounded once more. The two thunder gods had gone completely furious, sending out lightning strikes that were at least twice as strong as before. At this time, Jiang Chen hastily kept the flames and pills. With a flash, he raced towards the array of the Desolate Family at extreme speeds.

“Experts of Gu Family and Demon Race, retreat quickly lest any unintended death occurs.”

Meanwhile, Jiang Chen's voice spread into the ears of all the experts of Gu Family and Demon Race. In fact, their facial expression changed the moment they saw Jiang Chen flying towards them. Without delay, they immediately flew frantically to a safe distance.

“Holy sh*t! This is insane!”

An elder of Heavenly Leopard Race had a look of excitement. Currently the Dragon Phoenix Major Tribulation was nearing its end, meaning that its power would tremendously increase to an unknown degree. It was unimaginable, how much damage and destruction it would cause once Jiang Chen rushed into the crowd.

“Not good, run! Now!”

The facial expression of Fifth Grade Great Saint changed dramatically. Many of them started to realise what Jiang Chen’s intention were now. This was simply insane. Any ordinary person would only focus on surviving through the tribulation. Who would have the thought of exploiting the tribulation to strike others? If those experts were caught by the tribulation, it would increase the power of the heavenly tribulation. Thus, it was similar to digging your own grave, but this was what Jiang Chen intended to do.

Swoosh

All the experts of Desolate Family were scared to death, hurriedly dispersing from their array. Unfortunately, Jiang Chen’s speed was too fast for them. In a flash, he caught up with the group of experts. Half of them, including two mighty Fifth Grade Great Saints were enshrouded in the lightning zone.

Hong... Hong...

“Argh...” “Argh...” “Argh...”

Shrill cries came from those Great Saints that were enshrouded by the lightning. Each of their screams would give one goosebumps. They were all blasted and slain by the heavenly tribulation.

Swoosh

It was just too fast. Everything happened in mere seconds. The Desolate Family had suffered the disaster of extinction. Two Fifth Grade Great Saints had died miserably. Initially, everyone was waiting for Jiang Chen to be weakened by the tribulation, but the thought of Jiang Chen using the tribulation against them had never crossed their minds. At the rate that things were going, many of them would die before the lightning tribulation ends.

After nearly half of the experts of the Desolate Family were killed, Jiang Chen shifted his cold eyes towards Huo Family.

Hiss...

The cultivators of Huo Family immediately sucked in cold air and began to flee frantically. It was too scary and terrifying. The tragic deaths of the experts from Desolate Family shook their senses. They were crystal clear that it wasn't Jiang Chen who was after them, it was the heavenly tribulation. It was imaginable that they would face the same fate as the experts of Desolate Family once they were locked on by the heavenly tribulation.

“Haha! Where are you running to?”

Jiang Chen laughed. The Flaming Wings fluttered gently, raising his speed immensely; he caught up with Huo Family's experts in a blink.

This time, half of the experts of Huo Family were captured by the lightning clouds. Incessant piercing wails were heard, their bodies were instantly turned into powder by the lightning. Tragedy was the only word to describe their death.

“My goodness!”

A lot of them exclaimed. Even the experts of the Gu Family and the Demon Race were shocked when they saw the scene. That attack was simply too strong, to the point where it could be considered heavenly defying. They were feeling very fortunate that they had made the very wise choice of allying with Jiang Chen because it was no doubt a damaging and harmful move to make a heaven defying genius like him an enemy.

“Everybody, run, this little beast is crazy!”

A Great Saint of Narang Family cried, frightened. They were all indeed frightened. It would be disastrous once the heavenly tribulation struck them. All of them had survived the tribulation before, but the tribulation that they faced was defendable using their own strength. If they were to confront the tribulation that belonged to another person, not only would they need to bear the unknown damage of the heavenly tribulation, but also initiate an internal tribulation that came from their origin. Thus, when they were struck by the thunderfire, it would burn from deep within their souls, and they would die once they couldn't bear it.

All the time, people who were experiencing the tribulation would always pay attention to their safety. They would never put their lives at risk. They had never seen someone as insane as Jiang Chen who would do something like that.

The deaths of half of the members of Desolate Family and Huo Family had completely frightened the other four major families. They dared not to be neglectful. Immediately, they dispersed from their group, raced towards the internal void and hid inside. But, it was of no use even if they went into the internal spatial zone. Unless they rush out of this spatial zone and go back to the original world outside, they wouldn't be able to avoid the ravages of the heavenly tribulation.

“Five Elemental Sphere.”

Their speed was fast but Jiang Chen was faster. He caught up to them and casted the Five Elemental Sphere. A massive power sphere spread out, enshrouding nearly half of the experts of the four major families. Because the escaping routes these experts took was random, they were all scattered, it was basically impossible to eliminate all of them at once.

However, Jiang Chen was selective in his targets. All Fifth Grade Great Saints except two fell into the zone of the Five Elemental Sphere.

The Five Elemental Sphere was Jiang Chen's power sphere, it also indicated the zone that the heavenly tribulation would strike.

In other words, all of these experts who were enshrouded by the Five Elemental Sphere would be punished by the heavenly tribulation and eventually die.

“Argh...” “Argh...” “Argh...” “Argh...”

Lightning flashed and flames blazed in the Five Elemental Sphere, screams were heard everywhere. Some people were covered with thunderfire before they were being incinerated into slag. In less than a minute, all the experts that fell into the Five Elemental Sphere were all dead. None survived.

A scene like this was too scary. Everyone who stood outside the lightning tribulation was in a state of fear. Even the people of Gu Family and Demon Race could feel tingling numbness in their skin. Have you any idea how many experts were there? They all died just like that. Jiang Chen didn't have the slightest bit of hesitation when it came to killing. It was truly a very unfortunate thing to offend such a peerless devil god.

Chapter 937 - All the Experts Were Here

Beneath the lightning was a blood-red ancient pagoda, above Jiang Chen's head. His dark hair fluttered uncontrollably, his eyes were cold and ruthless, like a peerless twisted devil that killed without blinking. The entire spatial zone was thrown into chaos. The turbulent spatial current burst out from the void. Countless of places were filled with flashes of lightning. Everyone who stood in the spatial zone felt a trace of danger, even though they were powerful Great Saints, mighty existences that was viewed as immortals by numerous cultivators. However, they now felt that they may die at any time.

“Everyone, get close to the Gu Family and the Demon Race.”

Not knowing who gave the command, all of the experts from the six major families regained their composure. Without caring whether these two families would welcome them or not, they dashed towards them crazily. Even if they couldn't join in the fray of these two major families, they must stay as close to them as possible.

Only now did they realize that Jiang Chen had colluded with these two major families, so they were sure that Jiang Chen wouldn't bring the heavenly tribulation upon the people of these two allies.

“Get lost...”

The elder of Heavenly Leopard Race yelled at those incoming

experts, seemingly ready to strike at any moment. The Demon Race was a cruel clan. They killed without hesitation once they had decided, regardless of the opponents they were facing, plus, they were now standing on the same side as Jiang Chen.

Get lost? No, they wouldn't do that, even if they were beaten to death. How could they possibly do that if that will only lead them to their deaths? They would rather die at the hands of the experts of Demon Race and the Gu Family or even wage a war with these two families than die under the wrath of the heavenly tribulation, it was just too terrifying.

Roar...

Howl...

Above the sky, the lightning was at its peak. The dragon and the phoenix had gone truly mad. Jiang Chen raised his head and saw the sturdiness of the dragon's body doubled once more. The spatial barrier of this place was starting to crumble, indicating that the ancient battlefield was in the brink of collapse.

"It seems that this place is about to crumble. The Dragon Phoenix Major Tribulation is going to make the final strike. When the spatial zone is completely shattered, all of us will be returned to the Eastern Domain, but unfortunately, although the Third Floor of the pagoda will be fully condensed, I won't be able advance to the Second Grade Great Saint. It doesn't matter much anyway, because I will at least advance to the peak of First Grade Great Saint after this. With my strong and firm foundation, it would be easy for me to advance to the Second Grade Great Saint in the

future.”

Looking at the Dragon Phoenix Major Tribulation, he contemplated and looked over at the remaining experts of the six major families, seeing them get too close to the Demon Race and the Gu Family. Thus, he put away the thought of killing them all. This was the heavenly tribulation. He could only control the time of arrival, but there was no way to accurately control where it would land. It would become a fatal accident if the experts of the Gu Family and Demon Race were captured by the tribulation.

Hong Long...

The two heavenly beasts rumbled. This time, they charged downwards, crashing into the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda with their bodies. A devastating amount of energy exploded. Not even the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda could absorb all the energy in one shot.

The Ancestral Dragon Pagoda shook violently as the Third Floor was fully condensed.

Hong Long...

The heavenly tribulation faded, but the roaring turned even more intense. It was the sound of the spatial zone fracturing. This virtual world finally couldn't stand it anymore, after the continuous havoc of the Dragon Phoenix Major Tribulation. Jiang Chen kept the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda. Presently, there were already 81 500 dragon marks in his body, which meant that he only needed five hundred hundred dragon marks before advancing to

the Second Grade Great Saint. With his current combat power, killing a Fourth Grade Great Saint in his half-dragon form would be a piece of cake. He could even fight any ordinary Fifth Grade Great Saint. The amazing defensive power of the three-storey Ancestral Dragon Pagoda could almost withstand the attack of a Sixth Grade Great Saint. In other words, from now on, there was no one else in the Pure Land that could kill Jiang Chen.

“Everyone, get out of here now! The spatial zone is falling apart!”

Someone shouted. This place was collapsing, meaning that everything here would cease to exist. They must leave before the entire place broke down, however it was a simple task for those Great Saints and Minor Saints who had fully mastered the spatial travel technique. They caught onto a line of the crack and raced out.

No one dared to lose their focus, each and every one of them began flying towards the outside madly.

Jiang Chen flew towards Big Yellow and Kong Yang's side and said. “Let's leave too.”

“What about Ah Yan? He is still refining the Ancient Devil, and also Xiao Yu, she couldn't be found anywhere until now.”

Big Yellow sounded worried. At the beginning, they came to this place with four people. They had lost contact with Yan Chenyu, while Han Yan was still in the midst of refining the Ancient Devil.

“Don’t worry. I have already sensed that only a large portion of the spatial zones in the ancient battlefield will shatter. The hidden spatial zone that Ah Yan is in is enhanced by the Ancient Devil, so it is still intact until now. As for Xiao Yu, even if the spatial zone were to collapse, she will be able to get out of here given her abilities.”

Said Jiang Chen. Han Yan was in the safest condition as that spatial zone had been personally enhanced by the Ancient Devil, which made it very solid and firm. The chance and the ability to refine a Ninth Grade Great Saint Ancient Devil was no doubt a great fortune for Han Yan. Nobody should try and disturb him before he completed the refinement.

As for Yan Chenyu who hadn’t appeared until now, Jiang Chen had guessed that she had probably encountered some kind of great luck. One should know that she was born with the Nine Yin Meridians, her body was the powerful Nine Yin Physique, and that she also obtained the inheritance of the Ice God. Someone like her was bound to obtain great benefits from this ancient battlefield. As such, Jiang Chen wasn’t worried about her safety.

The spatial zone collapsed, the thunderous rumble vanished. Everyone was rushing out of the broken spatial zone. Smoke was billowing below their feet as they hovered in the air. It was a vast stretch of desolate mountains and it was the most remote place across the entire Eastern Continent.

At this moment, two groups of people were automatically divided among the crowd. The experts of the six major families gathered together. Although half of their people had already been killed by

Jiang Chen, there were still a lot of them, their numbers exceeds the number of experts from the Gu Family and the Demon Race combined. But then, each of their faces darkened. They had suffered huge losses in this trip. Their resentment for Jiang Chen had reached the point where it could be described as higher than the sky and deeper than the sea. This kind of hatred was practically unresolvable.

Jiang Chen was standing in front of the Gu Family and the Demon Race. He had already become the backbone of these two families. Ignoring the resentful gazes of the six major families, he turned to the cultivators of the Gu Family and the Demon Race, flipped both of his palms and produced eight Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon Pills in each of his palm.

“Elder Gu, elder Heavenly Leopard, you all have provided me with great help. I have already refined the heart of blaze and absorbed the magma completely. Your kindness is greater than what I am able to compensate, so please accept these eight Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon Pills as a reward.”

He stretched out his arms and presented the pills to the Fifth Grade Great Saints of the Gu Family and the Demon Race.

Hiss

Many of them gasped in a breath of cold air and all of their eyes fell upon Jiang Chen’s hands. Eight Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon Pills? Do you have any idea how much those pills amounted to? Isn’t this reward overly generous?

The reward was too generous. At this point, all of them felt that it was very worthwhile to help Jiang Chen. Although he was a killing devil god, he was also a person who valued relationship and friendship. It was true that he treated his enemies cruelly, but he also treats his friends sincerely. They knew how many pills he had concocted during the tribulation. He would only have four more left after giving sixteen of these precious pills to them. His heroic and generous act had convinced all of them. It only showed how heroic Jiang Chen had become after refining the heart of blaze.

“This is...this is too precious, Jiang Chen.”

The elder of Heavenly Leopard Race didn't dare accept the reward. As a matter of fact, all they did was block the Shi Family and Huo Family. All the other obstacles were solved by Jiang Chen himself. It was really too much to receive these rewards for their tiny effort.

“Haha! When did the Demon Race become so courteous? You, the people of the Demon Race and Gu Family are my friends. Just so you know, I am a very forthright person. If you guys don't want them, I will treat them as peanuts for Big Yellow.” Said Jiang Chen. He was about to throw all the Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon Pills to Big Yellow.

“I want it!”

Seeing what happened, the elder of the Heavenly Leopard Race and the Gu Family wasted no time and hurriedly snatched the pills

from Jiang Chen and darted a glare at the tail-wagging Big Yellow. What kind of joke was this? Treating the Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon Pills as peanuts? It would be a waste if these pills fell into the hands of that dog.

The experts of the six major families looked over at the two families with envy. They have no idea how many geniuses would be born out of these mystical pills.

“Jiang Chen, you insane freak! You won’t live after today for killing so many of my people.”

A Fifth Grade Great Saint from the Shi Family said with a vicious tone.

His words made the entire atmosphere tense. Jiang Chen slowly turned around, gazed at the elder of the Shi Family and said emotionlessly. “Won’t let me live? Do you think the strength of you lot is enough? If I were you, I would stay as far away from me as possible.”

“Humph! Jiang Chen, don’t get overly arrogant. The high rank experts of the major six are on their way. You will without a doubt die today.”

Someone let out a cold humph. As soon as his voice faded, they saw incomparably powerful figures coming towards their direction. There were at least a dozen of them. Each one of them was extremely powerful. They were nowhere near the ordinary Fifth Grade Great Saint.

“Not good, the patriarchs of the major eight and the other Sixth Grade Great Saints are here. They have all come for you. The news here has been spread to the Pure Land.”

The elder of the Heavenly Leopard Race’s expression changed drastically. He knew how terrifying Jiang Chen is, but it wasn’t to the extent that he could handle Sixth Grade Great Saints. Furthermore, he no longer had the advantage of exploiting the Dragon Phoenix Major Tribulation, so how would he confront those Great Saints?

Chapter 938 - Checkmate

“Haha! Jiang Chen, you’re dead! Without the heavenly tribulation, you have lost your protective amulet. You are just a puny First Grade Great Saint, how will you defend yourself against a Sixth Grade Great Saint?”

“That’s right, you devilish maniac! Everyone will kill you!”

.....

Seeing the arrival of the high rank experts of the major six families, the previous experts of those families got excited. When they thought of their comrades dying under the lightning tribulation, it compounded their hatred towards Jiang Chen. They were grinding their teeth and their eyes turned reddish. If looks could kill, Jiang Chen would have been dead a long time ago.

“Jiang Chen, retreat now!” An elder of the Heavenly Leopard Race urged.

“That’s right. Jiang Chen, if you flee now, you may be able to escape.” The elder of the Gu Family warned that if he didn’t leave now, he would lose any chance of escaping.

“It’s too late now.”

Jiang Chen smiled, but there wasn’t a single trace of nervousness on his face. He had no intention of escaping at all. If he wanted to

flee, he could have done it at any time using the Flaming Wings even if he was besieged by all the Sixth Grade Great Saints. The sudden emergence of these Sixth Grades sparked up a new strategy in his mind.

Bo...Bo...

More than a dozen Sixth Grade Great Saints appeared, hovering in the sky. When their gaze fell upon their own group, their expression changed drastically when they noticed almost half of them were gone.

“What happened?” The patriarch of the Desolate Family, Desolate Yuntian, demanded an answer.

A Fourth Grade Great Saint elder hurried over to his side and said with a heart-wrenching expression, “Patriarch, it was all because of that Jiang Chen. He robbed the heart of blaze and advanced to the Great Saint realm and used the heavenly tribulation to pulverize half of the experts of the families.”

“What?!” Desolate Yuntian said as he raged.

He had never been so furious before. All his Qi as Sixth Grade Great Saint was unleashed; his cold eyes glared at Jiang Chen.

“Patriarch, we also have lost half our people.” An elder of Huo Family said, which infuriated Huo Batian even more, urging him to rush over and shred Jiang Chen into pieces.

Meanwhile, the patriarchs and great elders of Bin, Shi, Narang and Dan Family was enraged too. The casualties alone was so bad in this trip to the ancient battlefield, the casualties they suffered was so. To them, the losses they had suffered were tremendous.

“Little beast! I hate myself for not killing you on the Spiritual Space Mountain.”

Shi Haotian’s arms made a cracking sound.

“Having killed so many of my people, you won’t be able to escape even if you have wings!” Narang Changtian said and bellowed.

“It was a big mistake that we didn’t kill him on the Spiritual Space Mountain.”

The patriarch of the Dan Family, Dan Yangtian, felt regrettably in pain. He was like the other patriarchs, making the greatest mistake for not killing Jiang Chen during that time on the Spiritual Space Mountain which had left a scourge behind. During this period of time, not only had they provided Jiang Chen time to grow, but also gave him the opportunity to kill their geniuses. Presently, a large portion of their people were struck dead by the lightning tribulation and the main culprit of this disaster was Jiang Chen. Thus, what reason did they have to let Jiang Chen live?

“Jiang Chen, we, Bin Family harbors no grudge against you. Then why are you so ruthless towards our people? The patriarch of

Bin Family, Bin Longtian, shouted at Jiang Chen.

“I’m afraid you have to ask your people regarding that. It was them who had attacked me first. Are you telling me that only your people can kill me and I am not allowed to retaliate?” Jiang Chen said in a flat tone.

He had made plenty of enemies anyways and making another family his enemy did not concern him anymore. From that day onwards on Spiritual Space Mountain, he had grown to the point where these people couldn’t crush him as easily as last time. With his current cultivation grade, he no longer feared these high rank experts.

Gu Xuantian and Lang Xingtian didn’t speak a word but they stood on Jiang Chen’s side. The Great Saints of the Gu Family and Demon Race had told everything that had happened to them via divine sense. Even Gu Xuantian and Lang Xingtian were shaken by such drastic incidents.

The Dragon Phoenix Major Tribulation... 20 Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon Pills... It was a pity that they had not witnessed these events. In addition, after knowing that Jiang Chen gave their families eight Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon Pills each, both of them felt worthy of allying themselves with him.

What was more important was that when they first decided to establish connection with Jiang Chen, they were attracted to his potential and talent, but they never had thought that Jiang Chen would grow so drastically and turn the entire Pure Land upside down within such a short amount of time.

“Jiang Chen, we will help you to stall them and buy you time to escape.” Gu Xuantian spoke to Jiang Chen in divine sense.

“Exactly. You’ve created a huge trouble today. I’m afraid not even our families can protect you, but we can buy you some time. Time is of the essence.” Lang Xingtian’s voice flowed into Jiang Chen’s ears.

There was another great elder of Gu Family and including Heavenly Leopard King, there was a total of four Sixth Grade Great Saints among them, but the opponent’s side has ten Sixth Grade Great Saints. Even if four of them were pros, they wouldn’t be able to defend against so many high ranked Great Saints.

“I’m afraid it’s too late to run now.”

Jiang Chen shook his head. He didn’t have any intention of escaping. Of course, that didn’t mean he was confident enough to kill Sixth Grade Great Saints. He had a new plan, and that plan was one he must execute when the chance was presented to him.

“Gu Xuantian, Lang Xingtian, do you two really want to protect Jiang Chen? Because we won’t give in no matter what.”

Desolate Yuntian snarled at Gu Xuantian and Lang Xingtian.

“Of course.”

Gu Xuantian's Qi dominated the atmosphere. It would be a disgrace if he chose to stay back at this time. Furthermore, retreating wasn't how Gu Family treated their friend.

“Cut the crap! In that case, we'll fight. We are going to kill this little beast by any means necessary!”

Huo Baotian was infuriated and readied for the battle.

“Okay, send four men to handle Gu Xuantian and the other three. The rest, surround Jiang Chen, we have to kill this puny beast today.” Shi Haotian stated who had immediately charged at Jiang Chen.

“Listen up everybody! Get out of here right now. Jiang Chen! Find a chance to escape.”

Gu Xuantian cried facing the people of Gu Family and Demon Race. This was going to be the battle between Sixth Grade Great Saints from which the excess waves from the battlefield would be unbearable to most of them. Many would even die if they stayed within the range of the battle waves.

Hua La...

The people of the Gu Family and Demon Race retreated to a distance out of the range of the battlefield. They simply couldn't get close to it because it would put their lives at risk and cause unnecessary casualties.

Jiang Chen did not attempt to leave because he was certain that he was the main target. It would only bring disaster to the Gu Family and the Demon Race if he tried to flee. Besides, the experts of the major six families had sealed the entire void preventing him from escaping.

A smirk grew at the corner of his mouth. He certainly didn't even think of escaping and now, it was the perfect time to execute his plan.

Gu Xuantian blocked Shi Haotian's way. Two patriarchs of two major families collided. Huo Batian rushed over, engaging in a fierce battle with Lang Xingtian while Heavenly Leopard King and the great elder of Gu Family fought against the other two elders of other two families.

Desolate Yuntian, Narang Chang Tian and the other four locked their eyes on Jiang Chen, emitting thick murderous intent from their bodies.

Bang

In a flash, Jiang Chen turned into his half-dragon form. He fled in frenzy with his fluttering dragon wings. Although it wasn't his plan to flee, he had to make it look like he was attempting to run away.

"Humph! Trying to escape? It's too late for that. Today, if we let you escape from our grip, we are going to lose all of our

reputation.”

Dan Yangtian let out a cold humph. Six people vanished instantly. When they reappeared, they surrounded Jiang Chen.

“Puny beast, where do you think you’re going?”

Desolate Yuntian said as he grinned coldly.

“What should we do now? Jiang Chen has been surrounded by six Sixth Grade Great Saints. He won’t be able to escape now and we can’t doing anything to help him.”

“Dammit! How can this happen? Jiang Chen is seriously in danger now.”

“His opponents are far too strong. The only thing we can do is to watch what will happen and pray that Jiang Chen can create a miracle once again.”

.....

The people of Gu Family and Demon Race were extremely worried. Anyone would be killed in a siege attack of six Sixth Grade Great Saints. Jiang Chen had lost the advantage of the heavenly tribulation, so he wouldn’t be able to deal with a Sixth Grade Great Saint, let alone dealing with six of them altogether.

Kong Yang, Leopard Wei, Kong Yu and Gu Liufeng's faces began crinkling with worry. Even Big Yellow couldn't suppress his worries for Jiang Chen, given his current situation.

“Haha! This little beast is going to die. I would like to see how arrogant he can still be.”

“Yeah, after killing so many of our people. It won't be enough even if he die 10,000 times. Not just his physical body must be eliminated, his soul too must be fully pulverised.”

“Kill him! Kill him now!”

.....

In comparison to the fears of the Gu Family and Demon Race, the other six major families were feeling thrilled to see how Jiang Chen would die.

Having six high ranked Great Saints surrounding him, he had become like a fish in a barrel, totally incapable of fleeing.

“Six dignified patriarchs have surrounded me, a mere First Grade Great Saint. Don't you all feel ashamed at all?”

Jiang Chen's voice modulated to serious tone. To the six of them, they obviously felt frightened by Jiang Chen's remark.

“Little beast, you have audacity to speak to us? It looks like you’re about feel terrified. After killing so many people, it’s your turn now.” Desolate Yuntian said coldly.

“Why are you spending so much time with this little beast? Kill him, straight away.”

Energy was rolling in the palms of Narang Changtian, he was ready to strike Jiang Chen at any second.

“In my opinion, we can’t let this little beast die too easily. He must die in pain.” Dan Yangtian said maliciously.

“Haha! Do your best, show me what you can do! I, Jiang Chen, am not afraid of you at all.” Laughed Jiang Chen aloud.

Chapter 939 - The Death of Jiang Chen

“Good, I will be the first to make you suffer in pain. Also, I will draw your soul out so that you won’t get another chance of being reborn for eternity.”

An elder of the Desolate Family fluctuated his Qi and was prepared to launch a strike on Jiang Chen.

“Wait!”

At this moment, Bin Longtian stopped the elder.

“Bin Longtian, what do you think you’re doing? Did you forget that half of your people also died in this little beast’s hands?”

The elder looked over at Bin Longtian.

“This person must face his consequences no doubt, but in my my opinion, we’ll attack him all at the same time to finish him off for good. After all, we do have the status of overlords. It would be demeaning to torture a brat to death with the likes of us and it would only bring our reputation down.”

Bin Longtian expressed. Jiang Chen must die, but he disagreed with the others on using torturous methods as the way to kill him.

“Well, he’s right. Let’s do it together. We should just kill him

immediately.”

Dan Yangtian nodded, agreeing to what Bin Longtian had stated. Putting aside the matter of Jiang Chen’s death, they were the respected figures of their families, they represented the pinnacle authority in the Pure Land. As such, reputation meant everything to them, otherwise they wouldn’t have let Jiang Chen go back in Spiritual Space Mountain.

Two beams of light shot out of Jiang Chen’s eyes indistinctly. He had already predicted that this would happen. He anticipated that these people would want to save their face but they couldn’t let him go again, so they must finish him off directly, and this was exactly what Jiang Chen wanted.

“Little beast, you are lucky today.”

The elder of the Desolate Family gritted his teeth.

“Come on! A bunch of old men siege-attacking me, a junior? This is going to give you quite the reputation in the following thousands of years.”

Jiang Chen looked confident and fearless.

“No more nonsense! Kill him!”

Desolate Yuntian yelled, unleashing all of his Qi completely while the other five experts also launched a powerful attack of their own.

For a moment, the void was overwhelmed by the violent energy turning the battlefield into a maelstrom. Jiang Chen was completely submerged by the turbulent current. He disappeared from their sights and there were no signs of his Qi..

The six powerful experts had launched their full-fledge blow with the intent to kill. Even a great monstrous genius would perish instantly without leaving any trace.

“Haha! Bring it on! Eighteen years later, I will return and will still be the hero.”

His voice echoed from the centre of the turbulent atmosphere, startling everyone.

“Jiang Chen!”

Gu Xuantian yelled, trying hard to get away from Shi Haotian, but there was no way he could get out of his sights.

“Gu Xuantian, your opponent is me. You will not be able save that brat’s life even if you go there.”

Shi Haotian sneered. He was a man with the same status as Gu Xuantian, one of the eight major overlords. Even though he wasn’t confident in defeating Gu Xuantian, keeping him busy in the battle wouldn’t be an issue for him.

Lang Xingtian and the great elder were also stuck in the battle

with their adversaries, leaving them with no chance to save Jiang Chen.

“Haha! Jiang Chen is going to die for sure.”

The people of the major six laughed with delight.

“Damn it! Totem Divine Seal, give me strength.”

Big Yellow stormed forth. He couldn't bear to watch Jiang Chen die like this. At this grave situation when the six powerful experts had unleashed all of their energy simultaneously, he had no idea whether Jiang Chen would be able to escape or not, but he wouldn't bet on it. He must get Jiang Chen out of the turbulent force even if it means putting himself in danger and getting crushed.

Roar...

With an earth-shaking roar, Big Yellow's body began to change, his physical size enlarged in one go, dragon horns sparkled on his forehead and the Totem Divine Seal hovered above his head. This time, Big Yellow was going all out.

“Big Yellow, stop!”

Kong Yang screamed. Every expert of the Demon Race was alarmed when they saw what Big Yellow was doing – he was going to burn his Divine Beast Bloodline to stimulate the Totem Divine

Seal and obtain tremendous energy and power to save Jiang Chen.

However, the consequences would certainly be disastrous. He might even lose the Divine Beast Bloodline and the Totem Divine Seal after that.

“Big Yellow, don’t do it! Don’t mess up my plan!”

At this moment, Jiang Chen’s voice suddenly reverberated in Big Yellow’s ears. After hearing the word ‘plan’, he hastily stopped burning his Divine Beast Bloodline. The tidal Qi began to recede and the Totem Divine Seal went back into his body and his size and body returned to his original appearance.

Eek...

Everyone of them were stunned by the sudden change. They were baffled by Big Yellow’s drastic change of action, and that all of their worries were in vain.

“What the f*ck! You almost make master dog fall into a state which I can’t recover. Bastard! I am going to bite your ass off after this.”

Big Yellow complained in a disgruntled way, but the worries on his face vanished. It seemed like all of these were within Jiang Chen’s plan. Initially, he was frustrated that Jiang Chen became the prey to the bullies when he stood there waiting for the six powerful experts to strike, because this wasn’t his style.

He now knew the motive behind Jiang Chen's actions, but he still didn't have a clue as to what he was trying to achieve, but there was one thing he was sure of – Jiang Chen had ways to protect his life. Even if he was struck by six powerful experts, they wouldn't be able to kill him.

In truth, how could Jiang Chen be so easily killed?

Hong Long...

While countless eyes were gazing at the scene, the entire void exploded completely. A giant hole was created in the sky, looking gloomy and frightening, with gusts of gruesome air current flowing out of it. The combined strike of six Sixth Grade Great Saints was no doubt enough to destroy the sky and earth.

Even the sky was broken apart, it was imaginable what would happen to Jiang Chen, especially since he was the center of their combined strike. I'm afraid that not even a bit of his remains would be left.

Thick smoke billowed, as huge flames blazed. The area was obscured by the rolling smoke. Everybody held their breath, gazing at the foggy battle scene, waiting to see the result.

Desolate Yuntian waved his large hand, hitting out a gust of air current that dispersed all the thick smoke. At the spot where Jiang Chen stood previously, there was nothing left except for the fractured void.

“Is he dead?”

“He must be dead. Everyone knows how deadly that strike was. Even the sky is broken. How could Jiang Chen possibly survive that?”

“Haha! Dead! Without leaving a single remain. That insane maniac has finally received the ultimate judgment.”

.....

The people of the major six got exhilarated when they saw that Jiang Chen was killed. To them, it was really delightful to witness the death his death.

“Damn it!”

“Oh god! That’s a genius with an outstanding amount of ability. It’s a pity. His future achievements would’ve been limitless if he remains alive.”

“Not even the Heaven can help him. Relying solely on the strength of the Gu Family and the Demon Race couldn’t save Jiang Chen ultimately.”

.....

The people of the Gu Family and the Demon Race looked hurt. The death of Jiang Chen was equivalent to losing a matchless genius. Their lament and anger weren't going to change that fact. Anyhow, they had tried their best.

Six of them, including Desolate Yuntian had sealed off the whole void. Their divine sense swept through the area for a few rounds and found neither sign nor traces of Jiang Chen. Finally, they came to a conclusion that Jiang Chen was truly dead. He died under the full force of the blow just now.

“Is he dead?”

Dan Yangtian doubted his ears and eyes.

“There is no question about it. He is dead. It is impossible for him to escape in front of us and we didn't find any traces of his escape even if he had done so. That blow just now was enough to fully pulverize him.”

Desolate Yuntian said in confidence.

“He truly has profited for having instantly killed.”

An elder of the Desolate Family said coldly.

“Alright, from now on, there won't be someone like Jiang Chen anymore in this world. We have suffered quite severely. We need some time to recover all of our losses.”

Bin Longtian sighed. The Bin Family shouldn't have been involved in this conflict. Even though they had killed Jiang Chen and eliminated the scourge, the losses they suffered weren't tiny.

“You bunch of old men, don't you feel shameful for jointly attacking a junior?”

Gu Xuantian said, gritting his teeth. He had a feeling that a knife was cutting his heart when he thought about Jiang Chen's death. Not only because he was the future husband of Wu Ningzhu and that he had to provide an explanation to Wu Ningzhu. Back when Jiang Chen arrived in the Gu Family, they had developed a sincere and true relationship with one another. As such, how could he stay indifferent towards the death of Jiang Chen?

Unfortunately, his heartache could never change the fact that Jiang Chen was killed.

Lang Xingtian's face was full of grief. Despite knowing Jiang Chen for only a short period of time and despite the fact that Jiang Chen wasn't a member of the Demon Race, he had treated Jiang Chen as his friend during all the times they had been in contact.

“Humph! Gu Xuantian, Jiang Chen should've been dead earlier. Your families were trying to protect him, which was an impossible task. From today onwards, there won't be a person named Jiang Chen anymore.”

Desolate Yuntian let out a cold humph and left with the people of

the Desolate Family.

Then, the other five major families followed, returning to the Pure Land. Most of them had lost a lot of young talents, which only meant that they needed time to retrain and nurture another batch of experts. Now that Jiang Chen was dead, it was no longer necessary to continue the fight with the Demon Race and the Gu Family. During this period of time, the major six had suffered great losses due to Jiang Chen's existence and the other two families were instead getting stronger.

Only the people of the Gu Family and the Demon Race were left on the scene after the departure of the major six. Whether it was the higher ups or the underlings, all of them had viewed and treated Jiang Chen as their own, especially Gu Liufeng, Kong Yang and a few more. They owed Jiang Chen a life-saving kindness. When they saw how Jiang Chen died without having the ability to save him, it was a grief akin to losing their loved one.

Overwhelmed by sadness, they certainly didn't realize that Big Yellow, who was supposed to be grief-stricken looked ordinarily fine, like his normal self, as if Jiang Chen's death didn't affect him at all.

Chapter 940 - The Plan

They took one final glance at the place where Jiang Chen had disappeared. The people of the Gu Family sighed and left with a melancholic expression on their faces. They wanted to give Jiang Chen a proper burial but none of his remains can be found.

It was already over. The Demon Race were just about to head back to Spiritual Space Mountain when Lang Xingtian looked over at Big Yellow and said “Big Yellow, do you want to come with us?”

“No, I’m going to Martial Saint Dynasty.” said Big Yellow, as he pretended that he was hurt. He knew that Jiang Chen wasn’t dead but he had no clue as to what Jiang Chen was planning. Therefore, he had to keep it a secret even to the Demon Race as he didn’t want to sabotage Jiang Chen’s plan.

“Very well. Tell Jiang Chen’s family not to be too sad. We’ve done all that we could. Ai!”

Lang Xingtian sighed heavily. Then, he led the people of the Demon Race back whereas Kong Yang stayed.

“Why aren’t you leaving?”

Big Yellow asked.

“I’ll go with you to see Jiang Chen’s family. He had saved my life once. His family is considered to be my family as well. Today,

brother Jiang has died, I should take care of his family on his behalf.”

Kong Yang said with a solemn expression.

“You are such a good brother. Come with me.”

After looking around, Big Yellow flew towards a certain direction. Kong Yang followed behind him. Both of them were flying at a very fast speed, disappearing without a trace.

“Big Yellow, this doesn’t look like the way to Martial Saint Dynasty.”

After flying for a while, Kong Yang realized that they weren’t heading towards Martial Saint Dynasty.

“We are not in a hurry to go to Martial Saint Dynasty. I will bring you to see a person first.”

Big Yellow said, chuckling.

“See who?”

Asked Kong Yang. Looking at Big Yellow’s chuckling face, he really wanted to slap him for being so heartless that he could still smile after the death of his best brother.

You'll know when you get there.”

Big Yellow ignored Kong Yang's glances and focused on moving forward. Kong Yang was wondering who this dog wanted him to meet, at the very least, he was sure that Big Yellow wouldn't do something that would harm him.

Under Big Yellow's lead, they arrived at a barren wasteland. The void ahead appeared very serene, but Big Yellow was able to detect a trace of wave with his eyes. He stuck out his head and tore off that rippling wave, revealing an independent spatial zone. Kong Yang was confused but he still followed Big Yellow into the spatial zone.

This place had apparently been just built not long ago because it was only the size of a house. Comparing this space to a regular independent spatial zones, it was pitifully small. At this moment, a youth in white was sitting on his feet, with a pale look on his face.

Kong Yang's facial expression changed instantly when he saw the youth dressed in white. Both of his eyes widened, it's as if he had seen the most unbelievable thing in the world.

“Jiang, Jiang Chen...”

Kong Yang stuttered. He raised his hands to rub his eyes, confirming that his vision was still in proper function. Who else would it be if this young man in white wasn't Jiang Chen?

“Brother Kong.”

Jiang Chen grinned at Kong Yang. This was an independent spatial zone that he temporarily created. Just now, he used the Spatial Shift and Flaming Wings to escape from the six experts' deadly strike, but that powerful attack had dealt a certain degree of damage to him, and now he needed a serene environment to facilitate his recovery.

As for the location of this tiny spatial zone, he secretly told Big Yellow the coordinates. This explained why Big Yellow could accurately locate this hideout. As for the others, Jiang Chen wasn't worried at all. All the experts of the major eight is gone. No one across the entire Eastern Continent would be able to find Jiang Chen's hideout. As such, it was absolutely safe for him to be here.

“What...what is going on? Didn't you get killed and pulverized by the six great experts?”

Kong Yang felt lost. He couldn't believe what he was seeing, but he was sure that Jiang Chen was alive. He darted Big Yellow a glance and figured out why this dog was being so heartless and indifferent before this; it was because he already knew that Jiang Chen didn't die.

At this time, Kong Yang suddenly thought of the abrupt action that Big Yellow made; he was about to burn his bloodline but suddenly halted his action. This anomaly only made sense because Big Yellow knew that Jiang Chen could escape at that time.

“They wanted to kill me? They still lack the capability to do so. Even though I managed to escape, I have suffered some injuries and I need some time to heal them.”

Jiang Chen smiled.

“You bastard! You have made master dog worried for you, and I almost burnt my bloodline to save your ass*!”

Big Yellow bared his teeth at Jiang Chen.

“Go to hell. You almost ruined my great plan.”

Jiang Chen darted Big Yellow a glare, but his eyes were filled with unconcealed gratitude. To think that Big Yellow was willing to burn his Divine Beast Bloodline just to save him, he was touched by this kind of sincere friendship.

“What’s happening outside now?” Jiang Chen asked.

“Everyone, including the Gu Family and the Demon Race thought that you are dead,. All the people from the eight major families have returned. They have suffered a lot of casualties this time, It seems to me that they would need some time to rebuild their forces, but your death had caused the members of the Gu Family and Demon Race to suffer emotionally. I’m afraid that they are going to mourn your death for a period of time.”

Kong Yang explained.

“Very good.”

Jiang Chen nodded with a smile. This was the effect that he wanted, which was to make everyone think that he was dead. Only then could he carry out his secret plan.

“Quickly tell me! What plan are you talking about?” Big Yellow asked impatiently.

“My next target is the Saint Origin Palace. I have promised someone that I will go there to resolve an issue. This has just created an opportunity for me to do so. Now that everyone had thought that I am dead, no one will know who I am even if I entered Saint Origin Palace. If I remained alive, the six major families would certainly continue to hunt me down. So now, I don’t need to worry about this anymore.” Jiang Chen said.

After stepping into the Great Saint realm, the Pure Land was no longer a challenging environment for him. Saint Origin Palace however, was very different as every expert and genius in there was incredible. Furthermore, he had promised Great Master Ran Feng that he would help him find some information regarding Ancestor Greenlotus.

“There will be geniuses in Saint Origin Palace who knows who you are. So how are you going to enter that place?” Kong Yang asked.

“I have my own ways.” Jiang Chen smiled, his plan had just

begun.

“Your move is fantastic. I have no idea what kind of expression they will have on their faces after they find out that you are still alive.”

Kong Yang chuckled. He couldn't imagine what expression the major six would have when they see Jiang Chen.

Anyone would agree that this move of Jiang Chen is brilliant. He was just a First Grade Great Saint. If he confronted the six major families head on, it was unlikely that he would deal a blow that was severe enough to cripple them. In addition, the Sixth Grade Great Saints would surely keep hunting him everywhere. Thereafter, the Pure Land would no longer be the place that he could go as he would constantly be leading a nomadic life. If the experts lost their patience, they might harm his family instead.

Currently, everyone thought that Jiang Chen was dead and would regard him as someone in the past. No one would ever raise this issue again, which would give Jiang Chen plenty of time to cultivate. This was the reason why Kong Yang thought that Jiang Chen's move was brilliant.

“They will know sooner or later.”

Jiang Chen's eyes narrowed. The conflicts between him and the major six was far from over, whether it was the six major families of the Pure Land or the six major halls of Saint Origin Palace. In truth, the conflicts between them was just beginning. Even if the

Pure Land could remain serene this time, Saint Origin Palace wouldn't stay that way because of his existence. I would cause an upheaval across the entire Saint Origin World.

“Jie jie... I have guessed your plan correctly.” Big Yellow grinned. He knew Jiang Chen too well. He could basically guess what would Jiang Chen do next.

“Alright. I want the two of you to guard this place for me. I have to recover my injury as soon as possible.” Jiang Chen said.

Then, he circulated the dragon transformation skill and wood essence, stimulating the rapid recovery of his injuries. Due to the severity of his injuries, it wasn't an easy task to heal them. He was afraid that it would take at least three hours to get those injuries all healed up.

During this period of time, the news of Jiang Chen's death went viral. The first place that it was spread to was the Martial Saint Dynasty. As the ruler of Eastern Continent and the place where the incident happened, they would naturally be the first to receive the news.

Everyone in Martial Saint Dynasty was heartbroken when they found out about Jiang Chen's death. Countless of them had collapsed emotionally. That kind of psychological blow was unimaginable.

In Martial Saint Dynasty, all the higher ups had gathered in the main hall of Martial Saint. The atmosphere was heavy and

suffocating. Jiang Zhenhai had become muddle-headed, he kept on chanting Jiang Chen's name as if he had gone crazy. All of his hopes and the most important part of his life left him just like that. The pain that he was suffering was incomprehensible by any outsider.

Peacock King and Lion Yan were also present in the main hall. These two Great Saints from the Demon Race had already reached the Fifth Grade Great Saint, but they didn't think that the shocking news would be news of Jiang Chen's death. The excitement that they had for their recent advancement was buried instantly by a layer of sadness.

The feeling of grief pervaded the entire hall followed by anger, melancholy and despair, but none of them spoke because they knew that nothing would change even if they said something. Jiang Chen's enemies were too strong. Even with their entire lifetime, they wouldn't have a chance to avenge his death.

It was true that Martial Saint Dynasty could rule the entire Eastern Continent, but compared to the eight major families of the Pure Land, the difference was unimaginably vast. Any opponent from that land could massacre all of them a hundred times, so how were they going to match with them in a fight?

“Chen Er, I feel proud that you have been the prince of Fragrant Sky City.”

Jiang Zhenhai wiped the beads of tears off his face. Jiang Chen's death had truly crumbled him mentally.

Chapter 941 - Returning To the Pure Land

Bang

In the distant blue blue sky, an explosion occurred in a part of the void. Three figures came out from the inside. They were none other than Jiang Chen, Big Yellow and Kong Yang. Presently, Jiang Chen had already recovered fully.

It was safe to say that Jiang Chen was the biggest winner and the largest harvester during this trip in the ancient battlefield. He had obtained two great trump cards – the heart of blaze and Ancestral Dragon Pagoda. His only regret was that he hadn't explored the other uses of the pagoda besides its defence capability.

In the aspect of offense, all it could do was act as a weapon grinding machine. Well, how could the supreme treasure of the mighty true dragons have no offensive capability? Jiang Chen assumed that it was probably because he was still too weak to use the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda as a weapon. Only three floors were condensed out of the ninety nine floors. There was still a long way to go before it hit its peak.

Despite that, the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda was still a divine item that could be used to defend. At least, it could help Jiang Chen deflect the attacks of the six Sixth Grade Great Saints if he wielded it.

“Where are we going now?”

Big Yellow looked over at Jiang Chen.

“We’ll go home first. The news of my death must have reached Martial Saint Dynasty by now. I’m afraid that my father won’t be able to bear such a tremendous blow. I have to let him know that I’m still alive.”

His eyes gazed at the direction of Martial Saint Dynasty. The most important thing right now was to go home, to tell his father, Jiang Zhenhai that he was still alive. He knew Jiang Zhenhai all too well. His father had put almost all of his thoughts and hopes on him. His son was the world and future that Jiang Zhenhai had built. If he died, it was hard to imagine how his father would go on in his life.

Without any hesitation, they flew towards Martial Saint Dynasty in a flash. At the rate that they are going, it would only be a matter of seconds before they reach their destination. They went directly into Martial Saint hall without alerting anyone as he had already executed his big plan. Only the higher ups of Martial Saint Dynasty should know about this. He wouldn’t want anyone spreading this news.

The atmosphere inside the main hall was very depressing. It was needless to say that Jiang Zhenhai had already fallen into depression and his mouth was muttering Jiang Chen’s name nonstop, while Peacock King and Lion Yan sat on their seats, silent, like two godly statues.

Yan Zhanyun, Wu Jiu, Guo Shan, Yu Zihan and Black Daoist were all present, including the higher ups of Martial Saint

Dynasty, whom all had gloomy expressions. Jiang Chen's passing had dealt a terrible blow to all of them. In their hearts, Jiang Chen wasn't only the divine figure of Martial Saint Dynasty, he was also their relative, friend and brother.

At this moment, the void inside the main hall trembled.

“Who is it?”

Peacock King and Lion Yan cried. The others might not be able to feel the faint quiver but they could sense it the moment it emerged. Now that Jiang Chen was dead, they would be the first to defend anyone who wanted to harm Martial Saint Dynasty. Jiang Chen had gifted them the Heavenly Demon Saint Art which was an act of kindness that they couldn't repay. Jiang Chen was no longer around, so they must ensure the safety of Jiang Chen's family on his behalf.

Three silhouettes emerged in the main hall. The first was a figure in snowy white clothes and with an elegant bearing. A gesture from the person exuded the aura of dominance and heroism. Who would the person be if he wasn't Jiang Chen?

“Peacock King, Lion Yan, don't panic.”

Jiang Chen chuckled.

“Jiang Chen.”

Both of them exclaimed. Their expression was the same as Kong Yang's when he saw Jiang Chen. They instantly doubted their vision.

“That's right, it's me.”

Jiang Chen shrugged. He felt quite delighted in his heart when he saw Peacock King and Lion Yan are still here. It showed that he didn't pick the wrong person. There was a saying that said that the tea would immediately cool down as soon as the person was gone. It indicated the superficial relationships of humans. Jiang Chen felt touched when he saw that Peacock King and Lion Yan were still here even after they heard that he died.

“Chen Er.”

After Jiang Zhenhai, who was previously already half dead saw Jiang Chen, he got up abruptly from his seat and stepped straight to Jiang Chen. His mood now was beyond description.

Not just Jiang Zhenhai, everyone present was shocked, their eyes widened. Wasn't Jiang Chen killed in battle? Why did he suddenly appear in front of us, alive now? What the heck is going on?

“Dad, it's my fault for letting you feel worried.”

Jiang Chen reached out to Jiang Zhenhai and wiped the tears at the edge of his eyes, feeling guilty. Since he left Fragrant Sky City, he rarely stayed with his father, but he knew that no matter where

he went and no matter how high his achievements were , this middle-aged man would always be his greatest concern, as this was his father, nothing in this world could replace this father-and-son relationship.

“Brother, you aren’t dead...”

Wu Jiu ran over and patted Jiang Chen’s shoulders with force.

“Jiang Chen, what’s this all about? Didn’t you get killed by the joint attack of the six great experts?”

Peacock King as well as Lion Yan were baffled. They knew that Jiang Chen would certainly die when they heard that he was surrounded by six Sixth Grade Great Saints. Even if he had already advanced to the Great Saint realm, he wasn’t a match for six high rank Great Saint experts. As such, they had never doubted the veracity of the news.

“Am I, Jiang Chen so easily killed?”

He shrugged.

“Dad, this was part of brother Jiang’s plan. He wasn’t killed in the joint attack, he got away from the powerful experts using his techniques. None of the six experts noticed his escape, so they concluded that brother Jiang was killed.”

Said Kong Yang with a smile.

Hiss...

After hearing this, Peacock King and Lion Yan took a breath of cold air. A First Grade Great Saint managed to slip away from the joint strike of six Sixth Grade Great Saints without leaving a trace? Who else in the Heaven and Earth could have such a heaven defying ability besides Jiang Chen?

Or perhaps, heaven defying was no longer the word to describe it.

“Dad, father-in-law, brother Jiu, I didn’t die in that battle. I, Jiang Chen wouldn’t die so easily. I only fear that you all will be too worried for me, so I immediately rushed back the moment my injuries were healed, however, I will be leaving soon. I put up this pretence to execute a plan of mine. You all don’t tell anyone that I am still alive, even to the members of Martial Saint Dynasty.”

Said Jiang Chen, in a solemn tone.

“Don’t worry, we won’t tell anyone.”

Jiang Zhenhai laughed happily. “I knew it. The son of Jiang Zhenhai won’t die so easily.”

Jiang Zhenhai recovered his majestic enthusiasm which looked completely different from his previously half-dead look.

“What’s your plan, Jiang Chen?”

Peacock King asked curiously.

“I’m going to Saint Origin Palace with another identity.”

Said Jiang Chen straightforwardly.

“Go to Saint Origin Palace?”

Lion Yan was stunned.

“Yes, my cultivation has already entered the Great Saint realm, the Pure Land is no longer a challenge to me. With my ability, it wouldn’t be difficult to change my appearance. Besides, everyone already thought that I am dead, so I just have to change my face and no one will be able to find out.”

Jiang Chen said. One should know that changing one’s look was very easy but changing the Qi was difficult. However, Jiang Chen’s current situation had given him the advantage. Everyone already knew that he was dead. So, there was no need for him to deliberately change everything about him including his Qi, also, none of the peerless experts in Saint Origin Palace had seen him before.

“It turns out that you are really going to Saint Origin Palace. This is best for you given your talent. I believe that you will be able to overturn Saint Origin Palace very soon and this is what we are

hoping to see.”

Peacock King nodded. It would irrefutably be a good thing if Jiang Chen managed to enter Saint Origin Palace. Someone like Jiang Chen wouldn't bring any peace wherever he went. Saint Origin Palace was the real master of Saint Origin World and the chaos in Saint Origin Palace would throw the entire world into turbulence. Presently, the Desolate Family was growing stronger which was very disadvantageous to the Gu Family and Demon Race. If he could roil this pool of water, it would benefit both the Gu Family and Demon Race.

“Jiang Chen, do you have any specific plans?”

Asked Lion Yan.

“The eight major families should have the right to send people to Saint Origin Palace. I will enter Saint Origin Palace with the Gu Family's identity. When you all return, tell patriarch and the others that I am heading to Saint Origin Palace, but you must not speak about it openly. All of my plans will go in vain if the six major families find out that I am not yet dead.”

Jiang Chen explained delicately.

“Of course.”

Peacock King and Lion Yan nodded. They understood that Jiang Chen's death was only to outsmart the major six. If today's new

was spread out, all of his efforts would be wasted, and they knew how crucial things would become if this cover was blown up.

“Time is of the essence, we will return to the Pure Land now.”

Said Jiang Chen. He bode farewell to Jiang Zhenhai and the others.

“Chen Er, be careful, always.”

Jiang Zhenhai reminded Jiang Chen. Although he had no idea what Saint Origin Place was, he could guess that it was a force that was greater than the major powers of the Pure Land and not even Jiang Chen could offend them at the moment, otherwise, he wouldn't feign his death.

“Don't worry, dad. I know what to do. Why are you worrying so much for your son even though you know what your son is capable of?”

Jiang Chen placed his hands on Jiang Zhenhai's shoulder, showing the demeanor of a prince back when he was still in Fragrant Sky City.

“Haha! I'm not, of course.”

Jiang Zhenhai laughed aloud. His current mood became better and his spirit was lifted back up to its original level.

Then, Jiang Chen, Peacock King and the others departed Martial Saint Dynasty. Before he left the Eastern Continent, he summoned the devil and the earth devil beast.

“Master.”

The two great devils saluted Jiang Chen.

“From now on, you two don’t have to follow me anymore. Stay here and protect Martial Saint Dynasty. If anything goes wrong here, you two won’t be living anymore.”

Said Jiang Chen in a cold tone.

Chapter 942 - How Did You Do That?

“Yes, master.”

The Earth devil beast and the devil wouldn't dare neglect the order. They wouldn't have the slightest bit of resistance in fulfilling the duties given by Jiang Chen. Afterwards, the both of them vanished completely and hid in the dark to avoid putting too much pressure on the people of Martial Saint Dynasty. After all, they weren't Great Saint cultivators, they were the mighty devils. Their emergence would bring a serious impact to them.

Martial Saint Dynasty Jiang Chen's home, the place where Jiang Chen cared for the most. He didn't want to see this place being turned into a great force or a major power, nor enter the Divine Continent, or the Pure Land. He just wanted this place to be safe.

“Jiang Chen, now that all of the six major families thought that you were killed in battle, this chapter of chaos is considered to be over. Even the Dark Shadow organization is eliminated, there is almost nothing else that you should worry about. With the protection of the earth devil beast and the devil, Martial Saint Dynasty will be fine as far as their safety is concerned. Thus, you don't have to worry about it. Will you be heading to the Gu Family now?”

Peacock King asked.

“Yeah. I require help from the Gu Family to get me into Saint Origin Palace. We will split up here to avoid attracting the

suspicion of outsiders. Peacock King, when the two of you return, tell only the reliable higher ups that I'm still alive. Remember to keep this a secret."

Jiang Chen said solemnly. If his faked death were to be leaked, all of his plans would be ruined.

"Don't worry, I already know what to do."

Peacock King patted Jiang Chen's shoulder reassuringly. The Demon Race and Jiang Chen were riding on the same boat now. In other words, they had already placed all of their hopes and future on Jiang Chen.

"You want to use the help of the Gu Family to enter Saint Origin Palace? Then where's master dog going?"

Big Yellow looked at Jiang Chen.

"Naturally you will also be going to Saint Origin Palace. However, you have to follow Peacock King back to the Demon Race first, and then, let them send you and Kong Yang to Saint Origin Palace. Then, we'll have our good time there. Well, of course, you have to pretend that you don't know me in Saint Origin Palace."

Jiang Chen patted Big Yellow's head and said.

"Jiang Chen's right. As long as the geniuses of any major family stepped into the Great Saint realm, the geniuses will be

immediately be sent to Saint Origin Palace to further their cultivation. Furthermore, Saint Origin Palace will also recruit some selected geniuses with extraordinary talent. The moment you enter Saint Origin Palace, you have already become a member. Some of them weren't even willing to return and have already established a family there. Due to the effects of the cultivation environment, the babies that were born there were all peerless geniuses. You all have to be careful when you arrive there. After all, Saint Origin Palace is incomparable to Pure Land. Now that Big Yellow and Yang Er had advanced to the Great Saint realm, they are already eligible to enter Saint Origin Palace to cultivate.”

Said Peacock King.

“Kaka! Good! I would like to see how it's like in the legendary Saint Origin Palace.”

Big Yellow was extremely excited, Kong Yang was delighted as well. It was an honourable thing, to be able to cultivate in Saint Origin Palace. It was a place where countless of geniuses yearned to go. Everyone knew that Saint Origin Palace was built by the supreme experts of the eight major families back then. It was said that it was directly connected to the Immortal World, and was able receive certain traces of immortal Qi from above. Across the whole Saint Origin Palace, the Heaven and Earth Yuan Qi there was many times thicker than the outside world. It was absolutely a conducive environment for cultivation.

However, a place like that was packed with great geniuses and experts. Although Jiang Chen and Big Yellow could reign supreme in the Pure land, they would need to stay humble in Saint Origin

Palace.

After that, Jiang Chen, Peacock King and the rest flew towards two different directions heading back to the Pure Land. In order to prevent suspicions, even Big Yellow had to part from him. In truth, it was best if the both of them weren't seen together.

From the beginning until now, Big Yellow had become the symbol of Jiang Chen's existence. If Big Yellow was present somewhere, Jiang Chen would probably be there too. Now that Jiang Chen was thought to be dead, it was vitally important that they separated themselves.

Currently in Pure Land, the news had already been spread thoroughly. Virtually everybody knows about Jiang Chen's death. Every city, every alley and every street were filled with discussions about Jiang Chen. He was a peerless figure, even if he had already fallen, everybody still admired him and his fame was destined to remain for aeons.

"It is such a pity that the famous Jiang Chen is dead. If he didn't die, he would certainly become a bright star in the future."

"Exactly. I heard that he initiated the Dragon Phoenix Major Tribulation and could even concoct the legendary Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon Pill during the major tribulation which was simply heaven defying. Unfortunately, he has offended the six major families and ended up dying tragically for it."

"That's for sure. The major six family have decided to kill him. I

also heard that all the patriarchs of those families have personally gone to deal with him. Although it was a little shameless, it showed how powerful Jiang Chen was. He made even the major six fear him. It's conceivable that if this monstrous genius was allowed to grow, he would surely be the greatest problem for the major six, bringing inestimable losses to them."

"No doubt that it's a pity to see such a talent dead, but his existence is going to leave a deep mark in the history of Pure Land. Both the second, Shi Han and the first genius of Sky Ranking, Desolate Yuan died in his hands. I also heard about the world-shaking event that he had killed half of the experts of the major six during his tribulation. Thus, even if he died, it was worth it. Given the serious casualties the major six have suffered, I'm afraid that they will take some time to restore their forces."

.....

Everyone was in the midst of discussion and arguments about Jiang Chen. Although they all thought that Jiang Chen's death was inevitable due to the overpowering experts that he had offended, they still couldn't help admiring him and lament his death. No matter what generation it was, the fall of a peerless genius would no doubt become a glorious history.

Gu Family.

"No, little Chen won't die! I won't believe it!"

In Lan Ning World, Wu Ningzhu was overwhelmed by her

emotions when she heard of Jiang Chen's death. All along, she was portraying a character of coldness and toughness. During that time in Southern Continent, she was known as a tough holy lady. For so many years, she had never let her emotions run wild like today.

Jiang Chen was an indelible part of her heart. All this time, he had been an omnipotent existence. From Eastern Continent to Southern Continent, she knew how many strong enemies he had killed, but those were just the stepping stones to pave his path of life. He had long been a miracle creator and an undying legend.

But then, now, the news that came to her ears was of Jiang Chen's death. He died in the battle, simultaneously killed by six Sixth Grade Great Saints. How could Wu Ningzhu possible accept this exceedingly heavy news?

“Ning Er.”

Gu Lan's felt the heartache. Thinking about Jiang Chen – that handsome young man dressed in snowy white robe – gave her pain, like a knife slicing her heart. She knew that it was all because of Jiang Chen that Wu Ningzhu could find her, allowing their family to reunite again.

It was hard to imagine her daughter's mood right now, when her fiancé made the ultimate sacrifice in the battle.

“Ai! That time, Prince Jiang has helped us defended Wuyang City, saved plenty of us. Now he has also given our family the chance to reunite again. I, Wu Tianyang will never be able fully

repay such kindnesses in my lifetime. When I came to Pure Land, I never thought that Prince Jiang would.....”

Wu Tianyang was a resolute man, but he too was overshadowed with grief. Jiang Chen’s kindness to them were just too much, many folds heavier than even a mountain.

“Ning Er, you have to accept the inevitable truth. Uncle has tried his best.”

Gu Xuantian heaved a sigh. He had anticipated that Wu Ningzhu would experience agony sooner or later, so he decided to tell her the truth directly.

“No! Little Chen will never die.”

Wu Ningzhu shook her head wildly, unable to accept Jiang Chen’s death.

Gu Lan embraced Wu Ningzhu in her arms despite feeling pained. She understood that despite her absence in the ancient battlefield, a junior like Jiang Chen who had just advanced to Great Saint realm would never survive the joint strike of six Sixth Grade Great Saints.

He was totally besieged by the six powerful Great Saints. Even if Gu Xuantian and Lang Xingtian were stronger, they simply couldn’t protect Jiang Chen. After all, that was a siege attack of six might Great Saints.

“Sister Ning, I feel relieved, seeing you crying so much for me.”

At this moment, a sound came from the void all of a sudden. That familiar voice froze Wu Ningzhu. Then, everyone looked over at the source of the voice. They saw a ripple of a wave, before a young man in white walked out like a ghost, with a brilliant smile, staring at Wu Ningzhu, seemingly interested.

“Little Chen.”

“Jiang Chen.”

“Patriarch, father-in-law, mother-in-law. Your expressions make me feel uncomfortable. Congratulations to you that your family has finally reunited.”

Jiang Chen strode towards four of them and cupped his fists at Wu Tianyang.

Wu Ningzhu raced into Jiang Chen’s embrace, her sad face melted into a smile. “I knew that you wouldn’t die so easily.”

“Jiang Chen, what is this all about?”

Gu Xuantian couldn’t resist the urge to know the reason behind all these. At that time, he saw clearly how powerful the joint strike of the six great experts was. It was absolutely not a strike that a

heaven defying First Grade Great Saint could dodge, but Jiang Chen was now looking far from dead. In other words, Jiang Chen had escaped, unharmed. Gu Xuantian wanted very badly to know how Jiang Chen did so.

Chapter 943 - Gu Chen

“My apologies for letting patriarch worry for me. It won’t be that easy for them to kill me. After refining the heart of blaze, I have acquired a pair of fiery wings. If combined together with my spatial skill, I will be able to penetrate through voids even if the six Sixth Grade Great Saints are present. In fact, I can also achieve that even if there are sixty of them.”

Jiang Chen smiled. He had nothing to hide from these people.

“Smart a*s! That means that you are the biggest winner of the trial in the ancient battlefield this time. Not only have you made the major six suffer incredible losses, you have also obtained such a valuable treasure.”

Gu Xuantian was very delighted. Before this, Jiang Chen’s death had really affected him emotionally. When it was revealed that Jiang Chen was still alive, he felt a huge sense of relief and was also very pleased. He truly believed in Jiang Chen’s ability to escape. One should realise that he too, didn’t sense Jiang Chen’s presence before he revealed himself. This was enough to explain how horrifying Jiang Chen had become.

It would render anyone speechless to know that a First Grade Great Saint had such a heaven defying ability. In fact, he had been creating a lot of miracles along his way here. The miracle that he created this time was the one that really shocked Gu Xuantian’s.

“If I didn’t fake my death, the major six would certainly not let

me go. Given my current strength, I'm still too weak to handle the wild bombardment from the six major families. When that time comes, Gu Family and Demon Race will also be involved, throwing the entire Pure Land into chaos. Now that I am 'dead', it will save me from a lot of troubles. They will face their end when I wage a war on them next time."

Said Jiang Chen with a smile.

Gu Xuantian nodded slightly while staring at Jiang Chen with praise. This young man was too scary. Not only did he have a heaven defying talent and potential, he also possessed incredible wisdom. Even he had to admit that this plan of him faking his own death was good. It could help Jiang Chen to completely get rid of the six major families' attention while allowing himself the time to enhance his strength.

"What are you going to do next?"

Gu Xuantian asked. He believed that Jiang Chen wasn't a man without goals.

"I am going to Saint Origin Palace."

Jiang Chen told everything about this plan to Gu Xuantian. Gu Xuantian nodded following the conversation, feeling that there was nothing wrong with Jiang Chen going there. After all, someone like Jiang Chen had to come into contact with Saint Origin Palace sooner or later. This suggested that the chaos would finally descend in Saint Origin Palace. Jiang Chen's arrival would

stir up an upheaval across Saint Origin Palace, this would disrupt the growth plan of Desolate Family which would benefit Gu Family and Demon Race.

“You should have a more concrete plan, right?”

Gu Xuantian asked.

There was a trace of happiness on Jiang Chen's face. His facial structure twisted, sounds of cracking were heard from within his body. In the blink of an eye, he had completely changed into a person with a different appearance. The current Jiang Chen looked a lot more ordinary but he was unable to conceal the overbearing aura that exuded from between his eyebrows.

“From now on, I am called Gu Chen. It is up to patriarch to decide what kind of identity I shall assume when entering Saint Origin Palace.”

Jiang Chen said. Gu Xuantian wasn't a fool, so Jiang Chen need not say what he was going to do next. The patriarch would know what to do after seeing Jiang Chen change his appearance right in front of him. Jiang Chen believed that the patriarch would make the proper arrangements for him after this.

“Got it, you don't have to worry about the matter in Saint Origin Palace. Take a few days of rest in Lan Ning World. Gu Liufeng is now in his seclusion period and he has taken a Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon Pill, I believe that he will be able to break into the Great Saint realm within these few days. After that, I will send

the two of you to Saint Origin Palace.”

Said Gu Xuantian.

“All right.”

Jiang Chen nodded. His impression of Gu Liufeng was quite good. Gu Liufeng’s cultivation grade was originally half a step away from Great Saint, meaning only one step away from the Great Saint realm. After consuming the Nine Solar Lightning-Dragon Pill, advancing to the Great Saint realm would definitely not be a problem.

In the following three days, Jiang Chen stayed in Lan Ning World, accompanying Wu Ningzhu and her family while waiting for Gu Liufeng to break through to the Great Saint realm.

On the third day, lightning hovered in the sky above Gu Family. The thunder clouds were thick and dense. Gu Liufeng had successfully reached the Great Saint realm. A beam of light shot out from the seclusion chamber at a quick speed towards the outer region of Gu Family.

Like Big Yellow, Gu Liufeng must find a remote place to undergo his heavenly tribulation, otherwise, it would turn the entire Gu Family into ruins. It was difficult to defend against the heavenly tribulation because the more defensive you become, the more powerful its strikes would be.

The emergence of a Great Saint genius from the young generation was a rare occurrence and was considered a good thing to Gu Family. Gu Liufeng's advancement has created enormous movements. Even experts across the Pure Land could sense the vibration of the heavenly tribulation.

Gu Liufeng's heavenly tribulation made the major six uncomfortable, especially Desolate Family and Shi Family where their former geniuses – Desolate Yuan and Shi Han – were supposedly considered to be greater geniuses than Gu Liufeng. Currently, Gu Liufeng was going to finish his advancement in Great Saint realm whereas Desolate Yuan and Shi Han had gone to the netherworld. Their hate towards Jiang Chen intensified when they thought about Kong Yang, who had also advanced to the Great Saint realm. They felt that Jiang Chen was too lucky to have such an instant and quick death.

In any case, the man known as Jiang Chen no longer existed in this world which relieved their worries. Despite being the enemies of Jiang Chen, they couldn't deny that Jiang Chen was a rare genius that only appeared once in ten thousand years. If someone like him was given time to grow, his achievements in the future was bound to be limitless.

In the main hall of Gu Family, more than a dozen higher ups had gathered together. Gu Xuantian was sitting on the top, beside him was an ordinary man in white clothes. He was none other than Jiang Chen. Everyone who was present here was the most trusted members of Gu Family, so Gu Xuantian didn't conceal Jiang Chen's identity from them.

After learning that Jiang Chen wasn't dead, everyone was shocked, each of them having the exact same expression as Gu Xuantian had the moment when he saw Jiang Chen, but there was joy within their shocked face.

Jiang Chen currently had gotten greater. More importantly, he had gotten the acknowledgement from all the higher ups. How crazy was the fact that one could flee away from the joint strike of six Sixth Grade Great Saints, unharmed? Not to mention, Jiang Chen was only a First Grade Great Saint. By now, almost no one would doubt the ability of this monstrous genius. They also no longer dared to foresee the future of this extraordinary genius, however they could imagine that in the near future, the Saint Origin Palace would be thrown into chaos because of Jiang Chen's existence.

They have already known all the things that happened in Eastern Continent. They considered that the number of miracles he had created was just too many, something that others term as heaven defying. If they were judging him in the aspect of luck, he was certainly a man with great luck.

At this point, Gu Liufeng went into the main hall elegantly and casually. The heavenly tribulation he experienced was a Six Major Tribulation, which wasn't really a scary one. That meant that he was able to recover very quickly and had almost no after-tribulation injuries. When he thought about the Dragon Phoenix Major Tribulation initiated by Jiang Chen, he sighed.

After the completion of his advancement, he was called by Gu Xuantian to proceed to the main hall. Without making any delays,

he headed straight to the main hall.

“Patriarch, elders.”

Gu Liufeng greeted everyone. He felt robust and high-spirited after the advancement, but when he spotted the young man in white who was sitting beside Gu Xuantian, he froze. He knew everyone in the main hall except that white youth. What puzzled him was that this youth was entitled to stand beside Gu Xuantian. One should know that even he, the number one genius of Gu Family, didn't have the privilege to stand beside Gu Xuantian.

“Liufeng, let me introduce him to you. His name is Gu Chen. He was just a little beggar when I adopted him last time. I have been secretly training him and today, he has also advanced to Great Saint realm. I am going to send you both to Saint Origin Palace for further cultivation.”

Gu Xuantian said with a smile. This was the identity that he had designed for Jiang Chen. Without a doubt, this identity worked perfectly. It wouldn't draw any suspicion when people learnt that the youth in white was a secretly adopted kid of the patriarch.

“What? A beggar? An adopted child?”

Gu Liufeng felt dazed. What kind of joke was this? When had the patriarch adopted a beggar? Besides, this youth looked even younger than him, but still had advanced to Great Saint realm. How could it be possible for Gu Family to hide this peerless genius for so many years?

“Haha...”

Seeing Gu Liufeng's expression, Gu Xuantian and the others burst into laughter.

“Brother Gu, congratulations on your advancement. Take a look again at who I am.”

Jiang Chen approached Gu Liufeng and restore his original appearance.

“Jiang, Jiang Chen...”

Gu Liufeng cried, as if he had seen a ghost, feeling a sense of dizziness in his head. It was a truly astonishing scene.

Immediately, Jiang Chen switched back to Gu Chen's face while Gu Xuantian told everything to Gu Liufeng, including the plan of sending Jiang Chen and him to Saint Origin Palace.

Gu Liufeng sighed, feeling as if he was in a dream, but he knew that it was the reality. Jiang Chen wasn't dead. His eyes was like the others, amazed at the fact that Jiang Chen was able to get away from the joint attack of six great experts.

In any case, the fact that Jiang Chen survived naturally made him happy and excited. One should know that Jiang Chen had

once saved his life in the ancient battlefield. If it wasn't for Jiang Chen's help, he probably would've died. On that day, seeing Jiang Chen being struck to death by six great experts, he could do nothing about it, creating a non-refillable huge void of guilt in his heart.

Now that Jiang Chen wasn't dead, the void of guilt in his heart dissipated.

“Jiang Chen, Gu Liufeng, these are the tokens to enter the Saint Origin Palace. Take it. Shortly after this, I will help you two create a spatial passageway that connects straight to Saint Origin Palace. You will use these tokens to enter Saint Origin Palace, but I have to remind you that Saint Origin Palace isn't like Pure Land. Be careful in whatever you do.”

Gu Xuantian reminded in serious tone.

Jiang Chen and Gu Liufeng took the token. It was made of unknown materials that gave people a feeling of heaviness, and there was a large word 'Gu' carved distinctively on the surface.

Chapter 944 - The Saint Origin Palace

Although Saint Origin Palace was built by the ancestors of the major eight families of Pure Land, it had developed its own system after a hundred years. Saint Origin Palace was divided into eight sub-palaces. The sub-palace occupied by Gu Family was called Gu Palace. The token that Jiang Chen and Gu Liufeng was holding was the symbol of Gu Palace.

“Jiang Chen, Liufeng, drip a drop of your blood on the token and they will be able to sense it on the other side, then someone will be sent to meet you two. After that, you will become a member of Gu Palace,” said Gu Xuantian.

Jiang Chen and Gu Liufeng tore the skin of their finger to drip a drop of blood on the token.

*Weng... *Weng... *

Both of the tokens shook abruptly and produced buzzing sounds, it seemed to have some strange connections with the void. Both of them kept their tokens and were ready to go to Saint Origin Palace. Gu Liufeng was feeling very excited as Saint Origin Palace was a dreamland of countless of geniuses. In other words, Saint Origin Palace was like the highest institution for cultivation. Anyone who entered that place to further their cultivation would not only gain access to superior resources, but more importantly, the symbolic status and identity that represented honour.

“I’ll send you two to Saint Origin Palace now.”

Gu Xuantian stood up, his face hardened. All this while, only the overlords of the major eight had the right to open the gate to Saint Origin Palace. A pale yellow talisman appeared in Gu Xuantian's hand. The top of the talisman was full of complicated talisman marks which exuded the Qi of dignity.

He struck out a divine light column into the talisman. It burst with a bang and a virtual portal materialized. Every Great Saint expert in the hall could sense the spatial wave coming from the illusory portal.

This was a very firm spatial passageway that was refined by the supreme master. It connected directly to Saint Origin Palace.

“Jiang Chen, Liufeng, are you two ready?” Gu Xuantian looked at the two of them and said.

They nodded and then leaped into the portal, vanishing in a blink.

“Patriarch, do you think Gu Palace will accept Jiang Chen? Saint Origin Palace has a hundred years of development, they are virtually detached from the eight major families of Pure Land. Although Gu Family and Gu Palace have the same origin, Gu Palace no longer cares about Gu Family.” The great elder of Gu Family said.

“This will have to depend on Jiang Chen's own ability. Regardless of whether Gu Palace attaches importance to us,

everyone should know the situation in Saint Origin Palace. Desolate Family have wild ambitions and soon they are going to dominate the entire Saint Origin Palace. I fear that this will bring destruction upon our people there. Jiang Chen's emergence is a turnaround. He is a man with an unusually gifted talent and great luck. I believe he can even turn Saint Origin Palace turbulent," said Gu Xuantian.

In the spatial passageway, Jiang Chen and Gu Liufeng were looking around at those ever-rotating five-coloured current. They didn't need to exert any spatial energy because this passageway was the safest and most solid spatial passageway. There wouldn't be a problem travelling inside it.

This was probably the most stable passageway that Jiang Chen had travelled.

"Brother Jiang, I really didn't think that you could escape the joint strike of the six mighty experts. That really shocked me. I, Gu Liufeng, had never admired anyone in the past, so you are definitely the first person I admire." Gu Liufeng said with a smile.

"Brother Gu, from now on, you have to change the way you call me. My current name is Gu Chen. So you can call me 'Little Chen' like how Big Yellow and the others did," said Jiang Chen with a smile.

It was very important that they paid attention to how he's addressed because his name was no longer Jiang Chen but Gu Chen.

“It’s my negligence. Saint Origin Palace is still very far away. I estimate that it would take another hour before we reach our destination. By the way, I have connections with many brothers in Gu Palace. I’m sure that they will take good care of us once we arrive there,” said Gu Liufeng.

Jiang Chen smiled without saying a word. He was afraid that Gu Palace wasn’t as simple as Gu Liufeng imagined as Saint Origin Palace had been developing for nearly a hundred years, many changes could have occurred within this period. He feared that even the eight major families in Saint Origin Palace would be unusually haughty compared to their original families.

If Saint Origin Palace was their headquarters, the eight families of Pure Land would be their branches. Of course, this was merely Jiang Chen’s conjecture. As for the specifics, it could only be known when he reached there.

An hour later, a brilliant light appeared in front of them. It was getting brighter as they moved and both of their eyes also sparkled upon seeing that.

“We are about to reach the end of the passageway,” said Jiang Chen with a composed expression.

After all, he was the Greatest Saint under the heavens. What kind of situations hadn’t he seen and experienced before?

Gu Liufeng was feeling so excited that all of his emotions were

present on his face. His tone quivered, “Saint Origin Palace, I have finally come.”

It was Gu Liufeng’s lifelong dream to enter Saint Origin Palace. Today, his dream had finally come true, there was no way he couldn’t stay unexcited.

Bang *Bang*

At the end of the passageway, both of them were shoved by the spatial force, forcing them out of the passageway. They stumbled and managed to gain their balance. When they raised their heads, they saw that they had entered another spatial world, or a new world.

Looking at the vast area was masses of white fog that blended with Heaven and Earth Yuan Qi. There were some trees so tall it pierced through the sky. The Qi here was akin to the legendary utopia that could fascinate anyone.

“The Heaven and Earth Yuan Qi here is very dense. This is paradise for cultivation and training.”

Gu Liufeng couldn’t help exclaiming with delight.

“I can sense traces of an immortal Qi here. Sure enough, this is a place of fortune.”

Jiang Chen found it astonishing. This spatial zone almost fitted

the description of an independent world. That year when he slashed open the gates of Immortal World, the immortal Qi he sensed was similar to the Qi he was sensing right now. But only a small amount of immortal Qi could be found within the Heaven and Earth Yuan Qi. In comparison to this place with the true Immortal World would make a huge difference.

Despite that, the environment here was incomparable to Pure Land. One should know that even if only traces of immortal Qi was mixed with the Heaven and Earth Yuan Qi, it would benefit the cultivators so much.

Try to imagine those cultivators who were born in this spatial zone. Since young, they had absorbed the Heaven and Earth Yuan Qi from here and the benefits they obtained were simply unimaginable. To say it in a casual way, those who were born here were the geniuses of the geniuses when they were compared with the geniuses in the outside world.

Jiang Chen and Gu Liufeng looked around and found out that the spatial zone was boundless. There were a several immortal cranes flying above them at random times that made the place look more like a true paradise.

“Litte Chen, this place huge, much bigger than I have ever imagined.” Gu Liufeng said with amazement oozing in his tone.

“It is true that this is at least 100, 000 miles wide which is enough to compare with a small world. It explains why Saint Origin Palace has been isolated from Pure Land for nearly a hundred years. I’m afraid that the eight palaces in Saint Origin Palace no longer put

the major eight of Pure Land in their eyes. No one knew how many of them are born in this place over the hundred years. Due to these people beginning their cultivation here since young, they definitely won't have any sentimental feelings towards their original home – Pure Land.” Jiang Chen stated.

Before coming here, even he couldn't even imagine that Saint Origin Palace would be such a magnificent existence. That year when he reigned over the world, Pure Land was the peak existence in Saint Origin World.

“Hundreds of thousands of miles of area isn't a big issue to Great Saints, but the spatial zone here is very firm. Not even a Ninth Grade Great Saint is capable of creating such a space. It is most likely that this spatial zone is made by the immortals of the eight families. But I heard that after advancing from Ninth Grade Great Saint to Immortal, the person will rise to the Immortal World. I wonder if there is any immortal in Saint Origin Palace,” said Gu Liufeng.

“Immortal.”

Jiang Chen muttered under his breath. Because of this word, because of this objective, he had devoted so much effort to it in his past life. Given his ability, it was very simple for him to reach the realm of immortals, but too bad he had fallen at Saint Cliff.”

Now that he got another chance to relive his life, not only he would return to the pinnacle in his past life, he would also enter the legendary Immortal World to make up for the regret in his previous life.

“Little Chen, have you noticed that there aren’t any buildings in this area? It’s as if Saint Origin Palace is just a big barren desert and we don’t know which direction will bring us to the Gu Palace,” said Gu Liufeng. After scanning around the area, he found no buildings, and they were lost as this was their first time coming here.

“Don’t worry, someone will come to lead us the way.”

Jiang Chen shrugged his shoulders, his face was relaxed. Since Gu Xuantian didn’t speak anything about the location of Gu Palace, someone would come to direct them. He said that the experts in Gu Palace would be able to sense their existence once they drip a drop of blood on the token. Plus, Gu Xuantian should have already told them about their arrival in Saint Origin Palace, so Jiang Chen believed that Gu Palace would send someone to meet them.

Sure enough, as soon as Jiang Chen’s voice faded, three silhouettes flew towards them from a direction, and after a brief moment, they reached them.

All three of them were youngsters. Their faces were brimming with pride. The leader looked like a 20 year old young man but had incredible cultivation grade, peak Second Grade Great Saint. Beside him was two youths, one was peak First Grade Great Saint while the other was Second Grade Great Saint.

They were no doubt the geniuses of Gu Family. Judging by their Qi, the two youths beside the leader weren’t weaker than their

leader. Thus, the difference wasn't mainly in strength but in status. The young leader was so arrogant that he used his nose to look at someone. There was a natural sense of superiority on his facial expression, much greater than the other two.

“Liufeng, congratulations on your advancement to Great Saint realm. Your brother has been waiting for you for a long time. Haha!”

One of the youths immediately greeted Gu Liufeng with a bear hug. He had the weakest cultivation grade among the three, peak First Grade Great Saint.

“Brother Liuhui.”

Gu Liufeng knew this youth. He was called Gu Liuhui. A year ago, they were brothers with close relationship.

Chapter 945 - The Arrogant Newbie

A brotherly reunion was naturally a joyful thing. Another young man that was a Second Grade Great Saint came forth and patted Gu Liufeng's shoulder. "Not bad kid! Your talent is above mine and Liuhui as we are a few years older than you. I never thought that you could catch up to us so soon."

"Brother Liuying must be overpraising me."

Gu Liufeng found it hard to suppress his joyfulness. These two youths were also geniuses of the Gu Family. They were sent to Saint Origin Palace when they reached Great Saint realm. He was moved when these two senior geniuses came to personally greet him.

"Humph! People say that one's talent is judged based on their extraordinary abilities. I don't see anything extraordinary on you. The Gu Family of the Pure Land really has declined a lot. It seems like we need to set a strict standard before accepting any of you. We can't just let anyone in so easily."

At this time, that prideful young man let out a cold humph, and looked at Gu Liufeng in disdain.

After hearing those words, Gu Liuying and Gu Liuhui's faces suddenly darkened, but instead of saying anything, they let out an awkward smile. Gu Liufeng however couldn't stand it. As the number one genius of the Gu Family, one should know how honourable he was. He didn't expect that not only would he be

disdained by someone not long after he arrived in Saint Origin Palace, not to mention, he was disdained by one of his own people, a genius of Gu Palace. This was certainly made him feel unpleasant.

“Who are you?”

Gu Liufeng asked with a frown.

“By the way, Liufeng, let me introduce you. This is Young Master Ling, named Gu Ling. He is a rare genius in Gu Palace. Young Master Ling was born in Saint Origin Palace and had gained access to a rich amount of cultivation resources since young. He has reached the peak of Second Grade Great Saint at a very young age, which is impressively amazing.”

Gu Liuhui hurriedly introduced Gu Ling to Gu Liufeng, but his insinuating tone was obvious to anyone present. Although he admitted that Gu Ling was amazing and great on the surface, he implied that Gu Ling wasn't as remarkable as it was thought. The main reason for Gu Ling's achievement was the cultivation environment and also the cultivation resources provided by Gu Palace. If they had the same advantage as Gu Ling since young, their achievements would certainly be greater than his.

The scene reaffirmed Jiang Chen's previous assumption. Sure enough, the geniuses in Saint Origin Palace had already become distant from their original families in the Pure Land as Saint Origin Palace had been separated from the Pure Land for so long. Putting the other families aside, Gu Palace and the Gu Family had been completely separated from each other. Gu Ling's attitude was

proof to that. He was a genius that was born in this independent spatial world, who look down upon those who came from the Pure Land. In his eyes, Gu Liufeng and the others who came from the Pure Land were foreigners. To him, it was just Gu Palace's kindness that allowed these foreigners to come in to further their cultivation.

No doubt, a hundred years was a long time. No one knew exactly how many geniuses had been born here as the number was still increasing which widened the disparity even more. By now, Gu Palace had completely deviated from its original core. Those old seniors who came from the Pure Land, the higher ups who built the Gu Palace were now pursuing a higher realm of cultivation, leaving no time for them to care about the things in Gu Palace. It was conceivable that after another hundred years, Saint Origin Palace would really abandon their original families – the major eight.

“Gu Liufeng, it's your privilege that I, Young Master Ling have come personally to welcome the two of you. Of course, it wasn't entirely because I wanted to welcome you two but I also want to see how the number one genius of Gu Family who has been hiding in the dark looks like. Your name is Gu Chen right?”

Gu Ling's stare shifted to Jiang Chen. After a moment of scanning, “Looks like you are just as common as him. Gu Xuantian said that you are the greatest secret weapon, a rare genius that only appears every ten thousand years. These are all just boasting. You are just a grunt that was picked up by Gu Xuantian out of sympathy. Despite Gu Xuantian's high regards in you, you are just an outsider. So, it's better to stay obedient when you reach Gu Palace.”

Hearing his words, Jiang Chen rolled his eyes for a few times. Was this how the aborigines of Saint Origin Palace treat ‘outsiders’? It seemed like every disciple who came from the Pure Land wouldn’t get any respect here. This explains the fact that Gu Liuying and Gu Liuhui didn’t even dare let out a breath of grievance.

However, he was holding in his laughter when he heard about how Gu Xuantian boasted about him. It seemed like Gu Xuantian had already introduced him to them secretly, saying that he was a secret killing weapon that only revealed himself today. No wonder Gu Ling had come in person to judge him, because the boasting in itself was no doubt impressive.

Now, it was apparent that the Gu Family and Gu Palace were both different parties. Let’s not talk about the major six who would oppose them. This Gu Palace alone was going to give them a headache. Despite the daily hiccups that might occur to them, it wasn’t a big deal as Jiang Chen had already faced countless of such events.

“You... we are all members of Gu Family, we belong to the same lineage. However, why are you oppressing us the moment we arrive here. What’s the meaning of this?”

Gu Liufeng cried out in anger.

“Shut up. Who do you think you are? Dare to speak loudly in front of me? It would be your fault if I cripple you today. But due

to this being your first time arriving here, I will let this matter go. If there is a next time, I won't be as forgiving anymore."

Gu Ling berated loudly.

Gu Liufeng burst into rage and was about to spit out words but was stopped by the two youths.

"Why are you two pulling me for? We are all the people of the Gu Family, what right does he have to treat us in such a manner?"

Gu Liufeng absolutely couldn't bear such a humiliation. It had always been his greatest dream to enter Saint Origin Palace. In his heart, Gu Palace was akin to Gu Family, with both being his family, but he didn't imagine that Gu Ling would betray his expectation, treating him like a foreigner and a beggar. This kind of psychological blow was simply unbearable. Right now, he had a feeling that the dream which he fought for, through ordeals and hardships wasn't as pleasant as he had expected. The difference between his dream and reality was just too much.

"Liufeng, you don't need to speak a lot of nonsense while confronting someone like this."

Jiang Chen walked over to Gu Liufeng while narrowing his eyes at Gu Ling. Although his eyes were slightly squinted, it still couldn't stop the brilliant light of coldness that shoot out from it.

"You said 'who do you think you are?' to him, but in my eyes, I

would like to ask the same question to you – who do you think you are? Don't use your sense of superiority to oppress others. Even if you are born in Gu Palace, so what? Your ancestors were all from the Pure Land, so what are you so proud for?"

Each line of word clearly lacked courtesy and politeness. Jiang Chen always used the simplest way to deal with someone like him, crushing their sense of superiority, letting them fall heavily from the top and let them know that there was nothing that they should be proud of.

"Gu Chen!"

Gu Liuying and the other youth's facial expression changed drastically. They were also informed of the background of Gu Chen. When Gu Xuantian sent the information to them, all the boasting that he had put on Gu Chen almost made him as great as an immortal, having totally suppressed the first genius of Gu Family, Gu Liufeng, but they didn't expect Gu Chen to be so audacious that he would argue with Gu Ling.

However, they reasoned that it must be because Gu Chen and Gu Liufeng lacked the knowledge of Gu Palace's situation and rules, and had brought along the usual habits they had in the Pure Land. The people of the Pure Land wouldn't gain any privileged status in Gu Palace, and offending Gu Ling wouldn't bring anything good.

In fact, the two of them really wanted to punch this Gu Ling on the face. Everyone who came from the Pure Land had been nursing their grievances against him. So, they had to stop Gu Chen as he was merely a First Grade Great Saint. He would never be an

opponent of Gu Ling if the argument escalated into a fight.

“You bastard! What did you just say?”

Gu Ling raged.

“You can’t even understand what I said? Not only do you despise your ancestors, you seem to even have obstacles in your intelligence. A mentally disabled person dares to look down on others.”

Jiang Chen obviously didn’t show any quarters.

After hearing this, the two youths stumbled under their feet and almost fainted. Why hadn’t they known that Gu Chen had such a hot temper? Now, they couldn’t stop him even if they wanted to. They knew Gu Ling too well. He must be feeling very angry right now and would never let Gu Chen go.

“Good, good. Very good. Of the so many people who came from the Pure Land, I have never seen someone as arrogant as you. You have disrespected me with your words and you are, without a doubt, courting death. I will let you know the consequences of offending me.”

Gu Ling’s anger had gone out of control. Yuan Qi started to ripple on his palm. It was the fluctuation of a violent energy. He was completely infuriated. No one had ever spoken to him in such a way before. Today, he must teach this arrogant guy a lesson, to let

him know that he has no authority to meddle in any matters in Gu Palace.

Gu Ling raised his arm with lightning speed and slapped Jiang Chen.

Pa!

Crisp sound of a slap was produced, but Jiang Chen was standing there, without moving an inch whereas Gu Ling staggered one step backwards and almost fell down. He froze and felt a burning sensation on his face.

Gu Liuying and Gu Liuhui were both petrified. Their eyes were fixed on the obvious palm mark on Gu Ling's face and they dared not say a word. Despite the distance between them, they couldn't see Jiang Chen's slap. It was too fast.

The shock they felt was earth-shaking. One should know that Gu Ling was a peak Second Grade Great Saint and was only a step more to advance to Third Grade Great Saint. Gu Chen on the other hand was merely a First Grade Great Saint, he may be a peak First Grade Great Saint but how could he be this powerful?

They must be imagining things. That must be it.

At one side, Gu Liufeng smiled coldly. Others might not be able to comprehend Jiang Chen's strength but not him. He believed that if Gu Ling was Jiang Chen's enemy, Gu Ling would already be a dead

man by now and wouldn't just receive a simple slap.

“Y-you dare to hit me?”

Gu Ling regained his senses from the shock. He couldn't believe that he was slapped by a First Grade Great Saint, and accept that a newbie who just came from the Pure Land dared to hit him.

“You should feel lucky that you are just getting a smack from me and you still got the chance to speak after offending me.”

Jiang Chen said coldly. He was just stating the cold hard fact. It was just like what had Gu Liufeng thought, if Gu Ling was Jiang Chen's enemy, he would be dead by now.

Chapter 946 - The Internal Contradictions

Hubris! Arrogance!

Jiang Chen had too much of arrogance. Over the years, there were many geniuses who came from Pure Land but he had never encountered as arrogant as this newbie. On the first day he came, the first thing he did was slap the genius of Gu Palace. This gave Gu Liuying and Gu Liuhui a great shock. They then thought of the information given by Gu Xuantian that this newbie was a rare genius that appeared once in every ten thousand years and was the greatest killing secret weapon of Gu Family. Now it seemed that either in the aspect of bravery or strength, this Gu Chen had it all.

“Very well, Gu Chen. I didn’t expect you to be so bold and wild. In which case, don’t blame me for being rude. No one in Saint Origin Palace dares to hit my face. Now I will let you know what is the true meaning of terror.”

Gu Ling was angered. His Qi began to rise steadily. The Qi of Second Grade Great Saint was completely unleashed. He was ready to strike to teach this newbie, who didn’t know the difference between life and death, a good lesson. He imagined that the slap that hit his face just now was merely an accident and because of his carelessness. How could he, a peak Second Grade Great Saint, be defeated by a puny First Grade Great Saint? This was simply unacceptable.

“Liufeng, advise Gu Chen not to stir things up.” Gu Liuying whispered to Gu Liufeng.

In fact, he was afraid that Jiang Chen would be at a disadvantage. Due to the constant oppression from the aboriginal geniuses of Gu Palace, those who came from Pure Land had become united. Thus, even though they were seeing Jiang Chen for the first time, they had treated Jiang Chen as one of them.

“Brother Liuying, there is no need to worry. He is no match for Little Chen. Although we are from Pure Land, we are the worthy geniuses of Gu Family and shouldn’t be oppressed. Something like this needs to be changed and Little Chen will do the job.”

Gu Liufeng smiled. He was very confident in the strength of Jiang Chen. Gu Ling couldn’t kill Jiang Chen even if there were more than a thousand of them. Although he hadn’t reached Gu Palace yet, he wasn’t a fool. He was able to almost guess the present situation in Gu Palace through Gu Ling’s way of treating them. They were supposed to be a single unit, but now he felt as if they were living under the roof of someone else. Without a doubt, this had stirred up unpleasant feelings in him.

He felt further infuriated seeing Gu Liuying and Gu Liuhui, the former heroic figures in Pure Land, had to lower their heads in front of Gu Ling.

Furthermore, Gu Liufeng knew Jiang Chen too well. It wouldn’t change his mind even if he tried to persuade him. All the blame should be put on Gu Ling who started the whole thing.

Pa!

The very moment Gu Ling's Qi was unleashed, Jiang Chen's palm landed on his face before he could even react, causing his head to spin.

Pa Pa Pa...

Subsequently, Jiang Chen's palm shot from the left and right, slapping his face like a gust of storm. Gu Ling was totally defenseless. Despite his will to fight back, he was unable to resist Jiang Chen's attack. All he could do now was to expect mercy from Jiang Chen.

Gu Liuying and Gu Liuhui watched from behind, stupefied. They finally knew how strong Jiang Chen was. The first strike might be accidental but not for the second strike. The situation ahead was enough to explain that Jiang Chen's strength was far more powerful than Gu Ling. It was very shocking to see Gu Ling, a Second Grade Great Saint, could not even resist an opponent with lower grade than him.

Bang!

Gu Ling was slapped to the ground by the final slap. His mouth was coughing up blood, a few of his teeth were knocked off. His face turned fierce.

Pa!

Jiang Chen raised his foot, and stepped on Gu Ling's face. Gu

Ling struggled intensely and roared, trying to break free from Jiang Chen's foot but found that it was of no help. Before him, Jiang Chen was like a huge mountain that pressed against him.

“Gu Chen, you are...truly audacious!”

Gu Ling was infuriated beyond his limit. This was a great humiliation, a humiliation to his core. Gu Ling had always been a high and mighty genius that would never be trampled by anyone. This kind of psychological blow was beyond the imagination of ordinary people.

“Now that you are under my foot, what else do you want to feel proud of? Don't always think that you are the only noble one. Your so-called nobility is only a joke before me. Scram!”

With a tremor in his foot, Gu Ling was bounced a few hundred meters away.

Gu Ling stood up from the ground trembling. His eyes were bloodshot, glaring at Jiang Chen like a beast. The word 'scram' was like a knife that stabbed his heart. He was no doubt shocked by Jiang Chen's strength, but he would never let this score slip away.

“Gu Chen, we shall wait and see.”

After finishing his last word, he turned into a light beam and disappeared.

“Good! Someone like him should be beaten up.”

Gu Liufeng portrayed a face of excitement. Seeing that Gu Ling was beaten up like a dog, he felt truly pleased.

“That’s awesome.”

“No wonder patriarch has such a high opinion of him. He was able make Gu Ling in no shape to even fight back. If I didn’t see this with my own eyes, I wouldn’t believe it. Gu Chen, you have truly helped all of us express a breath of our grievance. That’s so satisfying. That Gu Ling always expressed his snobbishness towards those who came from Pure Land, not putting us in his eyes. We too didn’t put him in our eyes long ago, but due to he is a native of Gu Palace, we have no choice but to swallow our grievance.” Gu Liuying and Gu Liuhui spoke.

Besides feeling amazed by Jiang Chen’s strength, they were also exhilarated by Gu Ling’s defeat. This was something which they had longed to do but had always been restricted from doing it.

Even though they had just seen Jiang Chen for the first time, they were totally impressed by him who was adopted by the patriarch. It seemed Gu Xuantian wasn’t boasting about Gu Chen. He was indeed a great killing weapon that was secretly trained by Gu Xuantian.

“Never reason with people like him,” said Jiang Chen.

“But Gu Chen, you just arrived here but you have already beaten up Gu Ling badly. This is something that has never happened in the history of Saint Origin Palace. Gu Ling will certainly never let this matter go. I’m afraid those geniuses of the palace will be angered as well because of this matter. It is going to be very troublesome,” said Gu Liuying with a frown.

Beating Gu Ling up was no doubt an exhilarating thing but it had severe consequences. After all, nothing as such had ever happened in his place.

“Brother Liuying, what’s the present situation in Gu Palace,” asked Gu Liufeng.

“It is true that Gu Palace has the title of Gu Family, but the members inside are divided into two groups. The Inner Palace and Outer Palace. Those who came from Pure Land are viewed as members of the Outer Palace whom are disdained by the members of Inner Palace. They don’t even regard us as their own family. They are all high and mighty beings, claiming themselves as a noble group. Due to Saint Origin Palace being in existence for nearly a hundred years, the members of Inner Palace are much more than those of us who come from outside. Currently, we are completely polarized and the internal contradictions are numerous. Not only Gu Palace alone, it happens to other palaces as well except Demon Palace. Demon Race was originally a united race and they earn their respect based on their bloodline and innate ability, so their members aren’t divided,” said Gu Liuying, explaining the circumstances about Gu Palace to them.

“Ai!”

After hearing this, Gu Liufeng couldn't help heaving a sigh. The present Gu Palace varied too much with the Gu Palace that he dreamed of.

"All along, we of the Outer Palace have always nursed our grievance and swallowed our opinions. The higher ups of Gu Palace never cared about the contradictions like this. In fact, there have been divergence among the higher ups. If the situation continue to develop at this rate, I fear that it won't take long for the Gu Palace here to be completely detached from the Gu Palace in Pure Land." Gu Liuhui said in depressed tone.

"This is what I expected. Judging from the current development of the eight major palaces, if we don't resolve the internal contradictions in Gu Palace, we will face miserable and tragic ending sooner or later," said Jiang Chen.

The present situation in Gu Palace was something he had thought earlier but he didn't expect it to be this serious. In order to deal with the major six, he must first get rid of the internal contradictions in Gu Palace, otherwise the consequences would be unimaginable. A divided family, even without the threat of enemies, would only have one final outcome. Also, Desolate Palace was actually fixing their eyes on the other palaces covetously.

About the Demon Race, he didn't have the slightest worry at all. Demon Race wasn't similar to human race. They were originally an independent race. Even if they were to have internal divergence within, it wouldn't be difficult to resolve them. Big Yellow and Kong Yang's arrival in Demon Palace would make things even

better. Kong Yang had the bloodline of Peacock King and would definitely be highly regarded. Big Yellow, on the other hand, not only had the Divine Beast Bloodline, he had also obtained the Totem Divine Seal. When the Totem Divine Seal was unleashed, even the palace master must show respect to Big Yellow.

Moreover, even though Saint Origin Palace had reached such extent of development, there was no way it could break away from the eight major families of Pure Land. They were closely related in many ways. As such, they must have known the incidents that happened in Pure Land. In Pure Land, Demon Race and Gu Family had established good relationship, so the Gu Palace and Demon Palace must also have built a harmonious connection with one another.

“It’s not easy to solve this kind of contradiction. Gu Chen, although it was very exhilarating to beat Gu Ling up, it was a reckless action. After all, you are just a newbie who just came to Saint Origin Palace. Those native geniuses of Gu Palace will definitely not let you go.” Gu Liuying said worriedly.

“There is no need to be polite with someone like him. When someone looks down upon you, you don’t need to look up to them. You must remember that this is a world where the strong are respected. Wherever you go, strength is always the first in the list. They oppress you not because you are from Pure Land but because you’re weak. If you all are stronger than them, are they going to disrespect you at all? If you all are strong enough, there won’t be internal contradictions in Gu Palace. The others will only respect and fear you when you are powerful. Rules are for us to follow and also for us to break. Since the natives of Inner Palace have been oppressing you guys for too long, both sides have grown

accustomed to it which lead to the current internal contradictions. As such, it isn't a bad thing to induce a conflict among Gu Palace," said Jiang Chen.

Chapter 947 - Attacking At the Doorstep

Jiang Chen's words had ignited the blood of the two geniuses. Despite the fact that this was Jiang Chen's first time coming to Gu Palace, it seemed that he had an even more thorough understanding about the current situation than they did. In addition, in their eyes, Jiang Chen was not only strong, but also mature. He had a maturity that didn't match his current age. The domineering and heroic aura that he exuded was enough to convince them.

They couldn't deny what Jiang Chen had said. In this power-based place, strength was what people focused on regardless of where they went. The reason why the people of Outer Palace were oppressed by the people from Inner Palace but did not resist was because they were weak. If they were powerful enough to defend themselves, would the geniuses of Inner Palace bully them?

“Let's go, bring us to Gu Palace.”

Jiang Chen's facial expression was calm, as though hitting Gu Ling didn't concern him at all.

“Come.”

Gu Liuying took a deep breath before directing Jiang Chen and Gu Liufeng towards the location of Gu Palace. He was sure that Gu Ling wouldn't let this matter slip away and would find trouble for Gu Chen. However, not even Gu Chen himself was concerned of this, so why should he be worried about it either. In any case, it

was Gu Chen who beat Gu Ling. To them, it was extremely satisfying because they had been bearing grievances of repression in Gu Palace.

“Gu Chen, Liufeng, Saint Origin Palace is hundreds of miles in area, akin to a typical small world. The eight palaces have occupied different territories across this spatial zone. Comparing Saint Origin Palace to Pure Land, the number of people here isn’t too many, but each and every one of them is an elite. The weakest among them is a Great Saint. As such, it’s safe to say that this place is the strongest domain in Saint Origin World.”

On the way, Gu Liuying and Gu Liuhui told Jiang Chen and Gu Liufeng the thorough details about the situation in Gu Palace.

They were all Great Saints. With great speed, they arrived Gu Palace in just a short moment.

There was an endless mountain range ahead, seemingly a few thousand miles long. White smoke was souging over the mountains. The thickness of the Heaven and Earth Yuan Qi was at its peak. Looking from above, there were buildings everywhere, they were buildings of Gu Palace. All of the architectures were filled with dignity and grandeur. There were halls, courtyards, and ancient towers. Many of them were hanging in mid-air, while there were some that were suspended above the summits. Relying on the spatial force, those courtyards were built on top of the peaks, making them look like a heavenly court, and astonishing people looking at them.

“Gu Chen, Liufeng, with the identity token, the both of you are

automatically a member of Gu Palace. From the moment you drip a drop of blood on it, Gu Palace have registered your existence. Do you see the mountain peak over there? People of Outer Palace, including us, are living in those places. Let me bring you two there.”

Gu Liuying pointed to a mountain that looked more remote than the others. Above the summit was a number of courtyards. They were normally used by the disciples of Gu Palace to live and cultivate in.

Under the lead of Gu Liuying, they reached the summit, where there were plenty of empty courtyards, so Jiang Chen and Gu Liufeng simply chose one as their new home.

“It’s still noon. Many people have gone out for cultivation. In Gu Palace, there is a Refining Tower, the main area for cultivation. During this period of time, there won’t be anyone around as this is the residential area. Furthermore, those who live here are all below Third Grade Great Saint,” introduced Gu Liuhui.

“En.”

Jiang Chen nodded, walking into the courtyard. This building would be his and Gu Liufeng’s home from now on.

But then, before Jiang Chen and the others could rest, a dozen silhouettes were flying over from a distance and landed on a huge martial platform. This was the only martial platform in this residential area, commonly used to settle the grudges among the

disciples. However, due to the unity among the disciples of Outer Palace, this martial platform was basically not used by anyone.

“It’s them, Gu Liang and the others. Didn’t they go to the Refining Tower? Why are they back at this hour? Let’s go over to find out.” Gu Liuying wondered.

Normally, the practice in the Refining Tower ended in the evening because midday had the most active Heaven and Earth Yuan Qi, the most suitable time for cultivation. Thus, it raised their suspicion that they came back this early.

A cold smile was revealed at the corner of Jiang Chen’s mouth, perhaps, he had guessed what had happened.

Jiang Chen and the other three came over to the spacious martial platform. Gu Liuying walked towards them and said, “Gu Liang, why have you all returned at this hour? Furthermore, you all look flustered.”

The cultivation grade of this youth who was called Gu Liang wasn’t low, he had reached Second Grade Great Saint.

“Brother Liuying, I heard that a newbie from Pure Land named Gu Chen has beaten up Gu Ling, is this true?” Gu Liang asked hastily.

“That’s right. How do you all know?”

Gu Liuying knitted his brows.

“Not good. That Gu Ling went to the Refining Tower and told everyone about the incident. He was planning to bring a lot of geniuses of Inner Palace over here now to teach Gu Chen a lesson. After hearing the news, we and many other disciples of Outer Palace quickly returned.” Gu Liang said.

The other disciples were looking worried, but at the same time, there was a trace of delight within. Nothing like this had ever happened in Saint Origin Palace. Besides, there was a conflict between Outer Palace and Inner Palace. As such, it was very unlikely that Inner Palace would let go of the newbie who beat up Gu Ling.

They couldn't hide the joy after learning that Gu Ling was beaten up like a dog. They felt that it had helped them relieve a part of the grievance that they had nursed for a long time.

“Gu Chen, it seems that things are more serious than we had thought.”

Gu Liuying looked over at Jiang Chen.

“You are that newbie, Gu Chen?”

Everyone's eyes fell upon Jiang Chen. Besides shock, there was also admiration. They were impressed by the fact that Gu Chen could beat up Gu Ling so badly with his mere First Grade Great

Saint strength and also his unusual courage.

“Brother Gu Chen, that’s really intoxicating that you have beaten up Gu Ling badly, but I’m afraid that things are going to be hard to deal with today.” Gu Liang said.

“It’s fine. I can handle everything. They have been oppressing us for too long, and it’s time for us to regain our dignity and confidence. If they dare to come, I will break one leg from each of them.”

Jiang Chen had a look of coldness on his face. His tone was extremely calm, without the slightest quiver. There was no way to find a hint of nervousness across his face.

“He has a resolute heart and dominance.”

Gu Liang and the others immediately changed the way that they looked at Jiang Chen. Putting other things aside, Jiang Chen’s disposition alone was incomparable to anyone. Furthermore, the overbearing aura that he exuded could make anyone give in.

Breaking one leg from each of them? Such a remark was too arrogant. It was truly heaven defying. No one had thought that someone like him would emerge in Gu Family. It seemed that Gu Palace would lose its peacefulness today.

They had to admit that Jiang Chen’s words had subconsciously boiled their blood, but at the same time, they were also feeling very

worried. After all, their understanding towards Jiang Chen wasn't deep. Although he could defeat Gu Ling and was also a rare genius, he was a mere First Grade Great Saint.

Soon, more disciples had returned. Most of them were from Outer Palace. From the direction that they came back from, there was a large group disciples flying over. In terms of the numbers, they were relatively similar to the disciples of Outer Palace, but their Qi was apparently more powerful. They were the geniuses of Inner Palace. Each and every one of them had a look of fury on their face, along with unhidden arrogance.

There were quite a number of disciples of Outer Palace here. In the past, Gu Family would send those elected talented disciples over. At that time, many of them were Ninth Grade Minor Saint. They would be given one year of training, and if they couldn't advance to Great Saint realm within a year, they would be sent back.

However, nearly a year ago, Gu Palace had already stopped accepting the people from Pure Land. Only geniuses who advanced to Great Saint realm earned the right to enter Saint Origin Palace. This fact alone could tell the internal contradictions between Gu Family and Gu Palace.

Very quickly, all of them landed on the martial platform. Both groups of disciples were standing opposite each other. There were nearly 300 of them. Of course, this wasn't the total number of disciples from Inner Palace and Outer Palace. There were still a lot of them that weren't present.

“Which of you is Gu Chen, get out!”

In the group of Inner Palace, the one standing in front was a youth wearing a pale yellow robe with a sturdy physique and extremely proud face. His Qi was powerful. He had reached the peak of Third Grade Great Saint. Apparently, he was the leader of this group of people. Besides him stood Gu Ling with a swollen face.

“He is called Gu Lang, the brother of Gu Ling. He’s a very violent person and has high and mighty status in the palace. He won’t even put us in his eyes.” Gu Liuhui murmured.

“Gu Lang, why are you bringing so many people to our place to cause trouble? Is that a little too oppressive?”

A youth yelled from the group of Outer Palace. His cultivation grade was also at the peak of Third Grade Great Saint, but compared to Gu Lang, his Qi was obviously weaker.

“Gu Liuyang, stop your f*cking nonsense. Hand over that little bastard. Otherwise, we will have a war. You people of Outer Palace are getting bolder. A newly arrived trash daring to beat up a genius of Inner Palace without considering his own position? You must all remember that every one of you are here in our Palace because of the kindness given by Gu Palace.”

Gu Lang was too arrogant. He definitely didn’t put the people of Outer Palace in his eyes.

“Damn! He’s so arrogant. We have been bearing these arrogant pricks for so long, and now they are going to trample on our faces.”

“This Gu Lang is clearly humiliating us. It’s killing me!”

“I have had enough of this! I really want to have a good fight with these bastards. Seeing that pig face of Gu Ling, I feel extremely thrilled. I don’t know who’s this Gu Chen, but I really have to thank him for that.”

.....

Chapter 948 - Arrogant to the Extreme

Whispers began among the crowd of the outer palace and it was getting louder. They were all from the Pure Land and every one of them was a famous figure back in the days when they were still in the Pure Land, but they were treated so shabbily in Gu Palace. Even the mud man had thirty percent anger, how could they bear those unfair treatment?

That newbie called Gu Chen had beaten up Gu Ling the very first day he arrived. Such behaviour however didn't make the people of the outer palace resent Gu Chen, on the contrary, they greatly appreciated and admired his action, that was something which they wouldn't dare to do. They couldn't put the thrill of seeing Gu Ling's pathetic face in words.

“It's him. He is Gu Chen!”

Gu Ling's eyes caught Jiang Chen from the crowd and shouted.

For a moment, everyone's eyes shifted towards Jiang Chen's direction, regardless of whether it was the people of the outer or inner palace. All of their focuses were put on this man. Everybody was surprised when they saw Jiang Chen's appearance.

“This is the super audacious Gu Chen? Never thought that he is this young.”

“This Gu Chen is only a First Grade Great Saint. Does this mean that Gu Ling was beaten up by a First Grade Great Saint? Can you

imagine how humiliating that is?”

“How could this guy be so strong? Was it true that Gu Ling didn’t even have the chance to fight back when he fought this First Grade newbie?”

.....

At this moment, not only the people of the outer palace, but even plenty of people from the inner palace knitted their brows. They initially thought that the person who beat up Gu Ling must be some powerful cultivator. They wouldn’t have thought that it was only a First Grade Great Saint who turned Gu Ling’s face into a deformed pig face. Frankly, this was a disgrace.

Seeing the sneering gazes, Gu Ling could feel his face burning, he hastily said to Gu Lang. “Big brother, don’t underestimate this brat. He is very strong.”

“Haha! Gu Lang, Gu Ling can’t even defeat a First Grade Great Saint...You surely have a thick skin to stir up trouble here. I can’t help but feel funny.”

Gu Liuying laughed loudly with a delighted mood. If Gu Chen was a Third Grade Great Saint, it would be regarded as bullying, but he was only a First Grade Great Saint. So, the only explanation was Gu Ling was too weak.

“Humph! You people of outer palace are originally a grade lower

than us. Hitting the people of the inner palace is akin to challenging us directly. If I don't teach you all a lesson, you all are going to go wild one day."

Gu Lang let out a cold humph, then looked at Jiang Chen. "Gu Chen, I have to say that you are really too bold for beating up someone from the inner palace so badly. I'll give you a chance, kneel down and apologize to my brother immediately, then break both of your legs and take out a hundred thousand Saint Rank Restoration Pills as compensation, and everything will be settled."

Jiang Chen walked towards the group of inner palace calmly. His eyes swept across all of them like blades. Then he yelled. "Gu Lang, your words is truly ridiculous. I can treat it as passing gas."

Jiang Chen realised that the internal conflict in Gu Palace was more severe than he had expected. If it wasn't resolved quickly, it would have a great impact to the Gu Family in the future.

"You bastard! What did you just say? Don't you dare to talk to me like that!"

Gu Lang raged. Sure enough, Gu Chen was as arrogant as Gu Ling described.

"I said that your words are just like passing gas to me. Look at the faces of these people, everyone seems so high and mighty. Is this the feigned sense of superiority you all put up at the expense of your own family? It is extremely ridiculous that you all talk about the difference between outer and inner palace. Don't forget that

your ancestors were all from the Pure Land and the liquid flowing in your body is the bloodline of the Gu Family. Their bodies also have the same kind of bloodline. So, what makes you all more superior than them?”

Jiang Chen spoke sternly out of justice.

These lines of words struck the hearts of those outer palace disciples. That’s right, everyone’s body was flowing the bloodline that belonged to the Gu Family. On what grounds could they act so snobbishly in front of their own family?

“If you oppress the people of the outer palace, you are only in control of Gu Palace, what makes you all so great about that? If you are really that capable, why not go oppress the people of the Desolate Palace or the other palaces? I beat Gu Ling up because he should be beaten up. You pretentious people are just blinded by your own pride. In my eyes, you are all nothing because I am better than any one of you. You look down upon your own people, but I will use my strength to show you that you are all too weak. On what grounds can weaklings show disdain to the people who are stronger?”

Jiang Chen’s voice was loud. It was the first time for these outer palace disciples to see Jiang Chen but his words were very relieving and satisfying. They regretted not seeing the scene where Jiang Chen beat Gu Ling.

“There’s no point in arguing. It’s a joke to say that you people are better than us.”

Gu Lang said coldly.

“Brother Gu Lang, why are you talking so much with this man? Looks like he isn’t going to apologize. Let me check him to see how strong he actually is. I don’t believe that a puny First Grade Great Saint can be so powerful.”

Presently, a youth walked over. He had a similar cultivation as Gu Ling, peak Second Grade Great Saint. He felt deeply ashamed when he saw Gu Ling had been beaten up so badly. He absolutely wouldn’t believe that a First Grade Great Saint brat who came from the Pure Land could be very powerful. Thus, he wanted to test that brat’s power personally.

“Gu Chen, get down on your knees!”

The youth came close to Jiang Chen and barked.

“Ai!”

Jiang Chen shook his head. It seemed impossible to resolve the internal conflicts by using his tongue alone. In that case, he would have to use his hands.

“Since you all want to break my legs, every one of you here today must lose a leg, starting from you.”

Said Jiang Chen coldly.

“What are you talking about?”

The youth was confused, doubting his hearing ability.

Pa!

The thing that responded to the youth was a loud slap. The sound of the slap echoed through the arena. It was a very crisp sound. The slap that Jiang Chen sent was very violent, it send the youth to the ground. Then, Jiang Chen lifted his leg and trampled the youth's face, pushing half of his head into the ground.

Hiss

Seeing this scene, everyone couldn't help but exclaim. Hearing and witnessing were both different experience. Jiang Chen's strike was just too fast for many of them to capture.

This was truly a scene that frightened people. One should know that the number of geniuses in this place was as numerous as the clouds. None of them could be called ordinary experts. All of them had powerful skills and attacks. But none of them had ever seen a First Grade Great Saint that could be this powerful.

That slap was neither accident nor luck.

“Truly strong.”

The people of the outer palace widened their eyes. Jiang Chen’s slap was really intoxicating.

“Argh...”

The youth struggled hard under Jiang Chen’s foot but couldn’t break free from it. It was a great irony, to think that he was now under someone else’s foot that he just demanded to kneel down before him.

“You are now being trampled by me. What else do you feel arrogant about? I am just a new disciple of the outer palace but I can trample you so easily. What right do you have to look down upon the disciples of the outer palace? This is a world where the strong are respected. All things are based upon strength, not your mouth. Your mouth would only be used to gnaw mud.”

Every word of Jiang Chen crushed the youth’s pride of superiority. The disciples of the outer palace who saw and heard what happened held themselves back from bursting into commotion. This scene was really too relieving and enjoyable. It was what they had been dreaming of doing.

“Stop, Gu Chen!”

Gu Lang shouted.

“Who gives you the right to command me? As I’ve said, everyone here must have one of their leg broken today. He is just the beginning and none of you will be exempted.”

Said Jiang Chen. Then, his leg stepped on the youth’s thigh. With a crack, the youth’s leg turned crooked. The youth’s half buried face wailed agonizingly.

“Son of a b*tch!”

“Damn! He is directly provoking us!”

“This is outrageous! Ever since Saint Origin Palace has been built, a mad man like him hasn’t appeared yet. He must not be spared.”

.....

The geniuses of the inner palace became unsettled. This scene was truly unbelievable. This new guy was certainly a frenzied being.

Jiang Chen turned a blind eye to all of their angry faces which he had just provoked. He stepped over the youth’s body and moved two steps forth, demanded. “Who else?”

Disdaining the group of geniuses under the heavens... No one could deny your words. It was really full of masculinity.

At this moment, every disciple of the outer palace was affected by Jiang Chen demeanor. Every one of their eyes blazed incomparably. Years of suffocation and suppression were about to erupt. They had never feel a day as refreshing as today. Even if they only saw Jiang Chen for the first time, he had occupied a high and respectful status in their hearts.

To Jiang Chen, in order to retrieve their dignity and self-confidence, he had to fight with violence, to let them know that the geniuses of the outer palace weren't people that they wanted as enemies. Only through this could they make them feel fear, only through this could they crush their feign superiority. Only through equality could the internal conflicts be settled.

As for the injury of a broken leg, he wasn't worried at all. To Great Saints, such an injury was fundamentally nothing.

“Gu Chen, you are exceedingly arrogant. You will pay a steep price for what you just did. I will deal with you myself and let you understand what regret means.”

Gu Lang's Qi fluctuated. The Qi of a peak Third Grade Great Saint was unleashed. He was ready to personally teach this presumptuous brat a lesson.

“Brother Gu Lang, let me take care of him. There's no need for you to handle him personally.”

At this instant, another youth walked over. This youth's cultivation was stronger than the previous youth. He had already

reached the Third Grade Great Saint and wasn't like any of those ordinary Third Grade Great Saints, but there was still a large gap between him and Gu Lang, the peak Third Grade Great Saint.

Gu Lang nodded. He would like to see how strong this new guy really was.

Chapter 949 - A Big Tangled Warfare

The Third Grade Great Saint was extremely arrogant. He approached Jiang Chen and said in a cold tone, “Gu Chen, I have to admit that I’m surprised to see a First Grade Great Saint defeating a Second Grade Great Saint. Never have I thought that the Pure Land has such a genius. However, as you have attacked our geniuses and spoke to us disparagingly, you must be punished.”

The youth was no doubt amazed by Jiang Chen’s strength. One should know that everyone who were present here were no ordinary Great Saint, and the fact that Jiang Chen could defeat a Second Grade Great Saint indicated his incredible power. This was something none of them could deny.

A faint smile was seen on Jiang Chen’s face. His finger pointed at the youth and shook, saying, “You aren’t my opponent.”

“Gu Chen, you are too arrogant, but sometimes arrogance comes with a price.”

That youth was angered. As a Third Grade Great Saint, he had outleveled Jiang Chen by two grades, he didn’t even put Jiang Chen in his eyes, but now he was disdained by his opponent instead. How could he stand such insult?

Jiang Chen shook his head, not wanting to speak anymore. Today, he had come to Gu Palace to establish his dominance, to obtain justice for the people of the Outer Palace and to completely settle the internal conflicts that existed in this place. As such, the

means he would use must be effective.

Swoosh

Jiang Chen's body flashed like a phantom and appeared before the youth in a blink.

"He's fast."

The youth's countenance changed. He didn't think that Gu Chen would so powerful to such an extent. Gu Chen was so fast that not even a Third Grade Great Saint like him had the time to react. The youth sensed a powerful force coming towards him. Immediately and hurriedly, he exerted all his Yuan Qi to withstand the attack.

Pa!

However, despite him being a Third Grade Great Saint, he faced almost the same outcome as Gu Ling. With a slap on his face, he fell to the ground. Let's not talk about withstanding the attack, he didn't even have the chance to dodge. He was slapped to the ground in an instant. Just like before, Jiang Chen's leg trampled on his face to prevent him from struggling on his feet.

"What?!"

"My goodness! How can this Gu Chen be this strong? That is a Third Grade Great Saint that he is fighting, but his opponent didn't even stand a chance. Is he still human?"

“No, that’s not possible. How can a First Grade Great Saint be this strong?”

.....

The scene made everyone exclaim, whether it was the disciples of the Outer or Inner Palace. All of their eyes were widened while looking at Jiang Chen, as if they had seen a real ghost. It was too hard for them to believe that there was actually such a terrifying genius that came from the Gu Family in the Pure Land, because not even the Saint Origin Palace had such a genius.

“I also grew up in Gu Family but I have never heard or seen someone called Gu Chen. How can he be so heaven defying?”

“You didn’t know that Gu Chen was just a beggar when he was still a child. He was brought back by the patriarch and was adopted. When the patriarch discovered his talent, he hid him from the public and trained him secretly. It was only until now that he has shown his face to the public. I heard that the patriarch attaches great importance to this man called the secret killing weapon of the Gu Family. Sure enough, he is worthy of such title. The gap between me and him is not small.”

“So that’s the reason the patriarch hid him so secretly. This Gu Chen really is powerful. I initially thought that his ability to defeat a Second Grade Great Saint was already scary, I didn’t think that even a Third Grade Great Saint was no match for him. If I didn’t witness this myself, I wouldn’t believe it even if you beat me to

death.”

“That’s amazing! I felt so relieved now. The arrival of this Gu Chen has really helped me release all the grievances that I have nursed over the years. That’s super satisfying. We are all members of the Gu Family, what makes them superior to us? What rights do they have to oppress us, and look down upon us? Now, it’s time for us to fight for ourselves.”

.....

Every disciple of the Outer Palace started whispering. Jiang Chen had just arrived to Gu Palace and he hadn’t even spoken to any one of them, however, he had already perfectly convinced all the geniuses of the Outer Palace. Now, all of them who were present on the platform had great admiration for him. His every word and gesture made their blood boil.

The youth who was under Jiang Chen’s foot was wailing continuously but couldn’t break away from it. Jiang Chen looked down from a height and spoke contemptuously, “I’d like to ask you a question. What right do you have to look down upon the members of the Outer Palace? Even if you have a hundred of someone like you, it won’t be enough to defeat me.”

His words were rude, but what he said was a fact. Even without his half-dragon form, he could handle any Third Grade Great Saint like this youth. He could even kill him on the spot if he wanted to.

Ka Cha!

Jiang Chen showed no mercy. He broke the youth's leg with a stamp, then shook his Qi. His eyes swept across Gu Lang and the others like sharp blades. Suddenly, he shouted, "All of you, come and attack together!"

Come and attack together!

His voice rolled in the air. How overbearing was that for a man to challenge more than a hundred geniuses. They were afraid that only Gu Chen had such audacity.

"Fight brothers. Their time of oppressing us is over. From now on, we will never be bullied again." Gu Liufeng shouted.

At this time, the emotions of the Outer Palace's disciples had already reached a critical point, only a single trigger was needed, and Gu Liufeng's words was without a doubt the last trigger.

"Yeah! We have to fight them. We have to let them know that the Outer Palace isn't a group that they can easily bully. We have to use our strength to voice out our grievance."

"Agreed. We'll fight for our dignity. We are all members of the Gu Family, what makes us inferior to them?"

"We can't let Gu Chen fight alone. The Outer Palace has always been united. Dammit! I have gotten annoyed by this group of pricks a long time ago!"

.....

The members of the Outer Palace yelled, expressing all the suppressed feeling that they had accumulated over the past years, flowing out like a continuous river without stopping. They had been oppressed for far too long and everyone present who was bullied by the Inner Palace had been nursing their resentment until now.

Every one of them was once a famous figure, a rare genius that was full of pride and temper.

Hong Hong Hong...

Strong Qis' were unleashed from those geniuses' bodies, shaking the entire martial platform. Each of their eyes turned red, their face brimmed with excitement as they looked at the back of the white-clothed youth. Without a doubt, Gu Chen has become their leader.

Fight! It was time for them to have a true fight. Like what Gu Chen had said, this was a world where the strong was revered. Only if you are strong enough, would the others respect you and dare not oppress you. The dignity and confidence of the Outer Palace must be gained by proving their strength.

Seeing the situation, Jiang Chen smiled as this was what he wanted. The members of the Outer Palace had to stop shrinking—only by showing their strength and bravery, by realizing their

dignity, and by placing their position at the height of the Inner Palace could the internal conflicts of the palace be resolved entirely.

This was the first and the most important step. If Jiang Chen was standing alone here barking at the geniuses of the Inner Palace today, it would not create such an effect. The only thing that he would get would be the resentment of the geniuses of the Inner Palace.

The present scenario was different, however. All the disciples of the Outer Palace had been stimulated to attack; the only cause of this was the internal conflicts that had existed in their hearts a long time ago. Once this matter got bigger, someone would surely come and resolve it. Before that, the higher ups of Gu Palace must witness the seriousness of the problem.

“Son of a b*tch, are you trying to rebel against us?”

“Damn! These people of the Outer Palace have really gotten fed up with their lives. They dare to shout so loudly and rudely at us?”

“Do they really think that Gu Chen can handle everything? They are totally not qualified to fight us.”

.....

The people of the Inner Palace had also gotten infuriated. All along, they had been the ones who oppressed these people, but

today, these people stood up against them, which made them very angry. They felt that their majestic and dignified status had been seriously challenged.

“Don’t talk nonsense, do you dare to fight? Let’s see whether the Inner Palace is greater than the Outer Palace.”

Jiang Chen had fully unleashed his Qi and yelled at the group of the Inner Palace.

Daring someone to fight was a heroic spirit that could shake the world. If you want to fight, then let’s fight. If you refuse, then scram and become a group of cowards.

“Brothers, let’s fight them for the sake of the dignity and status of the Inner Palace. Let those Outer Palace know how powerful we are. Let them have the chance to reflect upon themselves clearly.” Gu Lang raged, shouting at the geniuses of the Inner Palace.

Now, they had to fight despite their reluctance. Gu Chen’s words had pushed them to the tip of the cliff. There was a saying that said those who rode on the tiger wouldn’t step down easily. If they refused to fight today, it would only show that they were afraid of the Outer Palace. If they didn’t fight today, instead of oppressing the Outer Palace, they would be the one bullied by them instead.

“Fight!”

With his yell, Jiang Chen led by charging at the group of the

Inner Palace. For a moment, a total of three hundred people had launched a tangled warfare. How terrifying and majestic was the battle between three hundred Great Saints? It could be described as the destruction of Heaven and Earth.

The martial arena was instantly smashed. The entire residence and courtyards of the Outer Palace was covered with fog in a split second. If it wasn't for the seal deployed by the experts on the summits, all of the buildings around here would've been demolished already.

The disciples of the Outer Palace were all pumped up, they were all yelling vigorously. At this point, they had lost their concern whether their residences would still be in good condition or not. To Great Saints, a courtyard was nothing but a fart.

The present battle was like the battle of spirit. Every disciple of the Outer Palace was fighting hard for themselves. They had to defend their own status and change the past because this was their only chance. They were all following Gu Chen's lead. If they failed, they could not raise their heads again. They had already suffered enough, and today, they must overturn it.

More importantly, they had longed to beat up the pricks of Inner Palace in their hearts.

Chapter 950 - Gu Lian

Every disciple of the Outer Palace had a breath of grievance suppressed in their hearts. Today was the best time to release this breath out. There had always been conflicts between the disciples of the Outer and Inner Palace. Thus, in the fight, they purposely picked the one they disliked the most, the one they wanted to beat up. It doesn't matter if they could win the fight or not, they would fight with all their might. One should know that in the past, they didn't even have the courage to fight.

Hong Long...

The powerful excess combat waves from the battle swept everything around into dust. All the nearby buildings were destroyed. Three hundred Great Saints had inextricably engaged in battle. Even though the battle was intense, rationality still existed upon their attacks. All of them used combat skills to attack, none of them used combat weapons. After all, this was just conflicts within Gu Palace. No matter how serious the conflict was, the feud involved only their own people. They were merely fighting to express their grievances. They all knew the difference of a life and death battle and a battle that only involved injuries.

“You son of a b*tch. Aren't you the super arrogant guy in the past? Come on, fight me now!”

A genius of the Outer Palace yelled at the genius who always sneered at him, and then charged towards him and bombarded him with his strongest attack.

The people of the Inner Palace were also angered. They had never once put the people of the Outer Palace in their eyes. In their hearts, their status were always above those geniuses of the Outer Palace, but when they fought against them today, they only found out that these geniuses were so strong. They didn't find them particularly inferior even in battle.

Ka Cha

“Argh...”

In the vast battlefield, a white silhouette flashed constantly. Every place he went would be accompanied wails and broken bones. That white silhouette was without a doubt Jiang Chen. His attacks were ruthless and his movements were unusual. Every time he emerged, he would do some damage to the opponent then break their legs. There was no one in the Inner Palace that could match him.

In just a few blinks, 20 geniuses of the Inner Palace had been injured by Jiang Chen. Their combat strength had been greatly reduced which boosted up the morale of the geniuses of the Outer Palace, they gradually gained the upper hand of the battle.

“How the hell could this bastard be this strong?”

Gu Lang snarled. With a leap, his sturdy body blocked Jiang Chen's path.

“Gu Chen, let’s fight!” Gu Lang shouted.

He already knew that no one in the Inner Palace except him could fight Gu Chen. However, he didn’t have the confidence in defeating him. Even with his peak Third Grade Great Saint cultivation, he could never send a Third Grade Great Saint to the ground with a single slap which Gu Chen just did, so easily.

“Peak Third Grade Great Saint... Gu Lang, you are also no match for me,” said Jiang Chen.

Given his current cultivation, he could never find an opponent below Fourth Grade Great Saint. If he transformed into half-dragon, a Fourth Grade Great Saint would also be instantly killed by him, but he could not afford to show his half-dragon form to hide his identity. Even without the dragon transformation, his current cultivation was already enough to deal with these people.

“Wildly conceited! Black Whirlwind!” Gu Lang bellowed.

His Black Whirlwind straightaway formed a black storm. This storm was somewhat similar to Jiang Chen’s Eternal Immortal Wind. Every gust of wind was akin to sharp blades. Once this skill was casted, it would cut the void into pieces.

However, compared to Jiang Chen’s Eternal Immortal Wind, it still had a huge difference. Eternal Immortal Wind was a powerful skill that belonged to Nan Bei Chao, and was a skill of an immortal.

Naturally, Jiang Chen couldn't cast the Eternal Immortal Wind to deal with Gu Lang, otherwise, he was afraid that it would take Gu Lang's life.

Roar!

In the face of Gu Lang's powerful Black Whirlwind, Jiang Chen's response was simple. He sent out a fist, golden gust of wind turned into a golden dragon. It roared as it charged forth, colliding against the Black Whirlwind.

Hong Long...

The two attacks connected, destroying a portion of the battlefield as a result. A large hole was created in the void. The rustling ominous energy sent chills to people's spine. It was fortunate that the battlefield was filled with Great Saints. If a Minor Saint came into such a battlefield, he would certainly not be able to bear the terrifying excess waves and would explode instantly.

“Argh...”

Gu Lang uttered a miserable cry, his entire body was blown away. A peak Third Grade Great Saint who struck out his powerful combat skill couldn't even stand against Gu Chen. The storm that was created from his Black Whirlwind was completely pulverised by Gu Chen's single golden knuckle dragon seal.

Gu Lang had received a huge backlash, spewed out blood and

suffered severe injuries that weakened his combat strength.

“Impossible.”

Both of Gu Lang’s eyes were red. Compared to the physical injuries that he suffered, his psychology was even more damaged. He had never seen such a terrifying person in Saint Origin Palace, let alone in the Pure Land. Saint Origin Palace was a place packed with gifted talents, but no one had such monstrous, heaven defying combat power.

With his peak Third Grade Great Saint cultivation, defeating any ordinary Fourth Grade Great Saint would not be a problem, but now he couldn’t even defeat a puny First Grade Great Saint, which was something he had not even dreamt of.

“Not good, Brother Gu Lang is defeated. Not even he is a match for Gu Chen.”

“Dammit! Is he even human? When has the Pure Land had such monstrous genius?”

“And the people of the Outer Palace, who have always been hiding and avoiding us whenever they saw us, were stronger than the other. Plus, with Gu Chen’s presence, we can’t possibly win this battle. Many of us have suffered severe injuries and we have lost all of our fighting spirit whereas they are all still pumped up.”

.....

Gu Lang's defeat had made all the geniuses of Inner Palace lose their confidence. Moreover, in the course of the war just now, they had witnessed the strength of the Outer Palace. Although they said nothing about it, their impression of them started to change in their hearts.

And this was exactly what Jiang Chen wished to see.

Swoosh!

With a sway, Jiang Chen travelled like light and appeared in front Gu Lang.

“What are you doing?”

Fear was painted all over Gu Lang's face.

“Breaking one of your legs.”

A smirk was revealed at the corner of Jiang Chen's mouth. He struck out his True Dragon Palm and caged Gu Lang in, giving him no chance of escaping. A wave of force smashed on Gu Lang's leg like a sharp blade, making him shriek. Now, his current situation was like the two youths who confronted Gu Chen earlier.

“Gu Chen, are you insane! You are dead now. Do you have any idea of what you just did?”

Gu Ling yelled while having the urge to cough up blood. His original intention was to get reinforcements to seek his revenge. He didn't expect that Gu Chen was actually so strong. Currently, his gaze had turned from resentment into fear.

“Beat it!”

Jiang Chen waved his palm, slapping the pig-like face of Gu Ling away from the scene.

“Haha! So this is how strong the people of Inner Palace are. Brothers, continue the fight! Until their teeth are all over the place!”

“That's right! We have to let go of all the grievances and grudges that we have been suppressed. Darn it! Fight!”

“So, this is where Gu Lang's strength ends. He, a peak Third Grade Great Saint, can't even stand a single attack from Gu Chen.”

.....

The scene drove the people of the Outer Palace into commotion. Everyone seemed as if they had been injected adrenaline shot. All the geniuses of the Inner Palace had lost their stance. This piece of area had been completely ruined, but they didn't care about it now. Releasing their grievances was more important than those ruined buildings.

But then, the movement was still too big, it was difficult for it to stay unnoticed.

“Stop it!”

At this moment, a loud bellow was heard from a distance. Then, a youth clad in blue appeared above the sky. This young man had red hair and was full of vigor and assertion. The Qi he emitted surged to the sky and was unnerving.

“Gu Lian, it’s Brother Gu Lian.”

“Brother Gu Lian, you have to seek justice for us.”

“Dang! Brother Gu Lian, the Outer Palace is trying to rebel against us. They must be punished heavily.”

.....

Seeing the newcomer, the geniuses of the Inner Palace who had been beaten to the point that they wanted to cry to their mothers, got excited, as if they had seen hope.

Gu Lian was also a genius of the Inner Palace and a Fourth Grade Great Saint.

“What’s going on?”

Gu Lian's eyes swept across the battlefield coldly and saw many people of the Inner Palace had one of their legs broken. The rest of them looked dispirited and embarrassed. As a genius of the Inner Palace, naturally, he would get furious after seeing all of these.

"Brother Gu Lian..." One man told him everything via divine sense.

"A bunch of trash!"

After listening, Gu Lian couldn't resist cursing. Of course, he wasn't scolding the group of the Outer Palace, but the Inner Palace instead. Seeing the miserable conditions of his comrades didn't make him angry but ashamed, because he noticed that either it was in the aspect of number or cultivation, the Inner Palace had the advantage. Despite that, they still lost to them. It was indeed a very shameful thing, but this gave him a new impression of the Outer Palace in his mind.

Swoosh!

Gu Lian's gaze fell upon Jiang Chen and found out that he was merely a First Grade Great Saint. His eyes suddenly brimmed with strange colors. Putting the other things aside, Jiang Chen's ability to defeat Gu Lang was enough to earn his respect.

"So you are the newly arrived Gu Chen?" asked Gu Lian coldly.

“Yes, I am.”

Jiang Chen’s eyes met Gu Lian’s without the slightest fear.

“Gu Chen, it seems you are in trouble today. Gu Lian is a Fourth Grade Great Saint and he isn’t easy to deal with. You have to be careful.” Gu Liuyang approached Jiang Chen and murmured.

Chapter 951 - The Conflicts among the Higher Ups

Jiang Chen smiled, putting away Gu Liufeng's warning out of his head. He looked straight into Gu Lian's eyes and said. "You see, none of your people in the inner palace could beat me."

Even though Jiang Chen's words weren't as obvious and direct, the message was conveyed clearly, which was what qualifications did these geniuses of the inner palace had to oppress the geniuses of the outer palace when not even one of them could defeat Jiang Chen.

"You are very good indeed. I am really shocked to see that such a genius came from the Pure Land. In the aspect of strength, they are no doubt, no match for you and I have nothing to say for it. Also, I am really surprised the by performance of the geniuses from the outer palace this time."

Gu Lian nodded and said. He too, was a forthright person.

"But you, a newcomer, have injured so many of our people, and broken so many of their legs. In other words, you aren't putting the inner palace in your eyes. I will regard it as a direct provocation towards the inner palace. So, despite my admiration for you, I will have to seek justice for our palace and regain our dignity."

Said Gu Lian. His words were beyond reproach and Jiang Chen understood it. If he were Jiang Chen, he would probably make the

same decision. After all, Gu Lian was standing on the side of the inner palace. It would only show cowardice if he remained indifferent in the face of such a situation.

“What do you want then?”

Said Jiang Chen in a plain tone. The internal conflicts of the Gu Family had been stirred up and he needed to resolve it as quickly as possible, because once he couldn't settle it, it would deteriorate to an unmanageable extent. At that time, the entire Gu Palace would be finished. All of its members, including the superiors would be entangled into an endless series of conflicts.

Therefore, Jiang Chen was left with no choice. He could only move a step at a time based on the situation, but there was one thing that he must persist. That was to pull through in every event. He must fight for the dignity of the geniuses of the outer palace.

“I will have a fight with you.”

Gu Lian's eyes were scorching hot, his body shot out a hint of battle.

“No way. Gu Lian, you are a Fourth Grade Great Saint, battling with Gu Chen isn't fair.”

Gu Liuyang was the first to protest.

“Exactly. There was nothing to be proud of even if the Fourth Grade Great Saint defeated a First Grade Great Saint. Has the inner palace become so shameless?”

The geniuses of the outer palace objected the idea. One should know that the gap between a Fourth Grade Great Saint and a First Grade Great Saint wasn't small. The gap from the Third Grade to Fourth Grade was already considered a huge obstacle to many. Although Jiang Chen could defeat the Third Grade Great Saint Gu Lang, he was after all, only a First Grade Great Saint. How could he possibly defeat the Fourth Grade Great Saint Gu Lian?

Jiang Chen raised his hand and the whispering faded. He looked over at Gu Lian with a faint smile and said. “Okay, I accept your challenge.”

As a matter of fact, he didn't have much confidence in fighting Gu Lian. If he could transform into his half-dragon form, he wouldn't have any problems taking down Gu Lian, but apparently, he couldn't go for that avenue. His current strength was enough to cope with any ordinary Fourth Grade Great Saint, however, it seemed to be insufficient in dealing with a Fourth Grade Great Saint genius like Gu Lian.

“Alright! I like that straightforward attitude of yours, Gu Chen. I, Gu Lian admire your audacity. Enlighten me of how powerful the peerless genius from the Pure Land could be. Today, I will beat you so badly that all of your teeth would be scattered on the ground to defend the dignity and status of the inner palace.”

Gu Lian ignited his Qi. He flew up to the sky. Waves of Qi were

rolling all over his body. The terrifying Qi of a Fourth Grade Great Saint was fully unleashed.

Similarly, Jiang Chen also unleashed his Qi as he stood opposite of Gu Lian. His clothes were as white as snow, totally spotless. His black hair danced as the breeze blew, emitting a strong heroic aura that could convince and fascinate people.

“Dang! Isn’t this akin to bullying?”

“I don’t know if Gu Chen could fight Gu Lian. I think it will be hard. That Gu Lian isn’t going to be a merciful opponent, plus Gu Chen is merely a First Grade Great Saint. This battle is going to create a lot of anxiety.”

“What do you all know? Gu Chen is fighting for the dignity and glory of our palace. He has to accept the challenge, otherwise, we won’t be able to stand with pride in Gu Palace and will continue to be bullied by those bastards of the inner palace.”

The eyes of every outer palace disciple looked up to the sky where the two individuals were going to fight, with worry. The opponent was the powerful Gu Lian and there was no way that they could relieve their apprehension.

“This guy has really accepted the challenge. I really have no idea where he got his courage from.”

“Although he belongs to the outer palace, I have to admit that

this Gu Chen is truly awesome. You and I are both incomparable to him.”

“That’s right. I didn’t expect that the Pure Land could cultivate such a genius. Now, I am starting to have a little admiration for him, but this is about the battle of dignity and status. Brother Gu Lian will let him know what’s the meaning of being truly powerful, and will teach him a good lesson. A newbie who acted so arrogantly must certainly pay a price.”

.....

Many geniuses of the inner palace started to size Gu Chen up. They wouldn’t have thought that Gu Chen would accept the challenge without even giving much thought to it. After all, the difference between the both of them were too wide. It was a difference which was hard to compensate. Despite being the enemy of Gu Chen that resented him very much, they still couldn’t help but secretly raise their thumb in admiration.

Sometimes admiring a person had nothing to do with whether they were comrades or not.

“Gu Chen, come, bring out your best.”

Gu Lian bellowed and was fully prepared to fight.

“Hold it!”

At this moment, there was another abrupt bellow. Four extremely powerful figures appeared in the sky. These four were all elders with tremendous Qi and powerful cultivation realm. All of them were Fifth Grade Great Saints. After they appeared, their eyes quickly swept around the battle scene.

This was supposed to be a beautiful land, the residence of the geniuses of the outer palace. There were martial platforms, flowers and trees, courtyards and hallways. Now, nothing was left, everything was completely destroyed without leaving the residues. Although these things weren't valuable, it wasn't right for the residential area to be degraded into such a scene. Anyhow, this place also symbolized Gu Palace. It looked like if it wasn't for the seal deployed by the experts protecting the summits, all of them would be turned into nothingness as well.

“They are the elders.”

Without a doubt, they were the elders of Gu Palace. Usually, even if there was a fight among the disciples, they wouldn't reveal themselves. It seemed like today's matter had reached a serious extent where they were forced to come out.

“What have you all done? Gu Lian, are you going to tear down the whole Gu Palace?”

An elder yelled at Gu Lian, then turned to Gu Chen. “Who are you?”

But soon, the four elders knew what happened here. Someone

had told them everything via divine sense.

In fact, there was no need to talk about the outcome as it was already presented clearly in front of them.

“Gu Chen, you are the one who injured all of these people?”

Asked an elder incredulously.

“That’s right.”

Said Jiang Chen. “I assume that the four elders should also know why I attacked. Although I, Gu Chen have just arrived here on my first day, I absolutely couldn’t stand the unfair treatment. Gu Palace was initially built by the Gu Family. So why should there be a separation between the inner and outer palace? And why are the geniuses of the outer palace bullied? At the beginning, I wanted to see how powerful those geniuses of the inner palace really were. We can conclude that, this is just how powerful the geniuses of inner palace really are.”

“How dare you do this?! You are just a newcomer but you already dared to exert violence on the geniuses of the inner palace and destroyed the entire residential area of the outer palace. You have just committed a serious crime. Gu Chen, you must follow me back immediately to the punishment hall to receive your punishment.”

An elder shouted at Jiang Chen.

“Elder Gu Rong, this place wasn’t destroyed by Gu Chen alone. He was also not the one who beat up all the geniuses of the inner palace. If you are intending to punish him, punish us as well.”

Gu Liuyang stood out. At this point, the geniuses of the outer palace must stay united.

“What?! Is the outer palace revolting against us?”

Gu Rong widened his glare.

“Revolting? Isn’t elder Gu Rong’s remark a little harsh? I personally think that Gu Chen is right. We are all the members of the Gu Family and shouldn’t have any separation like the inner and outer palace. Furthermore, today’s outcome indicated that the geniuses of the inner palace are only this powerful. Gu Chen is merely a First Grade Great Saint but he is already capable of making so many geniuses of the inner palace cry for their mama. It is the luck of Gu Palace to have such a genius sent from the Pure Land.”

An elder beside Gu Rong spoke. His name was Gu Zheng. He was once a disciple of the outer palace. He also felt extremely uncomfortable about the inequality between the inner and outer palace.

Jiang Chen saw these all in his eyes, adding another concern in his heart. He had never thought that the internal conflict of Gu Palace had already reached a point where it could no longer be ignored. Not only the young geniuses, but also the elders had rifts

in their relationship. Once this conflict was sparked up, the consequences would be unimaginable.

“Gu Zheng, ever since the establishment of Gu Palace, there has never been such an abominable incident that happened in our palace. Destroying the public facilities and ignoring the rules of Gu Palace are both serious crime and the person who committed it must receive a heavy punishment. Otherwise, how is Gu Palace going to control the disciples in the future?”

Shouted Gu Rong aloud in resoluteness.

“That’s bullshit. The only crime that Gu Chen did was beating up Gu Ling. This was mainly caused by the battle between the disciples which we usually would not care. About destroying the public facilities, I have a question for you. This is the territory of the outer palace, but why are there over a hundred people of inner palace disciples here? If you want to talk about destroying the public facilities, why don’t you begin with the people of the inner palace coming here to cause trouble? If you are bringing them to the punishment hall, you should bring Gu Lang and the others as well. Everything here has been destroyed and the disciples of the outer palace are the victims. It’s not fair for you to pass the judgement on the victims.”

Gu Zheng sounded just and seemed like he was going to stand on the outer palace’s side.

The tit for tat was going on between the two elders which increased Jiang Chen’s resoluteness in resolving the internal conflicts of Gu Palace.

Chapter 952 - After-Three-Days Battle Agreement

As a matter of fact, Fifth Grade Great Saints were commonly seen in Gu Palace. These four elders were merely of the lower rank. Judging by Gu Rong and Gu Zhen's clash of opinions, it was conceivable that such conflicts also existed among the higher ups.

The contradiction happened not only between the disciples, but also the Outer Palace and Inner Palace. The disciples of Inner Palace always thought that they were high and mighty geniuses, and looked down on the disciples of Outer Palace. Due to the disciples of Outer Palace also being members of Gu Family, naturally they wouldn't feel convinced by such a treatment. As such, the conflict between them grew deeper.

“Okay! You two, stop arguing!” Another elder said with a frown. “What's the difference between the two of you arguing here and them battling here? I believe that you all know very well that the conflicts between the inner and Outer Palace aren't matters of a day or two days of late. It has been unresolved until now. Today, on Gu Chen's arrival, it had erupted, but it's good that it finally reveals itself because this kind of relationship is unhealthy to Gu Palace after all. Now that the matter has shown itself, before it goes out of our control, we will have to resolve it as soon as possible. Gu Lian, Gu Chen, how do you want to solve it?”

The man who was talking was called Gu Wang. Among the elders, he had a greater influence. Jiang Chen couldn't help but to admire him, thinking that Gu Palace still had people who could discern the underlying problems in the palace. Jiang Chen believed

that there were still lots of higher ups who were also worrying about the internal conflicts in Gu Palace, with none of them had figured out a good way to stop it.

“Elder Gu Wang, I will have a battle with Gu Chen. If Gu Chen is defeated, everyone from Outer Palace, including Gu Chen has to apologize to Gu Lang and the others and from now on, every disciple of Outer Palace has to avoid members of the Inner Palace whenever they see us,” said Gu Lian.

“Gu Lian, you, a Fourth Grade Great Saint, surely has such a thick skin to challenge a First Grade Great Saint.”

Gu Zheng made a cold humph.

Elder Gu Wang waved his hand to stop Gu Zheng. He looked over at Jiang Chen. “Gu Chen, are you willing to accept the challenge of Gu Lian?”

“Of course I am willing to accept it, but I have conditions.”

Jiang Chen cupped his fists at the four elders.

“What conditions?”

Elder Gu Wang nodded admiringly for a First Grade Great Saint accepting the challenge of a Fourth Grade Great Saint without even taking a moment to consider it. This decisive act alone was enough to win his praise. Moreover, he had heard that not even Gu Lang

was a match for him. For a genius like him, even if he was from Pure Land, Gu Palace would need to take him seriously.

“If I lose, I will do whatever Gu Lian said and compensate them with huge amounts of wealth. From then on, wherever the people of Inner Palace are, we, the people of Outer Palace must avoid meeting them in person, but if I win, I want nothing but the dignity and status for the people of the Outer Palace. That’s what I am fighting for. I hope that if I win, from now on, there will be no more distinction and inequality between the Outer Palace and Inner Palace,” said Jiang Chen.

He wasn’t only speaking to the four elders, but also to the geniuses of Inner Palace. One should know that gaining back status and dignity couldn’t be decided by the elders. Otherwise, there wouldn’t have been internal conflicts within the elders either.

“Haha! You must be kidding. Gu Chen, you can’t beat me. If you really beat me in the battle, then I, Gu Lian, will be the first to serve you, and the people of Inner Palace won’t be looking down at the people of Outer Palace anymore.”

Gu Lian laughed aloud, but his tone was grim.

“Yes, as long as he can defeat Brother Gu Lian, we will all recognize you people from the Outer Palace.”

Someone from Inner Palace shouted. As a matter of fact, today’s battle had changed their opinion of the disciples of Outer Palace, especially Gu Chen who had impressed countless of them. If Gu

Chen was able to defeat a Fourth Grade Great Saint with the strength of a First Grade Great Saint, he would be regarded as the top genius of Gu Palace. Someone like him was going to shake even the higher ups.

Furthermore, this genius was from the Pure Land instead of their own Inner Palace. Thus, his victory would snatch away all their rights of looking down upon the people of Outer Palace.

“Very well, since you all have agreed to use this way to settle things, three days later, on the martial arena of Gu Palace, Gu Lian and Gu Chen are going to have a battle to determine the stronger one among them. There will be lots of spectators at that time. There will even be some higher ups secretly paying close attention to you two. Now, I am giving you all three days of preparation.”

Elder Gu Wang finished his words and left with the other three elders.

As to why Elder Gu Wang had to delay the battle until three days later, it wasn't because he wanted to stop Gu Chen and Gu Lian from immediately battling. These three days were mainly for the news of this battle to be spread out to everyone, to let them know that this was a battle relating to the internal conflict between the Inner Palace and Outer Palace. Once the higher ups knew about this, they would surely participate, as the significance of this battle was not ordinary. The more people watched the battle, the better it was for Gu Palace.

The time had come for the internal conflicts of Gu Palace to be resolved. Therefore, no matter who won or lost in the battle, it

would be beneficial to Gu Palace. If Gu Chen won, the internal conflict of Gu Palace would be settled and from then on, the disciples of Outer Palace would gain back their dignity and status. The disciples of Inner Palace wouldn't go and oppress them anymore, strengthening the solidarity of the entire Gu Palace. In addition, Gu Chen's fame was going to skyrocket after the victory and he would certainly be well nurtured by Gu Palace.

On the other hand, if Gu Lian won the battle, the internal conflict would escalate to the surface. The disciples of Outer Palace would become more and more powerless and perhaps plenty of the disciples of Outer Palace would return to Pure Land. Thereafter, Gu Palace would no longer accept the talents from Pure Land and also Gu Family and Gu Palace would be thoroughly separated. Even though this was considered a heartless act, Gu Palace would soon be as strongly bonded as steel, leaving no room for any potential internal conflict.

Gu Wang was a wise man. In fact, many of them weren't fools as well. They were able to discern the situation clearly, including Jiang Chen and Gu Lian. Thus, everyone understood the reason for the three days delay.

"Gu Chen, if I were you, I would admit defeat straightaway so that I won't lose face three days later." Said Gu Lian.

"We'll know who will lose his face on that day."

Jiang Chen's face was full of disdain. This three days time was actually a good thing for him. Without a doubt, defeating Gu Lian without the transformation wasn't an easy task. Now that he had

three extra days, he hoped that he could raise his strength to a higher level before the battle. If he could advance to Second Grade Great Saint, it would become effortless to defeat Gu Lian.

Jiang Chen's current cultivation grade was a peak First Grade Great Saint, which left him only 500 dragon marks more to achieve the advancement. He now needed only an opportunity or luck to break through into the next level.

Gu Lian left with the geniuses of Inner Palace. Since the battle has been decided, there was no point in staying here. Plus, they weren't welcome by the people here. As for Gu Lang and those whose legs had been broken by Gu Chen, they had also flown away to join the group. To any Great Saint cultivator, having one leg broken wasn't a serious injury.

As Jiang Chen landed from the sky, the group from Outer Palace immediately surrounded him.

"That's amazing! Marvelous! Gu Chen, you are so awesome, even that Gu Lang bastard has his leg broken by you. It was just so relieving. Just now I calculated that there were at least 30 of them whose legs have been broken. I would like to see whether they dare to express their arrogance to us anymore."

"Yeah! We have been nursing this grudge for very long and today, we are able to let it off. Those bastards of Inner Palace are only that powerful. I don't fear them anymore in a battle."

"We will follow Gu Chen from now on. If it wasn't for him, we

won't have such a satisfying day.”

.....

Comments and remarks filled the silence. Everyone looked dynamic and vigorous, as if the adrenaline shot was still in effect in their bodies, as they thought about the battle just now. As for the ruined buildings, it was nothing to them. All of them were Great Saint cultivators, and rebuilding the courtyard and rooms were going to take them mere minutes. Even creating a small spatial zone wouldn't be a problem for them.

The feeling was too awesome. At this time, everyone had the utmost admiration for Gu Chen and had unknowingly made Gu Chen their representative and leader. The saying said that the strong will be respected in this world. If it wasn't for Gu Chen's arrival, their lives would still be as usual, the lives where they would be disdained and bullied.

“But Gu Chen, that Gu Lian is a very difficult opponent. Do you have certainty in winning your battle?” Gu Liuying frowned and said.

The others shifted their gaze to Gu Chen. Although they had felt great from today's battle, the true show had not started yet. Three days later would be the real deal of the matter. If Gu Chen lost, their status wouldn't get any modification.

“Rest assured, brothers. I will surely defeat Gu Lian and regain the dignity of Outer Palace. This is a battle of dignity. Our dignity

can never be trampled on by someone so easily.”

Jiang Chen’s expression turned grim, and his eyes were cold. The aura that he exuded was unlimited confidence as if it came straight from his bones, affecting all the people around without them knowing.

“Alright, Gu Chen. We believe in you!” Gu Liuhui shouted.

After all, they had witnessed Gu Chen’s strength just a while ago. Despite the fact that there was a great difference of grade between Gu Chen and Gu Lian, it didn’t mean Gu Chen had no chance of winning at all.

Furthermore, they could only believe in Gu Chen in such a situation. Besides trusting and praying for him, there was nothing else they could do.

“Can everyone clean this place and restore the buildings? I’m going into a seclusion in preparation for the battle three days later.” Said Jiang Chen.

“No problem. It’s on us.”

After Gu Liuying finished speaking, he waved his hand. All of the ruins drifting above the mountains were cleared away. To over 100 of Great Saints, it was just too easy to rebuild the courtyards and homes. In just a few minutes, all the buildings had been rebuilt.

All the buildings here were built using rocks which they had stored a lot of. With the spatial force, building things had become oh so easy.

Chapter 953 - A Clash in the Refining Tower

After everything was restored and put back in place, Jiang Chen randomly found a courtyard and began his seclusion. It was not easy to break through to the Second Grade Great Saint in just three days.

The seclusion alone had already taken one day of his time. He shook his head helplessly. “Although there is just 500 more dragon marks left, it is really too difficult to fully condense them. Unless there is some kind of extraordinary thing that can help in breaking through my current grade. Otherwise, I won’t advance to the Second Grade Great Saint even if I stay in seclusion for two more days.”

Jiang Chen got up from the [putuan](#) and decided not to continue his seclusion. To him, this was a waste of time. There were only two more days before the battle with Gu Lian and he couldn’t afford to waste it.

Creak

Jiang Chen pushed the door open and saw Gu Liufeng, Gu Liuying and another youth standing in front as if they were about to knock the door.

“What’s the matter, Liufeng?” Jiang Chen asked.

He had been in contact with Gu Liufeng for quite some time now and had a certain understanding of him. If it was nothing

important, his friend wouldn't come to disturb him during his seclusion.

“Little Chen, today is the opening day of the Refining Tower. Brother Liuying is asking if you want to practice in the tower.” Gu Liufeng said.

“Isn't the Refining Tower opened every day? Many of them were practicing in the tower yesterday.” Jiang Chen said, mystified.

He could remember yesterday's events clearly. Gu Liuyang, Gu Ling and the others came back from the Refining Tower before the commencement of the tangled battle. In other words, the Refining Tower was already opened since yesterday, them saying that today was the opening day of the Refining Tower confused him.

“You must have not known about this, Gu Chen. The Refining Tower today isn't the same as the Refining Tower from yesterday. There is a total of nine Refining Towers in Saint Origin Palace. Each palace has one Refining Tower used for training. The function of the Refining Tower is to gather the Heaven and Earth Yuan Qi. Therefore, practicing inside the tower will speed up your cultivation advancement, but today is the opening day of the most unique Refining Tower of Saint Origin Palace which opens only once a month. All the geniuses of the eight palaces can enter. If we are late, all the good training spots will be occupied.” Gu Liuying explained.

“I see. So what's the difference between this Refining Tower and the one in Gu Palace?” Jiang Chen asked.

“There is a huge difference. The Refining Towers that belong to each of the palaces can only gather the Heaven and Earth Yuan Qi to thicken its density inside the tower. There are also some formations inside the tower that can help in cultivation, but the unique Refining Tower that is opened today allow those who enter the tower to absorb immortal Qi. Immortal Qi is a Qi that comes directly from the Immortal World. You will gain inestimable amount of benefits if you are able to absorb some of these Qi.” Gu Liuhui said hastily.

“Immortal Qi.”

Jiang Chen’s eyes lit up upon hearing this. Before, he was worried about how to get to the next level in the next two days. Now, it seemed like this Refining Tower was going to make his time worth. If he could absorb the immortal Qi inside, he would probably be able to stimulate his dragon transformation skill. By then, condensing another 500 dragon marks and advancing to the Second Grade Great Saint wouldn’t be a problem anymore.

As long as he could become a Second Grade Great Saint, dealing with Gu Lian would be a walk in the park.

“That’s right. During the time when Saint Origin Palace was built, the ancestors of eight major families deployed a formation with their great skills, this formation is now known as the Refining Tower. It could be used to absorb small amounts of immortal Qi from the Immortal World. Although the amount is very little, it brings an infinite amount of benefit to us. As it only opens once every month, there is intense competition among the geniuses of

the eight palaces.” Gu Liuying said.

“The tower must have been opened by now, right?” Jiang Chen asked.

“It has been opened for a while now.” Gu Liuhui replied.

“Alright, let’s go there now.” Jiang Chen said.

He was very interested in this Refining Tower. He was now eager to improve his strength. The immortal Qi that originates from the Immortal World was many times greater than the Heaven and Earth Yuan Qi of Saint Origin World. The dragon transformation skill that he cultivated was an unsurpassed divine skill, as such, he had strong absorptive capacity towards such high rank Yuan Qi.

Under Gu Liuying and Gu Liuhui’s lead, the four of them flew towards the direction of the Refining Tower at great speed. Jiang Chen and Gu Liufeng were going there for the first time. Jiang Chen seemed to be nearly emotionless but Gu Liufeng looked very excited.

The Refining Tower was located at the center of Saint Origin Palace. High above in the sky was an ancient and grey tower. It seemed to have nine storeys. There was a golden light on the top of the tower that went straight into the sky. No one could see where the end of the light but it looked as though it was going to drill a hole in the sky.

Around the tower was thousand of miles of emptiness which added some kind of desolating feeling to the tower. This was no doubt the Refining Tower that opened only once every month.

Currently, many people were moving towards the tower one after another with proud faces. They were all young geniuses from the eight major palaces. With so many of them attending, it became as one of the grand events in Saint Origin Palace.

“Gu Chen, this is the Refining Tower that only opens once a month. This tower is divided into nine levels. The higher the level, the higher the rate of absorption of the immortal Qi. Well, in the lower the level, the amount of immortal Qi is naturally lesser. All levels from the seventh level onwards are basically occupied by Fifth Grade Great Saints and above. With our current strength, we won’t be able to get there.” Gu Liuying explained.

“I’m afraid there will be constant friction and trouble when the geniuses of eight major palaces get together.” Jiang Chen smiled and said.

“Of course. There has always been tension among the eight major palaces. This time of the month was the most chaotic period. Many of them will fight for the site of cultivation, and their fights may even cause death. Because these are the competitions among the geniuses, the higher ups didn’t pay them much heed despite violence is involved in the process. As long as the competition doesn’t get too serious, no elders will care about them as this is a world has the rule of the jungle, where survival is for the fittest. Apart from allowing different geniuses to absorb the immortal Qi, the opening of the Refining Tower provides a good chance for

these geniuses to undergo tough training. Either it is Pure Land or Saint Origin Palace, the internal contradiction among the eight major palaces have long been deeply rooted. As such, it is common for them to die in a fight.” Gu Liuying said.

He had been here for a long time and knew quite a lot about the things and situation here. Saint Origin Palace was a place for the strong which intensified the competition. Comparing this place to Pure Land, this place was definitely more cruel.

“Normally, what level should we go?” Jiang Chen asked.

“Given our cultivation grade, we are can go to the fourth or fifth level, but I’m afraid these two levels have been fully occupied at this hour. So let’s try our luck in the fifth level.” Gu Liuying said.

“Well then, let’s get to the fifth floor.”

Jiang Chen nodded. He didn’t care about which level he would practice at because given his strength and technique, even if he was practicing at the lowest level, he could still absorb the immortal Qi. Although he would like to compete with the geniuses of the other six major palaces, it would best if he refrained himself from causing any trouble today. He just wanted to have a smooth cultivation and absorption of immortal Qi that would push his cultivation grade further to Second Grade Great Saint. In that way, he could fight Gu Lian two days later and get rid of the internal conflict in Gu Palace.

Just as Jiang Chen and the others were about to enter the

doorway to the fifth level, three figures who looked discomfited walked out from it. Looking at the clothes they were wearing, they were the disciples of Gu Palace.

The trio's faces and noses were swelling with bruises. Their Qi had become unstable, it might be due to some injuries in their bodies. Each of them looked extremely embarrassed. There was blood at the corner of the mouth of the one who stood in the middle. The cultivation grade of these three was Second Grade Great Saint.

“What happened to the three of you?” Jiang Chen asked with a frown.

These three weren't strangers to him. Although he had no idea who they were, he knew that they were geniuses who belonged to Inner Palace. They were present in the tangled battle yesterday.

Hearing the question directed at them, the three of them raised their heads. When they saw Jiang Chen, their eyes were filled with complicated emotions.

“Gu Chen.” The one in the middle murmured.

“Gu Yong, who did these to you all?” Gu Liuying asked heartily.

He felt very pleased to see them in such an embarrassing condition.

“It’s none of your business to know who did this to us.” Another genius of Inner Palace said coldly.

“You’re right. It is naturally none of our business to know who has beaten you all up, but it puts Gu Palace to shame when you all are beaten up here and none of you even have the courage to fight back which makes it even more insulting. You people of Inner Palace is so disappointing.” Jiang Chen displayed a face of crude disdain.

“Gu Chen, that’s enough. We don’t need any more of your sarcasm and sneer.” Gu Yong said loudly.

“As I said, there is nothing like Inner Palace and Outer Palace in my eyes. This is the Refining Tower. You guys not only represent yourself but also the reputation of Gu Palace. Tell me, who has beaten you guys up?”

Jiang Chen looked at them with his blade-sharp eyes, as if an emperor was questioning his subjects, which made them not even dare to ignore it.

“It’s the men of Desolate Palace, we have found a spot to practice first but they came and seized that away and beat us up.” Gu Yong said.

“Bring me there.” Jiang Chen said in an indisputable tone.

They exchanged a look and nodded. They strode back into the

fifth level. The Heaven and Earth Yuan Qi in the fifth floor was certainly denser than the outside. A casual inhale could refresh one's mind.

There were small secret chambers in this level with a stone door in every chamber. If the stone door wasn't closed, it meant no one was inside and anyone was allowed to enter freely, whereas if the stone door was closed, it indicated that the chamber was occupied by someone. Presently, basically all the secret chambers had been closed and plenty of people were still looking for a spot of cultivation outside.

“Where is it?” asked Jiang Chen.

“Right here.”

Gu Yong came to a secret chamber whose door was tightly closed. Someone had already occupied this chamber.

“We found this secret chamber first but Desolate Ichiro and his comrades came and then seized it from us, and attacked us. That Desolate Ichiro is a Third Grade Great Saint. We are no match for him.” Gu Yong said, gritting his teeth.

Thinking about the shitty scenario just now made him feel very unpleasant.

“Kick the door open.” Jiang Chen said coldly.

“I’ll kick it!”

A man beside Gu Yong walked forth and landed his foot on the stone door.

Putuan – some kind of round cushion used for meditation.

Chapter 954 - Murder

Hong!

That youth of Gu Palace stepped heavily against the stone door causing it to shudder and let out a buzzing sound that resounded across the fifth level. The foot of the Second Grade Great Saint that could crush a huge mountain failed to break open the stone door.

However, this was rather normal. Jiang Chen was able to see that the stone door was already been deployed with a seal by the experts, which made it invulnerable to ordinary attack.

Hong.....

That youth raised his leg again. “Desolate Ichiro, get your a*s out now!”

The youth sounded very arrogant. Despite the fact that Desolate Ichiro was a Third Grade Great Saint, it didn’t concern them at all, this was because they had already witnessed Jiang Chen’s strength before, not even the peak Third Grade Great Saint, Gu Lang was his opponent, let alone Desolate Ichiro.

Their current target was the people of Desolate Palace and they, the people of Gu Palace should unite. Thinking about Gu Chen willing to help them fight back made their hearts moved as they weren’t enemies a day ago. The overbearing aura that exuded from Jiang Chen’s body made them succumb.

The movement here immediately attracted lots of attention. People were craning their heads to the source of the commotion. The highest cultivators here were all Third Grade Great Saint, any cultivator higher than that grade had already proceeded to the sixth level. This was the reason why Gu Yong and his companions acted so arrogantly. Fundamentally, they concluded that there was no one who could be Jiang Chen's opponent in the fifth level.

Bang Bang Bang!

Gu Yong stepped forth and trampled the stone door three times, causing it to produce clacking sound. The people who were cultivating inside would certainly lose their temper even if they were very patient people.

The stone door opened slowly. Three furious-looking men emerged. The leader was tall and had a ferocious, face his cultivation was at the Third Grade Great Saint. He was Desolate Ichiro. On both of his sides were two Second Grade Great Saints geniuses of Desolate Palace, who also looked angry. Anyone that was forcefully interrupted during their cultivation would surely get angry.

When Desolate Ichiro and his comrades saw that the ones who trampled the door were the people whom they had thrown out of the secret chamber, their anger faltered.

“Dammit! The three of you pricks dare to kick my door and interrupted my cultivation! Do you believe that I will not kill you

all immediately? If you die here in the Refining Tower, it's going to be a death in vain."

Desolate Ichiro said brutally to the three of them.

"He is Desolate Ichiro, this man can't be offended. Why are the people of Gu Palace trying to seek trouble on him?"

"Maybe you guys don't know about this. This secret chamber was taken by Gu Yong and his friends at first but Desolate Ichiro came and seized it from them. Not only did he force them out of the secret chamber, but also beat them up. However, these three guys must be mentally ill to kick Desolate Ichiro's door off. Don't they know what death is?"

"That's right. You know, there have been murder in this Refining Tower and Desolate Ichiro has a cultivation of a Third Grade Great Saint, they are no match for him."

Everyone started discussing. Several cultivators from Gu Palace walked over when they noticed that there was a fight here. Initially, they had the same thought as the others but when they saw Gu Chen with Gu Yong and the rest, their worries faded. With regards to this man who had just arrived in Saint Origin Palace a day ago, they knew pretty well about him compared to others. Although Desolate Ichiro was very terrifying, comparing him to this newbie, they would probably miles apart.

"Desolate Ichiro, it is still not certain who will die today. You all have forcefully occupied my practice chamber. It is best if you all

scram now, kowtow before me and apologize and compensate the losses you have incurred, then I will pretend that today's matter have never happened.”

A cultivator beside Gu Yong said with confidence. Given his knowledge of Gu Chen's ability, he had already put Desolate Ichiro out of his eyes.

Desolate Ichiro and the other two were stunned. They even doubted that they might have some problems with their ears. Are they making some kind of joke? These three were beaten up until they wanted to cry for their papa, but now, they had returned to oppress them?

“Gu Yong, is your damn brain fried up after the beating? It looks like you don't know how to write the word 'death'.”

Desolate Ichiro's face turned ferocious.

“You're right, he really doesn't know how to write the word 'death' because he's not going to die.”

A voice sounded from Gu Yong's side, the voice didn't belong to a stranger but Jiang Chen's.

The three adversaries shifted their gaze at Jiang Chen. When they realized that Jiang Chen was merely a First Grade Great Saint, they laughed. “Where the heck did you come from? What qualification does a puny First Grade Great Saint have to speak

here?”

“You’d better do as he says, kowtow apologetically and compensate.”

Jiang Chen said with a smile. There was no indication that he was angry.

“Darn it! A First Grade Great Saint dare to speak to brother Ichiro in such a manner? That’s courting death! You, kneel down before me now!”

A Second Grade Great Saint beside Desolate Ichiro stepped forth, raised his hand ready to send Jiang Chen a slap.

Pa!

A loud slap was heard. The one who got hit wasn’t Jiang Chen, it was that genius of Desolate Palace. He was slapped by Jiang Chen to the ground. Then, Jiang Chen lifted his leg and stepped on his face. Seeing this scene made Gu Yong and the other two couldn’t help but shiver. It was exactly the same technique that Gu Chen used yesterday, but staying in close proximity to Gu Chen made them feel even more frightened, despite the close distance, their eyes still couldn’t capture when did he move, they only saw the Second Grade Great Saint being slapped to the ground.

The scene made a lot of people dumbfounded, including Desolate Ichiro.

“Who is this person? I have never seen him before. He is merely a First Grade Great Saint, but how can he be this powerful? This must be an accident.”

“He should be the new guy from Gu Palace. Never thought that this newbie can be this arrogant. I that think Desolate Ichiro would really go mad this time.”

“There isn’t any secret chamber left anyway, it’s good that we can watch a show. We’ll only go to the fourth level to find a place after this show ends.”

.....

The bystanders around were shocked, they had never seen someone like Jiang Chen before, someone that powerful.

“A*shole.”

That youth roared below Jiang Chen’s foot, but couldn’t get away from ground.

“Take off your stinking foot.”

Desolate Ichiro raged. “I just want to remind you that if you die here, your death would only be in vain because no one will care about the homicide.”

“Really? I feel relieved now that you said so.”

Cold lights glinted from Jiang Chen’s eyes. A force was abruptly exerted from his foot. A sound of a cry with bone-cracking noise was heard. The skull of the youth was distorted by the heavy step, blood pouring out. The youth died instantly after a few twitches.

“What?”

The scene made countless of them exclaim. All of them changed the way they looked at Jiang Chen. None of them thought that this new guy from Gu Palace would kill so quickly; without even a sign or a warning.

One should know that a conflict was one thing while murder was another. Fights could happen in this place and it was very normal, but a murder like this was very rare.

Gu Yong and the others looked at Jiang Chen, petrified. They had never thought that Jiang Chen had such temper and ruthlessness. Even if they were standing on the same side as him, they couldn’t help but shiver. Thinking back to the scene that happened yesterday, they felt that they were really lucky. It looks like if they weren’t people of Gu Palace, they would be stepped to death for offending him.

“You-you have really killed him?”

Desolate Ichiro stared at Jiang Chen in disbelief. He felt shocked in his heart. Not only was he shocked by Jiang Chen's audacity, but also shocked by his cultivation. Daring to kill someone was one thing while having the ability to kill was the other. The only explanation for this was the Second Grade Great Saint was too weak, while the youth in front of him was too strong.

“If you kowtow and apologize now, your life will be spared.”

Jiang Chen looked at Desolate Ichiro and said coldly.

“Son of a b*tch, this guy is too proud.”

The Second Grade Great Saint beside Desolate Ichiro had the urge to cough up blood. A comrade of his was just killed and now, they were demanded to kowtow and apologize? This would not only shame them but also Desolate Palace.

“Well, well, well. I didn't expect that such arrogant and bold person has emerged in Gu Palace. Your audacity is really too much for killing our people. Since you are seeking death, I will fulfil your wish. Tell me, what's your name? I, Desolate Ichiro won't kill a nameless ghost.”

Desolate Ichiro's chest rose and fell as though the anger inside was going to burst any time, burning everything here.

“Gu Chen.”

Jiang Chen announced his name.

Gu Liufeng at one side was shaking his head, looking at Desolate Ichiro with pity. This pitiful guys was destined to face a tragedy. He knew Jiang Chen all too well. Jiang Chen was originally a lawless person who wasn't afraid of the Heavens and Earth, there was nothing that he wouldn't dare to do. Now that he had begun to kill people, he absolutely wouldn't mind killing another one.

Hong.....

Desolate Ichiro unleashed the Qi of a Third Grade Great Saint completely. He locked on Jiang Chen's Qi, and decided that he was going to torture his arrogant bastard well. He wouldn't let this brat die so easily. He would let him know the cruel repercussion of offending Desolate Palace.

“Humph!”

Jiang Chen made a cold humph. Without wasting any time, he struck out with his True Dragon Palm, grabbing Desolate Ichiro and throwing him out with all of his might.

Bang!

Desolate Ichiro didn't even have the chance to resist before he was hurled by Jiang Chen like a sandbag, heavily smashing to the ground in the distance. His head was spinning while his mouth was spurting out blood.

Subsequently, Jiang Chen struck again, yanking him to his front. The current Desolate Ichiro had eyes brimming with fear. The blow made him understand one fact, never judge a person's power by his cultivation because there are some people who couldn't be judged using common sense.

“What-what are you doing?”

Desolate Ichiro croaked as though his throat was dry. He could feel the murderous intent of Jiang Chen. Dread started to fill his heart. He tried to get away only to find that he had fallen into Jiang Chen's control, like an unbreakable cage, leaving no chance of escape at all.

Chapter 955 - The Man and The Dog Teamed up Once Again

“Whatever you wanted to do just now is what I will do. After all, dying here won’t draw any attention.”

Jiang Chen’s face was ruthless. He released a burst of energy that crushed Desolate Ichiro from all sides.

“No...”

Desolate Ichiro uttered a loud cry as he felt the Qi of death. He had not thought that his adversary would really murder him. This was simply unbelievable. He felt very sorry now for seizing the secret chamber of Gu Palace when there were still several secret chambers at that time. Now it seemed a price had to be paid for his actions but the price was way too heavy.

Bang!

His body fell to the ground and he died after a few movements.

The atmosphere turned dead silent. The people watching became breathless as they stared at Jiang Chen’s composed face. It felt like killing the geniuses of Desolate Palace was no different than killing ordinary people to him.

“My god, what’s the background of this Gu Chen? He is very bold

to kill someone so quickly. I'm afraid Desolate Palace won't let this matter go."

"This Gu Chen must be a newbie of Gu Palace. I am surprised not by his boldness but his strength. Desolate Ichiro is an intimidating Third Grade Great Saint, but he killed him without any hesitation. It is absolutely a good fortune for Gu Palace to have such genius."

"That's too amazing. A First Grade Great Saint killing a Third Grade Great Saint? If I didn't witness this personally, I wouldn't believed it."

.....

Everyone became unsettled due to the extreme shock they had just received. A brutal and vicious genius of Gu Palace emerged. It looked like Saint Origin Palace would turn lively in the near future. Gu Yong and his comrades were also dumbfounded. Only Gu Liufeng looked perfectly fine, after all, he had known Jiang Chen for quite some time.

Those cultivators of Gu Palace around looked at Jiang Chen in complete terror, particularly the ones from Inner Palace. Comparing yesterday's scene and today's scene gave them a sense of gratitude. They felt fortunate that Jiang Chen showed mercy to them, otherwise it would not be only their legs that would be broken.

But then, every cultivator of Gu Palace was looking incomparably relieved, especially Gu Yong and his two comrades. They were the

ones that were beaten up by these Desolate bastards. It was Gu Chen who stood up for them and eliminated their source of grudge which had helped them unleash all of their suppressed grievance.

At this moment, many cultivators who were practicing in their secret chambers were startled, and came out of their chambers. There were plenty of Desolate Palace's geniuses among them. When they saw their comrades lying in a puddle of blood, they got angry.

Swoosh!

Jiang Chen gazed at the last man of Desolate Palace, the Second Grade Great Saint. Two were down out of the three men.

"It's your turn. You can choose to kneel down to apologize, or die like them." Jiang Chen's words were cold and emotionless.

In many people's views, Gu Chen had gone too far. Since two geniuses of Desolate Palace had been killed, it should be more than enough to settle the score, but he was still showing no quarter.

Naturally, they did not know about the clashes between Jiang Chen and Desolate Family. He would never be polite to the people of Desolate Family or Desolate Palace. He had always forgotten what kindness was when it came to his enemies.

"Gu Chen, don't go too far on this." A bellow was heard from a distance.

Over 20 cultivators of Desolate Palace gathered together. There were a few cultivators that had similar grade to Desolate Ichiro, Third Grade Great Saint. The Qi of this group were racing towards Jiang Chen's direction. The one who spoke was a young man who stood at the most front. He was a Third Grade Great Saint which looked as strong as Gu Lang, and slightly stronger than Desolate Ichiro.

"Gone too far? I don't feel even the slightest bit of that. It's your Desolate Palace who started the trouble first. They refused to apologize so they will have to pay with their lives." Jiang Chen shrugged his shoulders and said casually.

Then, a dazzling and sharp light appeared in his hand. Before the Second Grade Great Saint disciple could react, his head was severed from his body. A Second Grade Great Saint died on the spot without even having the chance to wail.

Presently, those three bastards that brutally beat Gu Yong and his two comrades and seized their secret chamber were dead. Jiang Chen's means of killing were ruthless and emotionless.

"Son of a b*tch!"

The group of Desolate Family cursed. They were infuriated, but seeing how powerful Gu Chen was, they did not dare to rush forward.

"Gu Chen, Desolate Palace will record your 'deeds' today." The

leading youth said viciously.

“If you don’t want to die, you’d better get out of my sight this instant. I don’t want to see any one from Desolate Palace in the fifth level. All of you, scram! You’re not allowed to train here.”

Without giving a glance at the group of disciples of Desolate Palace, Jiang Chen said in indisputable tone.

Hiss.....

Hearing this, many people sucked in a breath of cold air. This was what they called power. He’s too domineering. As much as there were constant and numerous competitions in the Refining Tower, nothing as overbearing as this had ever happened. Today was the first time that the right of Desolate Palace to practice was taken away by this Gu Chen in the Refining Tower.

Those disciples of Gu Palace had now been fully overwhelmed by the hegemonic spirit of Gu Chen. Even though Gu Palace was never a weak race among the eight palaces, the disciples had never felt as elated like today in the Refining Tower. The awe-inspiring feeling created by Gu Chen made them feel very honorable to be a part of Gu Palace. It gave them the feeling that Gu Palace was the controller of this place. Whoever they did not allow to practice here must get his or her a*s off immediately. This was how arrogant and overpowering they now looked.

“What did you say?”

The leading youth of Desolate Palace glared at Jiang Chen. The name of this leading youth was Desolate One who clearly was suspecting his ears. This arrogant son of a b*tch wanted their people to get out of the Refining Tower? In other words, he was going to snatch away all their rights of cultivating here? How possibly could the people of Desolate Palace accept this?

“Is it that your brain is spoiled or your ears can’t hear properly? He is demanding you all to scram! Haha! I suggest you all to do as he says now.”

At this moment, a loud voice was heard from behind. Everyone turned to find the source of the voice and saw a large yellow dog swaggering towards the scene. Beside him was a good-looking youth. Judging from the bursting Qi of the youth and the dog, they were from Demon Palace.

When Jiang Chen saw Big Yellow, he smiled in his heart. Big Yellow was now a Second Grade Great Saint. It seemed that he was doing pretty well in Demon Palace and might have gotten a dignified status in the palace. This could be observed from the way the geniuses of Demon Palace looked at him. It was difficult for anyone from Demon Palace to not pay respect to the being who possessed the Divine Beast Bloodline and Totem Divine Seal, unless their brains were thoroughly fried.

Actually, the fact that Big Yellow could advance to Second Grade Great Saint in three days was enough to tell whether Big Yellow was having a satisfying life in Demon Palace.

“Hehe... Little Chen, Master Dog has come to help you steer the

situation.” Big Yellow said, chuckling. His voice entered directly into Jiang Chen’s ears.

“Nice job, Big Yellow.”

Jiang Chen praised Big Yellow. It was the best time for Big Yellow to appear. Today, Big Yellow was already a member of Demon Palace which indicated that he also represented Demon Palace everywhere he went. Unknowingly, this had brought Gu Palace and Demon Palace together. This was the first step and was considered the perfect start.

“Where did this dog come from? You dare to sneer at us? Are you courting death?”

Desolate One was angered. Today was really too frustrating. Three of his people had been killed and they were chased out of the Refining Tower by a wild dog, which emerged all of a sudden and sneered at them for no reason.

“What makes you qualify to shout at Master Dog’s face? I think you are the one who is courting death. Master Dog is just watching the show, are you telling me that any bystander who watches the show isn’t allowed to talk? When has Desolate Palace become so arrogantly ignorant?”

Big Yellow was not a person to be trifled with. Before this, he was worrying the Desolate guy would ignore him, but after that reply, it made things a lot easier.

“It seems you have gotten tired of living.”

Desolate One could feel his stomach burning with rage. Since he couldn't defeat Gu Chen, he might as well express all the stuffed grudge on this dog because no one asked this dog to appear at such a bad time.

Hong!

Desolate One struck out his palm at Big Yellow creating gusts of fierce and swift winds like spiraling combat weapons, charging at Big Yellow.

“Seeking death!”

Vicious light glowed in Big Yellow's eyes. Golden illumination radiated from his head while it ran into Desolate One's palm of wind.

Hong Long!

The two strikes collided. The whole fifth level of Refining Tower began to tremble. The attack of the dignified Third Grade Great Saint, Desolate One, could pulverize a mountain with ease, but all the destructive force of the attack was instantly smashed into pieces by Big Yellow's head.

Whoosh!

Desolate One did not even have the time to feel shocked when a ray of light rushed forth, appearing before him in a blink.

He knew this was a dangerous moment, so he hurriedly blocked the incoming strike with all his Yuan Force, but it was already too late.

Bang!

Big Yellow's head was like a golden drill that smashed on Desolate One's chest. Desolate One let out a cry as his body was flying away. The portion of his chest that had collided turned concave and blood was gushing out his mouth.

"Damn it! Where did this dog come from? How can he be this powerful?"

"Motherf*cker! This person can't be a newbie of Demon Palace. That's too abnormal for a newcomer. His head is way too hard, not even the Third Grade Great Saint, Desolate One, can fight back."

"Desolate Palace is really unlucky today. First, they met Gu Chen, and then a dog jumped out of Demon Palace abruptly. I thought this dog will be Desolate One's punching bag. I didn't expect it to be the other way around."

.....

The people of Desolate Palace became depressed and frustrated. When had they ever felt this bad before in the Refining Tower? It was supposed to be a fight between them and Gu Palace, but suddenly a dog emerged out of nowhere. It annoyed them even more when their genius could not even fight the dog and was severely injured due to the dog's strike.

If the injured genius continued the fight, given the dog's posture and gesture, it did not seem the dog would hesitate to kill.

Chapter 956 - The Immortal Qi

Not only the cultivators of Desolate Palace were feeling suffocated and aggrieved, they also felt deeply shocked, especially Desolate One. After the exchange of blows, he couldn't help but reexamine Big Yellow's ability. It was true that his own ability wasn't very strong, but the strike of his opponent had injured him. This indicated that there was a certain gap between their strength.

Moreover, Big Yellow was merely a Second Grade Great Demon Saint. It looked like not only the Gu Palace, but even Demon Palace had produced a true genius. He believed that it would not take long for these geniuses to become brilliant experts in Saint Origin Palace.

“On the count of three, if you don't leave, I will kill you.”

Jiang Chen's cold eyes swept across everyone from Desolate Palace. That cruel stare made everyone shiver. None of them would dare doubt the truthfulness of his words, the three lying bodies were the best proof of it. One should never doubt the audacity of a vicious person like Gu Chen. Otherwise, the consequences would be unbearable.

“Brother One, what should we do now?” Someone from Desolate Palace asked reluctantly.

“Let's leave. It isn't over yet.”

Desolate One wiped the blood off the corner of his mouth. Then,

he kept the three corpses into his spatial ring and left with his people with their heads facing down. Ever since the completion of the Refining Tower, Desolate Palace had never been so humiliated. Anyone could imagine that Desolate Palace would never let this matter go. Everything that happened here, including Gu Chen's name would certainly be spread to virtually across all the different palaces.

“Brother is really domineering. Master Dog like it. How may I address you, brother? Does Master Dog have the permission to befriend this brother?”

Big Yellow feigned his sincerity. Seeing his action, Kong Yang held himself from cracking up.

“Of course, I also see that Brother Dog has the same temperament as I do. Why not we Gu Palace and Demon Palace share all the secret chambers together?”

Jiang Chen put up a pretence.

“That would certainly be wonderful. Everybody, listen up. All these empty secret chambers left by Desolate Palace will be shared by Gu Palace and Demon Palace, anyone who hasn't gotten a place here for cultivation spot, go and find one in the fourth level.”

Big Yellow's remark had bound Gu Palace and Demon Palace together while excluding the other palaces. To Big Yellow and the others, anyone aside from the Gu Palace and Demon Palace was considered their enemy. Thus, he needed not be courteous to

them.

The geniuses of the five palaces murmured to themselves, looking extremely dissatisfied, but the both of them were just too strong for them to oppose. On the other hand, the people of Gu Palace and Demon Palace were exhilarated because a lot of them had not had the chance to cultivate in the secret chamber.

In particular, the geniuses of Gu Palace were having a proud look on their faces, as if they would rise to the sky soon. They were absolutely elated. Gu Chen had helped them gain tremendous reputation and authority.

“Gu Chen, thank you so much for what happened today. I didn’t expect that you would put our past behind.” Gu Yong came before Jiang Chen and said, cupping his fists.

“Gu Yong, you have to remember that yesterday’s event only happened between the Inner Palace and Outer Palace, not you and me. What I don’t wish to see is the separation of the two groups in Gu Palace, which is supposed to be united into one. That was the reason I interfered. In my eyes, every one of you is my family. How could I turn a blind eye when you guys were being beaten and bullied by outsiders? I won’t allow that. I won’t allow the people of Desolate Palace to oppress you all, like how I refused you guys to oppress the disciples of the Outer Palace,” said Jiang Chen earnestly, patting Gu Yong’s shoulder.

Hearing this, Gu Yong and the others had their heads facing downwards, feeling somewhat ashamed.

Gu Liuying and Gu Liuhui exchanged a glance and couldn't help raising their thumbs for Gu Chen. This man was old and wise. They wouldn't dare imagine his future achievements. Even before battling Gu Lian, he had thoroughly changed the impression of those geniuses of the Inner Palace. That was a change that came from the bottom of their hearts, and they could feel it. They felt that Gu Yong and the other geniuses of the inner palace weren't the same as before. The internal conflicts that they have was gradually improving for the better.

It seemed like Gu Chen's interference was more effective than defeating Gu Lian.

“Gu Yong, I have some pills here. Take them to the brothers who were injured in yesterday's battle. I believe their injuries will recover soon after taking these pills.”

Jiang Chen took out a spatial ring and handed it to Gu Yong. This was what they called the policy of appeasement. When there were no other solution to the internal conflicts, a head-on battle would be the only solution, however, one should still offer some benefits to the defeated opponents. It wasn't an easy thing to change a person's perception and this was exactly what Jiang Chen wanted.

It was conceivable that the geniuses and even the higher ups of Gu Palace would praise Gu Chen when they learned about today's incident. After all, it was Gu Chen who had earned back the face of Gu Palace by suppressing the arrogance of Desolate Palace. With the combination of these pills, all feuds and grudges would be reduced as they now gain a better understanding of Gu Chen. Two

days later, if he could defeat Gu Lian in front of all the disciples of Gu Palace, a large portion of the internal conflicts would be resolved, and in time, Gu Palace would be as united as the particles of a steel plate.

“Many thanks, Brother Chen.”

Gu Yong received the spatial ring with gratitude.

“It is our honor to have a genius like Brother Chen.”

“That’s right, with Brother Chen’s strength and talent, he can shake the entire Saint Origin Palace sooner or later.”

“Brother Chen, we apologize for disrespecting you the day before.”

.....

Many disciples of inner palace responded solemnly and apologetically. Given their pride, it would be impossible for them to apologize to someone if they did not admire that person wholeheartedly.

“Gu Chen is truly amazing. He just arrived yesterday but he has already convinced the geniuses of the inner palace. It seems like the internal conflicts in Gu Palace will be resolved soon. At that time, we would no longer be suffocated from the grievances anymore.”

Gu Liuying sighed and couldn't help but be impressed by Gu Chen's carrot and a stick approach.

"Alright. Guys, let's go practice, with our friends from Demon Palace. Let's not delay our precious cultivation period," said Jiang Chen to the crowd.

Later, while the geniuses of the five palaces were watching with envy, the people of Gu Palace and Demon Palace harmoniously went into all of the empty chambers, filling all of the empty cultivation spots. Jiang Chen, Big Yellow and Kong Yang feigned a conversation before walking into the same secret chamber together.

Dong!

Then, the stone door of the secret chamber shut tightly. Big Yellow burst into laughter.

"Brother Jiang, Big Yellow, you two surely have extraordinary acting skills."

Kong Yang couldn't help laughing.

"Brother Kong, you should never call me by my real name from now on. I am now called Gu Chen, just call me Little Chen like Big Yellow." Reminded Jiang Chen specifically.

“Pardon my carelessness.”

Kong Yang sighed. Out of excitement, he had forgotten the most important part of the plan—Jiang Chen’s identity must be kept a secret.

“I’ve heard that there is a lot of internal conflicts in Gu Palace, but I can see that you have done a good job in handling that,” said Big Yellow.

He and Kong Yang had already been here for three days.

“Exactly. That’s my main concern for now, which is to eliminate the internal conflicts in Gu Palace, making them unite once again. Today, the Desolate Palace has given me a chance and brought me closer to my objective. It is starting to take effect now. Big Yellow’s appearance has brought the two major powers together again, given that these two palaces has been in good relationship over the years. This is an excellent situation as it has paved the way for the future cooperation between these two major powers.”

Jiang Chen gave a thumbs up to Big Yellow. He did not expect that Big Yellow would suddenly appear at the most critical moment. The cooperation between him and Big Yellow earlier was tacit and flawless. Even though it was just a tiny matter amongst the disciples, it still played a great role in building a strong connection which would make their alliance strong.

“But Desolate Palace won’t let this matter go after what you’ve done to their people.” Said Kong Yang.

“It doesn’t matter. Desolate Family and I have always been enemies. Plus, Gu Palace certainly won’t stay indifferent when Desolate Palace is coming after me. The better I perform, the more Gu Palace would care about me. Though I don’t know very well the circumstances of Saint Origin Palace, I’m confident that the higher ups of the various palaces could discern the situation clearly and Gu Palace should be able to realize my importance.” Said Jiang Chen confidently.

“Killing the geniuses of Desolate Palace is no big deal anyway. This isn’t the first time that this kind of things happened. By the way, this cultivation spot is not bad. I heard that the tower has been opened for almost a day. Let’s not waste any more time and start cultivating.” Big Yellow said, he walked towards a putuan.

There were three putuans in this secret chamber which fitted exactly three people.

Jiang Chen and Kong Yang went to the other two putuans and sat cross-legged. It was their first time coming to Saint Origin Palace, and was also their first time cultivating in the Refining Tower, which made them feel a little excited. If they could absorb some of the immortal Qi, the benefits that they would get would absolutely be boundless.

Jiang Chen circulated his Great Soul Derivation Technique and discovered an invisible passageway between the tower and the Immortal World. It was like some sort of formation was connecting these two places. As to whether he could absorb the immortal Qi through this vague passageway, it would have to

depend on his ability.

There were a total of nine levels in the Refining Tower. The higher the level, the closer it was to the passageway, which allowed cultivators to sense the immortal Qi easily and more immortal Qi could be absorbed.

On the other hand, the lower the level, the further it was to the vague passageway. It would also become more difficult to sense the presence of the immortal Qi which led to lower chances of absorbing the immortal Qi, even if one could absorb it, the amount would be very limited.

Jiang Chen and the others were now at the fifth floor, not very high nor very low. There was a certain degree of difficulty while sensing the immortal Qi. It mainly depended on one's luck.

As for Jiang Chen, his luck had never been bad. The dragon transformation skill that he cultivated had brought him innumerable luck. Like now for instance, the combination of Great Soul Derivation Technique and dragon transformation skill only took him a few minutes to sense the Qi from the Immortal World. In the chaotic void, there were traces of glittering airflow. Those air current were filled with the aura of nobility. Without a doubt, it was the legendary immortal Qi whose quality was a lot higher than the Heaven and Earth Yuan Qi in Saint Origin World.

Chapter 957 - The Seizure

Jiang Chen discovered a tiny spatial zone on the top of the Refining Tower. This miniature space should be specially created by the masters of Saint Origin Palace. It was a small area with only 1,000 miles radius, where the immortal Qi was accumulated.

In other words, all the geniuses who practiced in the Refining Tower were getting the immortal Qi from this miniature spatial zone. Under normal circumstances, the absorption rate of the geniuses were many times quicker than the rate that the immortal Qi was accumulated, which was why the tower would only be opened once a month.

On the day the tower was opened, most of the immortal Qi in the miniature spatial zone would be absorbed by those geniuses who entered the tower. Subsequently, the following days would be used to accumulate the immortal Qi, until the next month.

The size of the spatial zone was merely 1,000 miles wide, only a small amount of immortal Qi could be stored inside. Plus, it was considered too little for these geniuses. Even the geniuses situated at the ninth level wouldn't be able to obtain a significant amount of immortal Qi, and some might not even have the probability of absorbing any.

Immortal Qi was a high rank Qi that came from the high and mighty Immortal World. Luck was an important element in order for one to absorb this type of Qi. Thus, the absorption of immortal Qi was related to the luck of the cultivator.

Indistinctly, Jiang Chen's divine sense had penetrated into the miniature spatial zone. He could feel traces of foreign divine sense drifting inside, while the immortal Qi was moving around unnoticeably, as if it was some sort of spiritual Qi.

The swirling airflow inside was the immortal Qi that had filled every corner of the miniature spatial zone. Jiang Chen, however, could sense all of these Qi perfectly, he even had the feeling that he could will all of the Qi towards him for absorption.

If the others knew about his current situation, their shock would be indescribable. One should know that even the geniuses in the ninth floor could only sense the existence of the miniature spatial zone, but not the immortal Qi. They could only sweep across the tiny spatial zone randomly, hoping that they could at least obtain some immortal Qi. It was simply appalling to know that Jiang Chen could accurately locate the immortal Qi. It was something that no one had never seen or heard before. This usually unbelievable things to other people were just simple things to Jiang Chen.

“Dragon transformation skill is indeed a supreme divine skill. It may even surpass the level of the Immortal World. Acquiring this skill was similar to obtaining a great luck. Things that others can't do are doable to me. I am going to circulate the dragon transformation skill to form an absorption whirlpool to suck large portion of the immortal Qi here. This would make my advancement to the Second Grade Great Saint incomparably easy.”

Jiang Chen revealed a trace of smile at the corner of his mouth. He had a uniquely exceptional advantage that was incomparable to

others.

Hu Hu.....

In the miniature spatial zone, a storm suddenly emerged. With his invisible divine sense at the centre, a three-meter wide whirlpool was formed. Its emergence had shaken the peace and serenity of the tiny virtual space.

Afterwards, an even more horrifying scene came into picture. With the vortex circulating faster and faster, all the immortal Qi inside the miniature spatial zone swirled automatically into it, as if they had been summoned.

The immortal Qi entered the whirlpool, and then flowed into Jiang Chen's body.

Hiss!

His body fluctuated and for an instant, he felt incomparably comfortable. His dragon transformation skill circulated at high speed. His bones were producing cracking sounds. The immortal Qi was rushing towards his four limbs, channelling all the energy to all over his body. New dragon marks started to form in his Qi Sea.

“What’s going on? Why is the miniature space shaking uncontrollably?”

“I feel that the immortal Qi is decreasing unceasingly. Who is the one doing this? What happened?”

“Some kind of turbulent wave appeared inside there. The miniature space has always been calm container of the immortal Qi. How could this happen so suddenly?”

.....

For a moment, all the geniuses in the Refining Tower were shocked, especially those who were situated at the seventh to the ninth level. All of these cultivators were the ones who had been working very hard in cultivation and this wasn't their first time coming here. Of all the times that they had been here, nothing like this had ever happened. Now, most of them were shaken, feeling discomforted.

“Big Yellow, Kong Yang, Liufeng, quickly will your divine sense into the whirlpool. Hurry up!”

Jiang Chen urged them using divine sense, including Gu Liufeng who was practicing in the next chamber.

The two men and the dog were stunned at first, and then understood what's happening. They swept their divine sense and found that the high-speed circulating whirlpool was actually created by Jiang Chen. They could feel that the immortal Qi was flocking towards the vortex.

The three of them had a look of surprise. Without delaying any longer, they immediately sent their divine sense into the whirlpool and felt the immortal Qi pouring into their bodies like a stream of water.

“Wow, this is so cool! Little Chen, you can actually direct all the immortal Qi to flow automatically into the vortex? That’s awesome! How did you do that?”

Big Yellow almost jumped out in excitement.

“Little Chen is a really strange man. This is simply incredible. Immortal Qi is so strong and thick. I can feel them rushing into my body, I am surely going to advance to the Second Grade Great Saint in no time.”

“Immortal Qi is too dense. I certainly won’t have any problems advancing into the Second Grade Great Saint. Sure enough, my luck got better when I followed little Chen. My future benefits would surely be immeasurable.”

Kong Yang and Gu Liufeng could hardly contain their astonishment. They were utterly impressed by Jiang Chen. It was so shocking that he could do such a thing, however, they could not care about their emotions now or how did Jiang Chen do it. The most important thing for them right now was to absorb the immortal Qi. They knew how important it was to them from the bottom of their hearts.

The whirlpool inside the spatial zone spun even more intensely.

The rate of absorption of immortal Qi became faster. Three men and a dog were clearly seizing away all the immortal Qi. Finally, the significant changes in the spatial zone had caught the attention of others'. Many geniuses realised that the vortex was sucking all of the immortal Qi at an astounding rate.

“So, it’s the whirlpool that is causing the trouble. It is abominable that someone is trying to snatch all of the immortal Qi away.”

“We must not let people snatch all the immortal Qi inside. This Refining Tower will only be opened once a month and the immortal Qi that exists inside is very beneficial to us. Let’s just enter the whirlpool using our divine sense and suck the immortal Qi away, saving all the unnecessary troubles.”

“Let’s not care about that much first. The amount of immortal Qi in the miniature spatial zone is originally sparse. At this rate, all of the immortal Qi will be sucked dry in a few minutes. This is the right time for us to penetrate into the whirlpool via our divine sense and obtain the immortal Qi.”

.....

Many of them had found out about the vortex of Jiang Chen. It was not the right time to find the one responsible for this vortex now, the most important thing to do now was to absorb the immortal Qi within the whirlpool. In their view, the immortal Qi was converging at the vortex which saved them a lot of trouble in finding it themselves.

Their ideas were excellent but too bad, they couldn't even get close to the edge of the whirlpool.

Numerous divine sense were rushing towards the whirlpool, but was thrown back the moment they touched the boundary of the vortex. No matter how hard they tried, their divine sense just couldn't get in.

“What happened? Why can't I get in?”

“Someone is doing this on purpose. Damn! We have to find out who that person is. Who is the one that is seizing all of the immortal Qi away?”

“Motherf*cker! This is certainly too much. This is not that different from robbing. Is this person not putting everyone of us here in his eyes? Who is audacious enough to ignore even the laws of the palace?”

“At present, there were only four divine senses in the whirlpool, that means that there are only four people seizing the immortal Qi in the miniature spatial zone. They are trying to empty the space. That's hateful! We have to find who are the ones involved in this. We have to bring those four damned ones to justice.”

.....

A lot of people were furious and at the same time, shocked. Over

the course of a hundred years that the Refining Tower existed, nothing as bold as this had ever happened. The man who made the whirlpool definitely did not putting everyone in his eyes.

“Kaka..... I assume that those bastards are certainly going to be extremely annoyed when their divine senses failed to enter the vortex.”

Big Yellow laughed with pleasantness.

“This is indeed intoxicating. However, isn’t this too much? I’m afraid that those geniuses won’t give this matter up.” Gu Liufeng said with apprehension.

“Liufeng, don’t worry too much about it. Just focus on trying your best to improve your cultivation as someone will certainly bear the consequences for us,” said Jiang Chen.

Cultivation had always been a competition. Given the limited amount of resources, it required extreme boldness and luck. If one allowed concern to overwhelm them before taking action, that person would only get peanuts or even nothing.

The geniuses were still unwilling to let go of this opportunity. Some powerful Sixth Grade Great Saints were attacking the whirlpool with their divine sense, attempting to rip a hole in it, but found out that it was all in vain. The vortex was formed by Jiang Chen’s dragon transformation skill and Great Soul Derivation Technique. Thus, not even a mighty sixth grade would be able to break it open. After all, the power of divine sense and

spiritual strength was never proportional to cultivation.

Hong.....

A wave burst out of Jiang Chen's body. His Qi had instantly broken into another level. Five hundred dragon marks were formed in this brief instant, pushing his cultivation to the Second Grade Great Saint. An astounding amount of high grade True Meta Stones were consumed. Two brilliant lights glowed from his eyes. His cultivation grade now brought him to another terrifying extent.

Chapter 958 - The Alliance of the Geniuses

“That’s incredible. Little Chen has just advanced to the Second Grade Great Saint but his Qi is still rising. Looks like he has acquired a tremendous amount of benefits from the immortal Qi. His cultivation will continue to rise at least until the peak of the Second Grade Great Saint if he can’t reach the Third Grade Great Saint. I, on the other hand, am not weak either, I’m about to hit the Second Grade Great Saint.”

Kong Yang’s eyes were brimming with shock while observing Jiang Chen’s majestic Qi, but he and Gu Liufeng had obtained huge benefits too. To them, this was the first time that they gained something from the immortal Qi. Plus, they had gotten a large amount of it which naturally brought them immeasurable benefits, as if their bodies were being baptized from inside out.

“Haha! Master Dog is going to break through to the Third Grade Great Saint soon.”

Big Yellow was bouncing up and down excitedly. He had just reached the Second Grade Great Saint not long ago. It wouldn’t be a matter of one or two days if he wanted to advance again, but now that he was being bathed by such copious immortal Qi, his advancement got kick-started again. It was absolutely a pleasure, thinking about advancing to the Third Grade Great Saint.

In the secret chamber next door, even though Gu Liufeng remained silent, his heart was full of delight, he was working hard to break through to the Second Grade Great Saint.

Jiang Chen was the one who absorbed most of the immortal Qi. His body had the capacity to accommodate hundreds of rivers. Despite it being his first time absorbing the immortal Qi, the profit that he gained was unimaginable. The ablutions of the immortal Qi would not only help him condense 500 dragon marks, pushing his cultivation to Second Grade Great Saint, because the number of new dragon marks was still increasing. At this rate, it would at least allow him to form another 1,000 dragon marks and stabilize his cultivation base, making a total of 83,000 dragon marks.

In the miniature spatial zone, the gifted disciples still continued their attacks on the whirlpool but still, none of them succeeded. They could only watch as all of the immortal Qi were being sucked away by the turbulent whirlpool. The whole process only lasted for a few minutes before the entire spatial zone was left with not even a strand of hair.

“Damn! Who did this? Who has absorbed all of the immortal Qi from the spatial zone? It wouldn’t even return to its original state even after a month!”

“The divine sense was coming from the fifth level. Let’s head over and see who is that audacious person that did such a deathly thing.”

“It’s from the fifth level. Three of the divine senses came from the same secret chamber. I have sensed the location of the chamber. Let’s go and find those audacious ones.”

.....

In that instant, the whole Refining Tower was agitated. All of the geniuses were brimming with fury. The lowest cultivation level amongst those geniuses from the seventh to ninth level was Fourth Grade Great Saint. Most of them were Fifth Grade and Sixth Grade Great Saints. These were the gifted disciples ranked number one or two in their respective palaces and had come to this tower for more than one or two times, but had never encountered such a thing. It was definitely a great eye-opener for them.

It wasn't long before all the geniuses arrived in the fifth level. Even the geniuses of the fifth level walked out of their secret chambers. What happened today was very infuriating. Everybody was keen to see who was the person who committed such a frenzied action. Thwarting someone from cultivating and advancing was akin to cutting someone's path of fortune and such act was considered shameful and disgraceful.

“Here it is. Yes, there's no doubt about it. This is the secret chamber. I can sense it clearly.”

“Kick the door open, demand the people inside to come out at once!”

“It's outrageous! If such people exist, we can't cultivate here anymore.”

.....

All the young cultivators were angered. The grumpy ones had

taken the initiative to trample the stone door. However, it was exquisitely crafted by experts, not even a Sixth Grade Great Saint could break it open. Moreover, ever since the Refining Tower was built, no one dared to destroy anything here as that would be a great sin and would certainly be brought to Law Enforcement Palace to be judged.

Law Enforcement Palace didn't belong to any of the eight major palaces. It was a palace that existed alone. Taking Law Enforcement Palace into account, there were a total of nine palaces in Saint Origin Palace. On the other hand, the committee was composed of experts coming from the eight palaces. In order to maintain the peace and avoid great chaos in Saint Origin Palace, some things would be dealt by Law Enforcement Palace. In a nutshell, this palace played an important role in Saint Origin Palace.

“Everybody that's inside, get out at once!” Some people shouted as they laid their legs on the stone door.

Jiang Chen and Big Yellow, however, ignored this kind of disturbance. They were now reaching the most crucial moment. Unless these people broke open the stone door themselves, otherwise they would not humour them.

*Dong Dong Dong.....”

The stone door was trampled hard. The entire fifth level started to shake. More and more people were converging outside the secret chamber, and their fury only grew when they realised that the people inside the secret chamber were ignoring their presence, like

a turtle that had retracted its head.

“F*ck! Cowards! Who’re actually in there?” A Sixth Grade Great Saint of the Desolate Family couldn’t help scolding.

“I know who’s inside. It’s Gu Chen and Big Yellow.”

“Who is Gu Chen? And who’s Big Yellow?” asked a genius of the Desolate Family.

“Gu Chen is the genius who has just arrived in Gu Palace. He has also clashed with your palace not long ago. Three geniuses of your palace were killed by him. Then, the rest of the geniuses from your palace were driven out by him and Big Yellow, leaving no genius of the Desolate Family in the fifth level. All of the chambers that were occupied by the geniuses of your palace were all taken by the people of Gu Palace and Demon Palace.” A man said. He was here watching, so he knew who was inside the secret chamber.

“What?” Several great geniuses of the Desolate Palace exclaimed.

After scanning the area, sure enough, there wasn’t a single person here from Desolate Palace. It seemed like what the man said was true. How absurd was it when a newly-arrived disciple of Gu Palace killed three of their disciples?

“Dared to kill the geniuses of Desolate Palace? That only shows that he didn’t understand what the word death is. Today, I must cut this Gu Chen into a million pieces.” The genius of Desolate

Palace said maliciously.

“Haha! The death of your people only showed the incompetence of Desolate Palace. Nothing like this has ever happened before. It looks like another newbie has arrived in our Gu Palace.”

A great genius of Gu Palace laughed loudly. His name was Gu Shuangtan. The existence of a Sixth Grade Great Saint was always considered as the top for the geniuses. These geniuses would usually never reveal themselves as they only focused on cultivation. As such, they would not usually care about the newbies who had come to their palaces.

The geniuses of Gu Palace were really angry when they thought about the immortal Qi being forcibly taken away, but when they heard that it was one of their people who was inside the secret chamber, their fury faded immediately. The most important thing in the Refining Tower was to stay united instead of helping outsiders bully their own geniuses.

“Gu Shuangtan. You said it like it was an easy thing. Your people have killed my people for no reason in broad daylight. This thing can’t be left unsettled. Also, this man has absorbed all of the immortal Qi and that means he is going against all of us.”

Presently, a genius of Desolate Palace, Desolate Changfeng, looked angry. Originally, he was angry because of the loss of the immortal Qi, but now, the scenario had changed completely. As an outstanding genius of Desolate Palace, he would not stay indifferent when facing the murderer of his people.

“The killing wasn’t for no reason at all.”

At this time, Gu Yong stood out. He walked towards Gu Shuangtan, holding his fists and said, “Brother Shuangtan, this is the actual event.....”

After hearing the whole story, the eyes of Gu Palace’s great geniuses sparkled, especially when they heard that Gu Chen was only a First Grade Great Saint, but was able to kill a Third Grade Great Saint of the Desolate Family. How monstrous was that? Not even they could achieve such a thing.

Moreover, Jiang Chen committed the murder for the sake of protecting the dignity of Gu Palace. This had built a good impression in Gu Shuangtan’s mind. There was no way that they would let others bully them and not fight back.

Considering the injuries that were still visible on Gu Yong and his comrades, also there were a lot of people present when Desolate Ichiro beat them up. Thus, no one doubted Gu Yong’s words.

“Did you hear it loud and clear, Desolate Changfeng? It was your people who caused the trouble first, after that, Gu Chen counterattacked. And, Gu Chen was merely a First Grade Great Saint but he killed that Third Grade Great Saint genius of yours. The only explanation for that is the incompetence of your people. For Gu Chen, it was merely self-defence. Even if you go to Law Enforcement Palace, their deaths will be overlooked due to lack of reasons. Also, the fights amongst the lower ranking disciples is

never a matter of Law Enforcement Palace.” Gu Shuangtan said with a smile.

“There is no need to go to Law Enforcement Palace, I’m going to kill that Gu Chen here.”

Desolate Changfeng’s Qi became intimidating.

“Then you should try and see.”

Gu Shuangtan replied in a tit-for-tat way. Desolate Changfeng was seeking revenge for the death of his people but Gu Shuangtan would not allow that because that would make his family members despise and look down on him.

“Your Desolate Palace will never have an appropriate reason to seek justice. Your people’s death would just be a death in vain. You can only blame your own incompetent strength.”

At this moment, a voice sounded. It was the genius of Demon Palace. The geniuses of Demon Palace had already heard a lot about Big Yellow. They knew that he possessed the Divine Beast Bloodline and had obtained the Totem Divine Seal. In fact, they had already known about this the moment Big Yellow arrived in Demon Palace. Now, it seemed like there were two geniuses of Demon Palace inside the secret chamber. That was to say, Demon Palace had earned a lot when these two were absorbing the immortal Qi. So, in that case, the other geniuses of Demon Palace could find nothing to be angry about.

Hong Long.....

At this time, two burst of extremely powerful Qi rushed out of the secret chamber. That was the advancement of Big Yellow and Kong Yang. Following their advancement, another burst of wave came from the adjacent chamber – Gu Liufeng had also advanced.

“Damn! The people inside advanced after absorbing huge amount of immortal Qi. That’s revolting! Those immortal Qi was supposed to be ours.”

“Drag those bastards out now! Gu Shuangtan, Eagle Yunkong, Gu Palace and Demon Palace have stolen the profits that were supposed to be shared with everybody. I suggest you not to interfere in this matter. Today, I must teach the motherf*ckers inside a hard lesson.”

“Exactly! Nothing like this has ever happened before. Kill all of those people inside.”

.....

The people of the six palaces were turning hostile.

Chapter 959 - The Law Enforcement Palace

The crowd was stirred by the fact that the immortal Qi was all robbed by Jiang Chen. This act had drawn lots of dissatisfaction from people.

Creak!

The two stone doors opened at the same second. Jiang Chen, Big Yellow, Kong Yang, and Gu Liufeng from the next door walked out of the chambers.

“Why are so many people around here? What happened?” Jiang Chen asked with surprise.

Beside him, Big Yellow rolled his eyes. This guy did know how to put up a pretence for not knowing the crowd waiting for them outside. Did he know that their stone door was being continuously slammed?

“Are you Gu Chen?”

Many pairs of eyes fell upon Jiang Chen as Desolate Changfeng asked coldly. When those geniuses of Gu Palace looked at Jiang Chen, they confirmed that this was a new kid as they never saw him before but that was not important now. The crucial thing was this newcomer was a member of Gu Palace which gave them no reason to stand idly by. Internal conflicts were the personal matter of Gu Palace. Externally, unity was very important.

“Yes.” Jiang Chen nodded.

“I’m Desolate Changfeng of Desolate Palace. You are just courting death for killing my people. If you kneel now, I may grant you a happy and painless death,” said Desolate Changfeng, grinding his teeth.

“The geniuses of Desolate Palace always have similar conduct, always like to ask people to kneel down but they are the ones who knelt down in the end. I killed them because they’re the first to start trouble, and were powerless and defenceless. Wouldn’t it be a serious joke if I just stand and let them kill me?” Jiang Chen said in an emotionless tone, totally not putting Desolate Changfeng in his eyes.

Observing Gu Chen’s calm manner, those peerless geniuses could not help but raised their thumbs for him secretly. Putting other things aside, his charisma alone was admirable. One should know that even though Gu Chen had advanced to Second Grade Great Saint, Desolate Changfeng was a powerful Sixth Grade Great Saint. The gap between them was beyond imagination.

“Sure enough, it is not necessary to show politeness to the likes of you. In which case, I’m going to kill you now.”

Desolate Changfeng murderous intent fluctuated; ready to strike.

“Desolate Changfeng, are you ignoring the existence of Gu Shuangtan? If you want to fight, I’ll will be your company.”

Gu Shuangtang moved in front of Jiang Chen, confronting Desolate Changfeng head-on.

A faint smile was seen at the corner of Jiang Chen's mouth. He had anticipated that the higher ranked geniuses of Gu Palace would stand up for him. At least he wasn't disappointed by the unity of the Gu Palace externally. This on-the-surface unity would provide a great help in resolving the internal problems of Gu Palace.

“Let's put your feud aside first, Gu Chen, let me ask you this, how were you able to make the immortal Qi converge on one spot?” asked a genius of Huo Family.

This was a question that many people wanted to know, particularly those Sixth Grade Great Saint geniuses. They had been practicing in this Refining Tower for unknown period of time and the only way to absorb immortal Qi was through a foolish way which was to try their luck, this new guy, however, was able to collect a lot of immortal Qi. Besides making them angry and envious, they felt more eager to know about how he did it.

“I didn't do anything. It was the immortal Qi that came to me automatically. The absorption of the immortal Qi has always relied on one's luck. It just seemed that my luck is greater than any of you. So, is having great luck violating the law?” Jiang Chen looked at the genius of Huo Family.

For a moment, the reply dumbfounded them. No matter how angry they were, Gu Chen's words were not wrong. All along,

geniuses had relied on their luck while cultivating in the Refining Tower. Whoever got great luck would obtain greater amount of immortal Qi. Considering what happened today, there was no problem saying that Gu Chen had great luck.

“Haha! So you all came here to show your dissatisfaction just because you aren’t lucky enough? That lacks the quality of a senior and it makes Master Dog look down on you. We all depend on our abilities to practice here. Those who can get into the ninth level absorb most of the immortal Qi and get the most benefits. Nobody will trouble you because that’s your capability and what you can do. The fact that our luck is greater than any of you proved our ability. It is shameless that you all came here to stir something up.”

Big Yellow’s glib mouth had switched to ‘mockery mode’, causing Kong Yang and Gu Liufeng to laugh at one side.

“Yes. That makes sense. It looks like their overwhelming luck has allowed them to suck in all the immortal Qi. Thus, there is nothing wrong about it.” Eagle Yunkong said with a nod.

Naturally, the people of Demon Palace would need to stand on the same side with their geniuses. Out of the four geniuses, two were from Demon Palace. There was no way they could stay out of the matter.

“That’s right. No one knows how much one’s luck has.” Gu Shuangtan nodded agreeably, unknowingly standing on the same side as Demon Palace.

“I don’t think this is a matter of luck, but a deliberate use of some means to force the immortal Qi into one spot. You all should know about the whirlpool. It was totally intentional.” A genius of Narang Family said.

“Agreed. It’s about everyone’s welfare. We have to make sure the matter will be cleared.”

“In my opinion, let’s act together to force Gu Chen spit out the truth.”

“Yeah, we must do it this way. Or else, we will cultivate sh*t if the immortal Qi is sucked away every time.”

.....

The people of the six major palaces were unrelenting.

“Haha! Do you want to fight? Our palace is never afraid of anything, but you must think about it. With so many of us battling in the Refining Tower, you all may not be able to bear the responsibility. Anyway, I would like to see whether you dare to take the first move.”

Eagle Yunkong laughed loudly. As a genius of Demon Palace, the last thing he was afraid of was battling.

In that instant, the whole atmosphere of Refining Tower turned tense. There were too many combatants here. If neither side gave

way, it would become a messy battle. Having a large-scale battle in the Refining Tower was one thing while destroying it was another. No one could shoulder such responsibility.

But then, how could the geniuses of the six major palaces be willing to let them go? One should know that Gu Chen's way of gathering the immortal Qi was too terrifying. If they did not find out thoroughly about it today, they would not have the chance to absorb immortal Qi anymore.

Kong Yang and Gu Liufeng exchanged a look with each other, shaking their heads. Jiang Chen was worthy of being a twisted devil king. Wherever he went would be accompanied by innumerable troubles. Wherever he went would attract countless pairs of eyes. This was only the second day of his arrival in Saint Origin Palace but he had created such big ruckus.

Adding Big Yellow into the picture, it was like two swords sticking together—a two pronged approach. There wouldn't be peace everywhere they went.

“What are you all doing in the Refining Tower?”

Just when the two sides were in a stalemate, a yell was heard from a distance. Three powerful figures appeared in the fifth level. They were elders who gave off strong Qi by their casual movements, putting the entire fifth level under some degree of pressure.

These three were the unparalleled Seventh Grade Great Saint

experts.

“They are the members of Law Enforcement Palace. Look like the events here have spread to the palace.”

“It must be because of the immortal Qi. You know, the Refining Tower has existed for so long and there has never been such a thing happening. It makes sense that the event alarmed even Law Enforcement Palace.”

“Law Enforcement Palace is above the eight major palaces. It has the right to solve every matter in Saint Origin Palace. The Refining Tower is the most important place in Saint Origin Palace. Now that something has occurred inside the tower, they must come personally to conduct a thorough investigation.”

.....

Seeing the arrival of the member of Law Enforcement Palace, many pairs of eyes showed a trace of fear. Even if they were very talented figures, they would not dare oppose them.

“The immortal Qi of the miniature spatial zone is sucked dry. Who was the one who did it?” asked one of the elders.

“Elder, it’s Gu Chen.”

Desolate Changfeng pointed to Gu Chen, his eyes gloating. That elder who spoke just now was an elder of Desolate Palace, who also

had a high position in Law Enforcement Palace.

“What’s the Law Enforcement Palace about?” Jiang Chen quickly asked Gu Shuangtan via divine sense.

“The Law Enforcement Palace is an independent palace that has the right to control everything in Saint Origin Palace. In other words, its right is one of a kind. There will be an election in Law Enforcement Palace every three years. The palace masters of the eight major palaces will elect one person to be the palace master of Law Enforcement Palace. However, for many years, the Law Enforcement Palace has been in the hands of Desolate Palace. Furthermore, the allocation of public resources is decided by them, and that elder who spoke just now was also a member of Desolate Palace.” Gu Shuangtan transmitted the knowledge to Jiang Chen.

Jiang Chen’s eyes could not resist shivering after receiving the information. It seems that the strength of the eight major palaces had begun to tilt in favour of Desolate Palace. This could be seen from the Desolate Palace’s long years of getting the seat in Law Enforcement Palace. Even though Law Enforcement Palace was comprised of all eight major palaces, the one who was truly in control was Desolate Palace. This shows how much Desolate Palace wanted to dominate the entire Saint Origin Palace.

“It wasn’t just Gu Chen, four of them have absorbed great amount of immortal Qi. Each of them has made one level of advancement.” Someone said, pointing to Big Yellow and the other two.

“The four of you follow us back to Law Enforcement Palace.” The

elder said coldly.

“Elder, the fact that Gu Chen could absorb this much of immortal Qi was due to his luck. We always relied on ones luck while cultivating in the Refining Tower. Besides, Law Enforcement Palace shouldn’t have involved in a matter like this.” Gu Shuangtan said holding his fists.

If Gu Chen and the others were taken away by Law Enforcement Palace, the consequences would be serious.

“Kid, the actions of Law Enforcement Palace isn’t for you to judge and comment. Gu Chen, four of you follow us back to the Law Enforcement Palace to explain the event clearly.” The elder’s tone was resolute.

“Very well. I’ll go with you. This matter is my act alone, it didn’t involve the three of them,” said Jiang Chen.

“No, take them away.”

The elder grasped with his hand, a wave of air straightaway surrounded the four of them, and disappeared in a blink.

“Brother Shuangtan, Gu Chen and the others are taken away by Law Enforcement Palace. What should we do now? Could it be dangerous?” Asked Gu Yong with concern.

“We can’t care about that anymore. I will tell the palace master

about this, as the Law Enforcement Palace isn't a good place for us to go."

After Gu Shuangtan finished speaking, he flew towards Gu Palace, while Eagle Yunkong headed back to Demon Palace. It had gone beyond their bounds but someone would be able to help.

Chapter 960 - Gu Firmament

The Law Enforcement Palace was an independent palace, they were an independent authority. Jiang Chen, Big Yellow, Kong Yang and Gu Liufeng were now in the control of the Seventh Grade Great Saints. In a few blinks, they arrived where the Law Enforcement Palace was located.

“Little Chen, what now? I heard that Law Enforcement Palace is extremely powerful. You’ll get your skin peeled off even if you do not die. Currently, the master of Law Enforcement Palace is also the master of Desolate Palace. With Desolate Palace holding most of the authority, we won’t end up well in their hands.” Kong Yang spoke to Jiang Chen worriedly.

“You all don’t have to say anything later. Don’t worry, you guys have me.”

Jiang Chen had always been so confident, regardless of what situation or environment he was in. You could never detect the slightest bit of tension on his face. Kong Yang and Gu Liufeng were absolutely impressed by such composure.

“You two can be rest assured, no one will die.”

Big Yellow wobbled his sturdy tail. Since Jiang Chen said that it was all right, it would certainly turn out fine. It was not because Jiang Chen had a powerful cultivation, in fact, he was still very far off from battling the palace master of Desolate Palace, but it was because of his confidence in his strategy.

The Law Enforcement Palace was located in a very unique location. At the centre of the eight major palaces was a tall golden tower that seemed to have a dozen floors. The golden light radiated from it gave people a sense of nobility.

“Gu Chen, if you can’t provide a clear explanation regarding the matter about the immortal Qi, I suppose that you have already figured out the repercussion,” said the elder, looking over at Jiang Chen.

“Gu Chen, the Refining Tower is the foundation of Saint Origin Palace. Ever since it was built, nothing as such has happened. Therefore, the Law Enforcement Palace must find out what happened. You were very lucky but not so lucky either because the lord of the palace is going to question you himself.” Another elder added.

Jiang Chen held his hands behind his back, pretending as if he did not hear them talking. There wasn’t a single sign of worry on his face.

“Let’s go.” The elder of Desolate Palace said, leading Jiang Chen and the others into the palace.

The main hall of the Law Enforcement Palace was the size of an imperial palace. At this moment, there were 12 people sitting inside. As soon as Jiang Chen stepped into the main hall, immediately, he felt an invisible pressure pervading the place. Gu Liufeng and Kong Yang could not help shivering, beads of sweat

came out of their forehead.

These people in front were the true higher-ups, the high ranked beings in the Heaven and Earth. The weakest among them was a Seventh Grade Great Saint. Besides that, all the others were Eighth Grade and Ninth Grade Great Saints. With so many of them gathered together, the pressure that they emitted casually was not bearable to ordinary people. Kong Yang and Gu Liufeng were having a hard time bearing this invisible force.

Even the one who had a Divine Beast Bloodline, Big Yellow felt uncomfortable under such pressure. He would have sworn loudly if it was not for the suffocating atmosphere.

Jiang Chen, on the other hand, looked perfectly normal from the very beginning until now. Even with the pressure of so many experts, it could not make any impact on him.

“En?”

The higher-ups of the Law Enforcement Palace could not help but let out a light sigh. Their astonished eyes fell upon Jiang Chen. With their eyesight, they could naturally tell how unpredictable this youth dressed in white was, who could maintain his composure even while facing so many of them, considering that he was merely a tiny Second Grade Great Saint.

The members of Gu Palace couldn't help but nod secretly when they saw Jiang Chen. They were the old seniors and the all-powerful figures that would not appear in ordinary times, but this

young genius made their eyes sparkle.

“Palace Master, I have brought them here. Most of the immortal Qi was absorbed by the four of them.” The elder cupped his fists at the one sitting on the seat of honour, and said in a respectful tone.

Jiang Chen’s attention was caught by that man the moment he entered. This man did not have a very stern face, the size of his body was average. He looked about 40 years old, dressed in a reddish golden robe and wore a golden crown. His eyes were as deep as a cold pool that chilled people. Even though he was sitting there, some might not be able to discover his presence, but when you looked at him, it gave the feeling like a mountain was sitting there. The Qi that was emitted from him was enough to suppress everything.

His aura could fill anyone with awe. He was the highest existence and the peak figure in the Heaven and Earth, the supreme being atop the pyramid of the whole Saint Origin World.

He seemed like an emperor, many folds more noble than any emperor in the land of Saint Origin World. None of those ordinary emperor was worthy of carrying his sandals for him or even kneeling before him.

He was Desolate Emperor, the lord of Desolate Palace and Law Enforcement Palace. He was the most powerful man in the entire Saint Origin World, the supreme expert, a peak Ninth Grade Great Saint. One more step would bring him to the immortal realm.

“You are Gu Chen?” Desolate Emperor spoke.

His voice rang like a large bell shaking one’s soul. He looked over at Jiang Chen, it gave Jiang Chen the feeling of falling into an ice cavern.

Desolate Emperor could discern who Jiang Chen was in an instant. It seemed like he had already known the events that happened in the Refining Tower, but this was not very surprising. Considering his level, nothing in Saint Origin Palace could escape his senses.

“Yes. I am Gu Chen.”

Jiang Chen gave a faint smile and took the initiative to meet Desolate Emperor’s eyes. He neither felt fearful nor frightened. To him, there was nothing that he should worry about while standing in front of Desolate Emperor. In fact, he recognized Desolate Emperor. Back when he still reigned over Pure Land, this overlord was merely insignificant, an ordinary Great Saint. If they wanted to talk about panic, Desolate Emperor would be the first one to get nervous if he knew who Jiang Chen really was.

But then again, at this moment, Jiang Chen was no longer the Greatest Saint, like 100 years ago. The present Desolate Emperor was no longer that small figure in those old days. He was now holding the supreme power and ruled the world under the heavens.

“Presumptuous! Don’t you know that you have to kneel down

when seeing the palace master? The four of you, kneel down this instant!” Someone yelled at Jiang Chen.

Kong Yang and Gu Liufeng trembled, and felt a ripple in their hearts. Their knees were about to fall to the ground before strands of invisible force was released by Jiang Chen to help them keep standing.

Everyone saw it clearly. Their eyes became strange as they looked at Jiang Chen.

“Although Desolate Emperor is the master of Desolate Palace and Law Enforcement Palace, he has no right to ask us to kneel down before him. We are members of Gu Palace and Demon Palace. There is no reason for us to kneel down before an outsider. Moreover, we are all Great Saints with dignity and our dignity won’t allow us to kneel down. I won’t let my knees fall to the ground even if the palace master of Gu Palace come. In addition, you don’t have a good reason to ask us to kneel down because we haven’t done anything wrong.” Jiang Chen’s eyes swept across the area and said in a plain tone.

“You son of a b*tch! This is the Law Enforcement Palace. You puny little being dare to disregard the rules of the palace? Since you are reluctant to kneel down, I will make sure that you will never be able to stand again. Get down on your knees now!”

An elder of Desolate Palace who brought them here was angered. His Qi shook as he struck out an illusory palm, slamming against Jiang Chen. Since Jiang Chen was unwilling to get down on his knees, he would make Jiang Chen lose his ability to stand.

“Stop! I would like to see who would dare to make the genius of Gu Palace kneel.”

At this instant, a thunderous voice came from the outside of the hall. Then, a ghostly figure appeared before Jiang Chen. His action could not be captured by the eyes; the illusionary palm automatically crumbled.

The incomer was dressed in a pale yellow long robe, he seemed to be at the same age as Desolate Emperor. He had similar awe-inspiring look that Desolate Emperor have. He was no stranger. He was the palace master of Gu Palace, Gu Firmament. Judging by his Qi, he wasn't any weaker than Desolate Emperor. He had also reached the peak of Ninth Grade Great Saint, only a step away from the Immortal realm.

“Demon Palace never had the habit of kneeling down, right? Desolate Emperor?”

The moment Gu Firmament emerged, another powerful figure appeared. He was tall and had a very sturdy body. His casual movement could bring endless waves. His name was Heavenly Peng^[1] King, he was the palace master of Demon Palace.

Heavenly Peng was a peerless divine beast. His bloodline was not any weaker than Big Yellow's. However, Heavenly Peng King did not have the complete bloodline of a divine beast. It was said that Heavenly Peng King was merely a giant bird, and that when he was young, he strayed into a forbidden place and obtained the blood

essence of an ancient heavenly Peng. After that, his cultivation skyrocketed crazily.

Gu Firmament and Heavenly Peng King's reputation was incomparable to Desolate Emperor; the Law Enforcement Palace was the best place in the entire Saint Origin Palace to enforce the law. No one would dare to barge in the Law Enforcement Palace except these two who just arrived. There was no place in the entire Saint Origin Palace which they feared going. Thus, even the great palace master, Desolate Emperor, wouldn't be able to intimidate them.

"Gu Firmament, Heavenly Peng King, I am just enforcing the law. What are you two doing here? This is the Law Enforcement Palace, you two don't have any rights to intervene," said Desolate Emperor with a frown.

"Damn the right! I have the geniuses of Gu Palace standing here. So, I have come here to observe how the master of the Law Enforcement Palace enforce the law impartially. It looks like Gu Chen didn't commit any mistakes, so why are you, the lord of the palace, alarmed by something like this? Isn't it just a bit of a fuss?" Gu Firmament said bluntly.

He looked at Jiang Chen with praising eyes. Just now, he heard and agreed what Jiang Chen had said. How could the people of Gu Palace kneel before anyone? Jiang Chen's heroic behavior and boldness had built a significant impression in Gu Firmament's heart. Should Jiang Chen got down on his knees due to fright just now, Gu Firmament would just turn and leave, he wouldn't want a genius without pride, no matter how talented Jiang Chen was.

Furthermore, Gu Shuangtan had told Gu Firmament everything that had happened in the Refining Tower.

Chapter 961 - The Ugly-Looking Desolate Emperor

Gu Firmament knew what exactly had happened in the Refining Tower. He was also curious to find out how Jiang Chen was able to absorb all the immortal Qi in that miniature spatial zone in a brief moment. Aside from his curiosity, there was one thing he was certain about – a terrifying genius had arrived in Gu Palace.

Killing a Third Grade Great Saint genius of Desolate Palace while only being a First Grade Great Saint? This could not be done by anyone. Moreover, he also knew the real identity of Gu Chen. During that time, Gu Xuantian personally handed a letter to him, telling him about Jiang Chen's identity and the earth-shaking events that Jiang Chen had done in the Pure Land. This made the palace master of Gu Palace attach great importance to Jiang Chen. Moreover, he could also see that Jiang Chen was really a dragon among his peers when he saw him today. The luck coming from Jiang Chen's body amazed him.

“I would also like to know what went wrong with our geniuses.” Heavenly Peng King said.

Demon Palace paid incomparable attention to Big Yellow, a heaven defying being who had a complete Divine Beast Bloodline and the Totem Divine Seal. Besides that, the two palace masters knew that Desolate Palace had been growing stronger, sooner or later, they would become so powerful that it was enough to tilt the balance of Saint Origin Palace. As such, they knew better than anyone the importance of Jiang Chen and Big Yellow.

“You must have heard about the Refining Tower, yes? These four in front of you have absorbed all the immortal Qi. This is the first time it ever happened in the history of Saint Origin Palace. I must know what means they used. If I don’t find out how they have gotten almost all of the immortal Qi, and punish and stop them from doing this again, I’m afraid that from now on, no geniuses will be able to absorb the immortal Qi from the Refining Tower anymore.” Desolate Emperor rose from his seat and spoke.

He initially intended to forcefully make Jiang Chen talk, but now that both Gu Firmament and Heavenly Peng King were here, he couldn’t go on that road anymore. Still, he was very determined to punish Jiang Chen. These four young geniuses had prompted Gu Firmament and Heavenly Peng King to come in person. It was enough to explain their extraordinary status in Gu and Demon Palace.

“Desolate Palace Master, you are really making a joke out of this. This matter has got nothing to do with the three of them. Those immortal Qi came to me automatically, and then, I just gave some to them. As for the means I used, I can tell you very responsibly that I didn’t do anything. It was the immortal Qi who came to me naturally,” said Jiang Chen immediately.

“Nonsense. Do you think that we all don’t know what happened in the miniature spatial zone? You’d better be honest with us. What kind of forbidden technique did you use to get all the immortal Qi? What you did today have aroused public indignation. If we hadn’t arrived in time, I’m afraid that those geniuses would’ve torn you apart.” The elder who brought them here said loudly and sternly.

“Shut up! With the three of us here, what rights do you have to speak? You should take a look at who you are before you comment.” Heavenly Peng King yelled.

The elder changed his expression immediately, and did not dare to speak anymore, he was facing the palace master of Demon Palace that was filled with dominance and ferocity. Furthermore, it was true that he did not have any qualifications to confront an overlord like Heavenly Peng King, even Desolate Emperor could not suppress him. Heavenly Peng King was claimed to be hasty. If Heavenly Peng King killed him, he was afraid that not even Desolate Emperor could stop the overlord.

More importantly, if Heavenly Peng King killed him in the Law Enforcement Palace, his death would be in vain. When Heavenly Peng King kills, he would not need a reason. That was what symbolized his status.

“Haha! This elder is also one of the dignified Seventh Grade Great Saint representatives. How can you speak so unreasonably? This is simply disgracing Desolate Palace and Law Enforcement Palace. You said that I used a forbidden technique but you have no evidence. Law Enforcement Palace is a place where evidence is emphasized. Falsely accusing someone with no evidence shouldn't be what the elders of this palace should do.” Jiang Chen laughed, counterattacking the elder with his words.

Hearing this, Gu Firmament and Heavenly Peng King exchanged a look. Their eyes were filled with admiration. They could not deny that Gu Chen was truly a scary and shrewd young man. One should know that such occasion would render general disciples

frightened or paralyzed. They had never seen a youth that was so calm while facing so many experts in the Law Enforcement Palace.

“You have a sharp tongue. But Gu Chen, you’d better explain the matter clearly. Since you have already arrived in this place, you must explain yourself clearly. The Refining Tower is associated with the cultivation of all the geniuses in Saint Origin Palace, it isn’t a place for you to practice alone.”

Desolate Emperor let out a cold humph, and started to reveal some murderous intent towards Jiang Chen. This was because Jiang Chen’s performance was too good. He wouldn’t feel comfortable if such an excellent genius was not a member of Desolate Palace.

“There’s no way to explain this situation. Any genius that practices in the Refining Tower relies on their luck and ability. Whoever has greater luck will be able to absorb more immortal Qi. When all the immortal Qi was drawn to me automatically, it showed that I am outstandingly exuberant in terms of luck, and thus, suppressing all the other geniuses. Desolate Emperor is the palace master of Law Enforcement Palace, you should enforce the law fairly. You can never charged me anything just because I have greater luck than the others. Every time when the tower is opened, some very lucky ones will be able to absorb large amount of immortal Qi whereas those with bad luck will obtain nothing at all. This has always been unfair. For so long that the Refining Tower has existed, Law Enforcement Palace didn’t once punish those geniuses who had great luck. So, why am I being punished here? What’s the reason behind this?” Jiang Chen said in a tone that was neither humble nor haughty, absolutely not affected by Desolate Emperor’s Qi.

Big Yellow was baring his teeth at one side, while Kong Yang and Gu Liufeng raised a thumb for Jiang Chen secretly. Jiang Chen's words had put Desolate Emperor in an awkward position. There was no one that could comment regarding the matter of luck. If Jiang Chen was punished because of his vigorous luck, didn't that mean that any genius who had great amount of luck would be punished every time the Refining Tower is opened?

What was even more important was that Desolate Emperor could not find any evidence that Jiang Chen used some kind of forbidden technique to collect the immortal Qi. There was really nothing that he could say when Jiang Chen claimed that all of these happened because of his great luck.

“Haha! Desolate Emperor, did you hear that? It was luck. Gu Chen has just arrived in this place but he has already advance, it just showed that he has a tremendous amount of luck. Cultivating in the Refining Tower has always been reliant on luck. You can't uphold justice because someone has more luck than the others. You know, that's called jealousy.”

Gu Firmament laughed. He looked at Gu Chen, and his liking for Jiang Chen grew more. There was no reason why he would not like this youth who could stifle Desolate Emperor. This youth was simply amazing.

Gu Firmament was still thinking of taking Gu Chen away with force, but now, Gu Chen had all the reasons that gave the Law Enforcement Palace no chance of charging him.

“Gu Chen, I don’t believe that your luck could be so great that all the immortal Qi would gravitate towards you. If you want to prove your innocence, release your soul and I will use the Soul-Assimilation Technique to find out if you are lying.” Desolate Emperor’s Qi shook as he said.

“Desolate Emperor, you are going too far. Don’t think that you can fool us because you are in control of the Law Enforcement Palace. Since you can’t produce any evidence for this case, I will take them away. You, a dignified palace master, want to apply Soul-Assimilation Technique on a youngster? How shameless! I am now standing here, I would like to see you try and touch Gu Chen.”

Gu Firmament raged as he found Desolate Emperor ridiculous. If Jiang Chen released his soul, wouldn’t it be the same as handing his life over to Desolate Emperor? If Desolate Emperor killed Jiang Chen out of jealousy, who should he talk to?

“Desolate Emperor, what you are about to do will certainly hurt your reputation. The Law Enforcement Palace has never enforced the law this way. You can’t arrest anyone without evidence.” Heavenly Peng King said.

It appeared that Gu Chen and Big Yellow had pulled these two overlords on the same line.

Desolate Emperor’s facial expression turned unpleasant as if it was covered with a layer of haze. Originally, he wanted to use his awe-inspiring aura to force Jiang Chen to speak the truth, but he had never imagined that this young man was so difficult to deal with. As Jiang Chen said, it was impossible to charge with

anything if they don't have any evidence.

Currently, with the presence of Gu Firmament and Heavenly Peng King standing on Jiang Chen's side, and with his identity as the palace master of Law Enforcement Palace, it made it harder for him to pass judgment on these four youths.

“Well, let's put this aside for a moment. Gu Chen, you killed three geniuses of Desolate Palace in the Refining Tower. You have just arrived and yet you are already so bold and wild, totally not putting the rules of the tower in your eyes. And, I'm going to punish you for that, what other things do you want to say about it?”

Desolate Emperor shifted his focus to the geniuses of Desolate Palace that had been killed.

After hearing this, a hint of a sneer was seen at the corner of Jiang Chen's mouth. “It is true that I killed those three geniuses from your palace, but if you want to talk about breaking the rules, it was your geniuses who beat up our people first and threatened to kill us. So, should us, the people of Gu Palace, stand there and be bullied? Are you suggesting that we, the people of Gu Palace, should've stood there for your people to kill and we aren't allowed to fight back? What kind of bullsh*t reasoning is that?” Jiang Chen replied in a tit-for-tat way, leaving Gu Firmament nodding at one side.

Gu Chen was also a genius of Gu Palace. It was a must that he fought back for the geniuses of Gu Palace. They should never stand there like a fool while being bullied by others.

“Desolate Emperor, I suppose you have heard it loud and clear. This incident was started by your people. Gu Chen was merely defending himself and his comrades. Moreover, deaths during the competition among the disciples are common. It is embarrassing for this kind of matter to be brought in the Law Enforcement Palace,” said Gu Firmament.

Chapter 962 - Unrestrained Gambling

“Humph! Gu Chen is just a new disciple but he openly killed three of our geniuses, and he killed them in a place like the Refining Tower. If he isn’t punished for his wild act, he will possibly overturn the heavens in the future, and at that time, where should Desolate Palace put its face at?”

Desolate Emperor gave a cold humph. It was not easy to capture Jiang Chen back to the palace, he would not be willing to let Jiang Chen go just like that.

“Since Desolate Emperor mentioned about face, when your Third Grade Great Saint genius couldn’t even defeat me, a First Grade Great Saint, and was killed by me instead, do you think you can still keep your face after this incident? Are you trying to throw away your face again when you, the majestic Desolate Emperor, personally involved yourself in the conflicts of your lower rank disciples?” said Jiang Chen emotionlessly.

He did not have the slightest bit of concern in killing Desolate Ichiro and the other two, because it was not a very unusual thing. There had been grudges among the eight major families long time ago. No one knew how many bloody fights and battles had taken place over the years. The strife among the lower ranked disciples in particular, was usually resolved by themselves.

“Desolate Emperor, do you still want your face? Your disciples’ incompetence is enough to put you to shame. Just like what Gu Chen said, how is it rational that only your people can kill them, and aren’t allowed to kill your people? Is Desolate Palace trying to

hoodwink everybody? Or is the life of Desolate Palace more precious than ours?” Gu Firmament said in a cold tone.

“Who said that my geniuses are incompetent?”

Desolate Emperor sounded a little angry. Desolate Palace was the strongest palace nominally. They had always been in the leading position where no one would dare disobey them. Therefore, how was he going to accept it when someone claimed that his geniuses were incompetent?

“Very well. Since you, Desolate Emperor, still insists that your geniuses are talented, I have a solution for this matter. I, Gu Chen, am standing here today, for any of your Fourth Grade Great Saint geniuses to fight me. If I am defeated, I will let the Law Enforcement Palace take charge of what to do to me, if I win, your Desolate Palace will have to walk with their heads down whenever they see the people of Gu Palace.”

Jiang Chen caught hold of Desolate Emperor’s words and retorted. He wasn’t the passive type, so he took the initiative to settle today’s matter. Moreover, he believed that Desolate Emperor wouldn’t refuse the conditions that he had put forth, because his refusal would be equivalent to admission. The admission that the Desolate Palace’s geniuses were incompetent and incapable. After all, Jiang Chen’s cultivation was merely Second Grade Great Saint. There was nothing that people could say when a Second Grade Great Saint was challenging a Fourth Grade Great Saint.

Additionally, this was a good chance for Gu Palace to establish their reputation, and with the presence of Gu Firmament, Jiang

Chen wanted to win back as much face and dignity as possible for Gu Palace, so that Gu Firmament would have a moment of exaltation.

Jiang Chen's reply petrified Desolate Emperor. The palace master hadn't imagined that this young man would be so presumptuous. He was rendered speechless when this young man directly challenged every Fourth Grade Great Saint geniuses of Desolate Palace.

“What do you say, Desolate Emperor? Do you dare? If you don't, we can walk away now.”

Gu Firmament's face was brimming with a sunny smile as it was rare to see Desolate Emperor's face shriveled up like today. He felt overjoyed that such a genius appeared in Gu Palace.

“Well, considering that you wanted to fight so badly, we, Desolate Palace, won't back away. Just you wait.”

Desolate Emperor's eyes looked cold. Naturally, he could not refuse as he could not afford to be embarrassed.

Almost as soon as his voice faded, a silhouette suddenly walked into the main hall of the Law Enforcement Palace. The incomer looked like a young man that was less than thirty year old, and handsome. His cultivation base had already reached the peak Fourth Grade Great Saint, only a step away from Fifth Grade Great Saint.

“Has lord summoned me for something?”

The youth went close to Desolate Emperor and gave a deep salute.

“Desolate Yitang, you will have to fight Gu Chen. But remember, this is a life-and-death battle. The revenge for Desolate Ichiro’s death is on you now.”

Desolate Emperor spoke in a chilling tone. Desolate Yitang was listed in the Fourth Grade Great Saint’s Hall of Fame of Desolate Palace. He was a supreme genius that was many folds stronger than Jiang Chen’s opponent, Gu Lian. He only needed one more step to enter the Fifth Grade Great Saint.

Though Jiang Chen was also a rarely seen genius, Desolate Emperor wouldn’t believe that he could beat Desolate Yitang. To Desolate Emperor, these two were on totally different levels.

“I understand, Lord.”

Desolate Yitang looked at Jiang Chen with a vicious expression and killing intent. Earlier, he was also present in the Refining Tower. He didn’t spoke because the seniors such as Desolate Changfeng and the others were around. Now that Desolate Emperor personally asked him to deal with this Gu Chen, it indicated that Desolate Emperor highly regarded him, this had provided him a great opportunity to showcase his talent. This battle was related to his face, the face of Desolate Emperor and Desolate Palace, which gave him no room to lose this battle.

Therefore, he must kill this Gu Palace guy and Desolate Emperor would surely reward him after that. Once he got the benefits, it would be very likely that he would advance to the Fifth Grade Great Saint straightaway.

The appearance of Desolate Yitang made Gu Firmament frown.

“Don’t go too far, Desolate Emperor. Desolate Yitang was a peak Fourth Grade Great Saint. You are too shabby to ask him to fight a Second Grade Great Saint junior.” Gu Firmament couldn’t help but criticize.

“Hehe! This is what Gu Chen asked for.”

Desolate Emperor smiled, completely ignoring Gu Firmament’s words. In his point of view, this was a hole dug by Gu Chen himself, so he had to fill up that hole by jumping into it.

“Exactly. I’d like to fight him,” said Jiang Chen.

He had already advanced to the Second Grade Great Saint. His current combat strength was even more powerful than before. He could give any ordinary Fourth Grade Great Saint an instant kill. Even stronger Fourth Grade Great Saint like Desolate Yitang wouldn’t stand a chance, and would possibly die.

“Gu Chen, don’t continue with this nonsense. If you take your words back now, I will bring you away immediately. This Desolate

Yitang isn't any ordinary genius. You may not be his opponent." Gu Firmament's voice rang in Jiang Chen's ears.

Jiang Chen understood Gu Firmament's concern very well. Everyone knew about the huge gap between the Third Grade and the Fourth Grade Great Saint. It was akin to the disparity between the early-stage Great Saint to middle-stage Great Saint realm. Although Jiang Chen had already advanced to the Second Grade Great Saint, he was still in the early-stage of the Great Saint realm. Even if Jiang Chen had the ability to fight any Fourth Grade Great Saints, he could never handle an outstanding genius like Desolate Yitang because he was incomparable to any ordinary genius.

"Rest assured, Palace Master. I will kill him and help Gu Palace earn a reputation. On top of that, we must give a solution for today's matter, otherwise, I'm afraid that Desolate Emperor won't give up." Jiang Chen responded to Gu Firmament, his words were full of confidence.

"Right. Be careful then."

Gu Firmament didn't try to convince Jiang Chen anymore, he was impressed by this junior's courage and confidence. If Gu Palace had a chance to nurture such talent, he would certainly be a great asset in the future. As such, Gu Firmament wouldn't allow Jiang Chen to be in danger. If Jiang Chen couldn't fight Desolate Yitang later, he would intervene to protect Jiang Chen.

"Gu Chen, your courage really isn't small for accepting to fight me. That surprises me a lot. In just a while, I will certainly kill you to defend the dignity of Desolate Palace, and to avenge the death of

Desolate Ichiro and the other two brothers. The blood of Desolate Palace could never be shed for nothing.” Desolate Yitang said arrogantly. To him, killing Jiang Chen was just as easy as moving his fingertips, totally effortless.

*Hua La.....”

Desolate Emperor waved his hand. With a clatter, a spatial zone was created inside the main hall of the Law Enforcement Palace. It was a hundred miles big, the arena for Jiang Chen and Desolate Yitang fight.

“In that case, you two are going to fight in this battlefield. Remember, this is a life-and-death battle; your deaths here will never be questioned.”

Desolate Emperor specially reminded, which was a direct message to Gu Firmament. It only meant that if Jiang Chen died, he could do nothing but watch him die.

“Wait a minute,” said Jiang Chen.

“What? Are you scared? Sadly, it’s already too late.”

Desolate Yitang stared at Jiang Chen.

Jiang Chen ignored his stare and turned to Desolate Emperor. “Desolate Emperor, since this is a life-and-death battle, why don’t we add more bets into the pot?”

“Oh? What do you want to bet on?”

Desolate Emperor was intrigued all of a sudden.

“If I bet, I will certainly make it big. If I win, the seat of palace master in the Law Enforcement Palace will be given to Gu Palace.”

Jiang Chen’s voice set off thousands of waves and snatched away the calmness of the entire hall.

“What? You want the lord to abdicate the seat of the Law Enforcement Palace? You really have a big nerve!”

“What a good Gu Chen, daring to say such a word! That’s a good reason! This line of words is enough for the Law Enforcement Palace to sentence you to death.”

The elders in the main hall were furious, some of them were somewhat astonished. None of them thought that Jiang Chen would put forward such a bet, but the elders of Gu Palace felt joyful in their hearts. Although the Law Enforcement Palace was an independent association, it was still comprised of all the members of the eight major palaces. Who wouldn’t want their patriarch to be the palace master?

Gu Firmament didn’t speak, looking at Desolate Emperor, waiting for his response. This Gu Chen had really surprised him and made him feel satisfied. He now realized that Gu Chen surely

had mature thinking and opinions, and wouldn't need his guidance at all.

“Kid, you are betting on my seat. What if you lose? What do you have? Do you want to put Gu Firmament's head at stake?”

Desolate Emperor gazed at Jiang Chen.

“I, Gu Chen, never bet other people's lives. I will put 5 billion Saint Origin Restoration Pills on the line.”

Jiang Chen's Qi shook as soon as the word 5 billion was out. His Qi was getting a little intimidating. He didn't mention 5 billion high grade True Meta Stones because they probably would find out his real identity once they investigated it.

Chapter 963 - Entrapment

Jiang Chen came from the Pure Land and the only person who possessed this much high grade True Meta Stone was him. Moreover, five billion was just too astonishing. Desolate Emperor would certainly seek for its source, it would then expose his true identity.

However, in Jiang Chen's point of view, there was no suspense in this huge gamble. Desolate Yitang was bound to die. His priority right now was to fight for the greatest benefit and raise the prestige of Gu Palace. So now, it was up to Desolate Emperor whether he would dare to gamble. Five billion Saint Rank Restoration Pills for three years of palace master's seat in Law Enforcement Palace? He believed that Desolate Emperor wouldn't let go of this easily.

Hiss

Sure enough, even the three overlords were shocked when they heard the five billion worth of fortune, it was no joke, not even their own palace had this kind of wealth. The bet of five billion was definitely not a small number.

Well, a problem arouse. Gu Chen was a kid that came from the Pure Land. So, how could he obtain 5 billion of Saint Rank Restoration Pills? They were afraid that not even Gu Family in the Pure Land had this kind of wealth.

“Don't brag, kid. How are you going to get the 5 billion Saint

Rank Restoration Pills? You dare to put an empty bet?”

Desolate Emperor stared coldly at Jiang Chen. He absolutely wouldn't believe that Jiang Chen could take out 5 billion Saint Rank Restoration Pills, it just sounded exactly like the [Arabian Nights](#).

“What if I can take them out?” Jiang Chen smiled and said.

“If you can take them out, I will take the gamble.” Desolate Emperor said.

First, he didn't believe that Jiang Chen could produce so many Saint Rank Restoration Pills. Second, he was willing to bet on his fighter as he was extremely confident in Desolate Yitang's capability.

Without speaking a word, Jiang Chen waved his palm. A small spatial zone was produced, overflowing with dense Yuan Force. Given their eyesight, not only could they tell that all of these were Saint Rank Restoration Pills, they could also see its quantity—there were 5 billion of them, no doubt.

“Oh gods! There are so many of them. I can already sense the fragrance coming from the inside. These pills are greater than the ordinary Saint Rank Restoration Pills, they are all high grade pills!”

“How could this son of a b*tch have such a fortune? I wouldn't

have believed it if I hadn't seen it with my own eyes.”

“Five billion Saint Rank Restoration Pills? That's plenty of resources.”

.....

Everyone was shocked. All of the people that were present here were mighty and high ranked Great Saints. There was nothing they hadn't seen before, including pills, lots of them, but this were 5 billion Saint Rank Restoration Pills, not Heaven Rank Restoration Pills. What shocked them even more was that a puny Second Grade Great Saint actually had this much fortune.

“This kid really is...”

Gu Firmament smiled, trying to hide his expression but failed.

Hua La!

With another wave of Jiang Chen's arm, all the Saint Rank Restoration Pills disappeared.

“Desolate Emperor, did you see that? I didn't lie. I have stumbled upon a relic and found a treasure vault. All these pills were obtained from that vault. There are 5 billion of them and there are more.” Jiang Chen spoke.

Naturally, he didn't have this much Saint Rank Restoration Pills. The piled up mountain of pills was just a facade, its surface were covered with Saint Rank Restoration Pills but underneath, it was filled with high grade True Meta Stones. The Qi that these two items produced was purer than the ordinary Saint Rank Restoration Pills. Thus, it wouldn't raise any doubts, even in front of Desolate Emperor and Gu Firmament's eyes.

“Gu Chen, isn't your bet a little too high? Are you sure about it?”

Gu Firmament's voice transmitted into Jiang Chen's ears. His purpose of coming here was to keep Jiang Chen safe. He didn't think that Jiang Chen would use him and Heavenly Peng King as his support to scheme against Desolate Emperor. This indicated that he had underestimated Jiang Chen.

“Desolate Emperor, what do you say? Will you gamble or will you not?” asked Jiang Chen.

Desolate Emperor knitted his brows, he turned to Desolate Yitang and said in a plain tone, “Yitang, do you have certainty?”

Desolate Yitang clenched his fists, producing a cracking sound. Two beams of cold light shot out from his eyes. “Don't worry about it, Palace Master. I will kill him for sure.”

Desolate Yitang was brimming with confidence. He didn't believe that he couldn't take a Second Grade Great Saint down. If he said no and retreated, it would only make Desolate Palace and Desolate Emperor lose their faces. From then on, he wouldn't be able to

continue cultivating in Desolate Palace anymore. So, he had to do all that he could to defeat Jiang Chen, and win the prize. In that case, he would not only regain the face of Desolate Palace, he could also avenge Desolate Ichiro's and the other two's death and obtain a huge wealth. Then, he would certainly become a meritorious cultivator in Desolate Palace and gain an extraordinary position for himself.

Gamble. Why shouldn't one gamble? Life had always been a gamble. Sometimes, people gambled with their lives, if they won, they will soar to the sky, and if they lost, they would be left with nothing.

“Alright, Gu Chen. I will make the bet. If I lose, the seat of the Law Enforcement Palace master will be given to Gu Firmament. If you lose, the 5 billion Saint Rank Restoration Pills will be ours, as well as your life.”

Desolate Emperor immediately agreed. As the palace master of Desolate Palace, he would need to look daring and resolute. If he was indecisive and hesitant, others would look down on him for being scared by a junior.

“In that case, bring it on.”

Jiang Chen entered the battlefield with a flash. His dark hair fluttered in the breeze. His Qi was unparalleled. He turned to Desolate Yitang and shouted, “Desolate Yitang, come over and fight!”

“Courting death!”

Desolate Yitang’s murderous intent soared to the sky, and appeared in the battlefield in a blink, standing opposite of Jiang Chen.

“Hehehe, Desolate Emperor just went straight into Little Chen’s trap.”

Big Yellow’s heart was brimming with joy. He knew Jiang Chen all too well. He knew that this guy would never fight a battle that he couldn’t win. More importantly, he knew very well how powerful Jiang Chen was. Although Desolate Yitang’s cultivation base was a peak Fourth Grade Great Saint, it wasn’t enough to kill Jiang Chen. If Jiang Chen could fight him in his half-dragon form, killing Desolate Yitang would happen in an instant.

A hundred miles around the battlefield, Jiang Chen and Desolate Yitang stood opposite each other, emitting thick murderous intent from their bodies. Desolate Yitang’s Qi was rising non-stop, ready to strike at any second.

“Gu Firmament, this is a fair battle. Neither of us shall step nor interfere in this battle.”

Desolate Emperor said to Gu Firmament with a face full of smile.

“Of course, but Desolate Emperor, why are you so confident that Desolate Yitang will win this battle? If he lost, don’t forget to give

up the seat of the Law Enforcement Palace master,” said Gu Firmament.

“Haha! Do you believe in what you are saying right now?”

Desolate Emperor laughed loudly. As the powerful Ninth Grade Great Saint and the palace master of Desolate Palace, he had seen so many gifted and talented geniuses. He knew very well how much was the gap between a Second Grade and a Fourth Grade Great Saint. Even if Jiang Chen was exceedingly gifted, it would be impossible for him to jump two levels and defeat Desolate Yitang.

Maybe Jiang Chen could defeat and even kill any ordinary Fourth Grade Great Saint, but he definitely was no match for Desolate Yitang.

The Arabian Nights-A collection of traditional stories from the Middle East, written in Arabic.

Chapter 964 - Aggrieved

“Humph!”

Gu Firmament let out a cold humph, no longer paying attention to Desolate Emperor as his eyes were fixed unblinkingly on the two combatants in the battlefield. He might look very confident and determined on the surface, but he totally had no idea about the outcome of the battle, but since the bet had already been made, he could say nothing more about it.

Inside the battlefield.

“Gu Chen, I can’t deny admiring your boldness and arrogance. I really have no idea where you get your self-confidence from.”

Desolate Yitang’s face was full of mockery.

“You will know soon.”

Jiang Chen was too lazy to converse with him. Billowy Qi burst out from his body all of a sudden, forming into a light that charged at Desolate Yitang. Time seemed to stop at this moment as Jiang Chen’s strike reached Desolate Yitang.

“He’s fast!”

Desolate Yitang exclaimed in his heart, quickly putting away his

underestimation for Jiang Chen.

Jiang Chen's fist glowed reddish golden. The waves of Qi that was radiated from it shredded the void into pieces. This punch was enough to blow a mountain apart.

He!

Desolate Yitang reacted very quickly with a punch, which also carried an explosive energy. Then, the two punches clashed violently.

Hong Long.....

Powerful energy pounded against the hundred-mile large battlefield. Desolate Yitang felt an immense energy that he couldn't resist. Under the push of the great force, he retreated a distance of 50 meters. Qi and blood was pulsing unpleasantly in his body.

On the contrary, Jiang Chen just maintained his punching posture, standing there as if he had never moved once.

“What?!”

Desolate Yitang exclaimed again, he couldn't believe that he was forced to retreat by a Second Grade Great Saint.

Outside the battlefield, all of the elders were shocked. Desolate Emperor's smiling face hardened. With his eyes, he could instantly see how powerful Gu Chen was. He had a deep understanding of Desolate Yitang's power. Considering the fact that they had staked a lot in this battle, Desolate Yitang wouldn't dare to be careless even in the slightest in this fight. In other words, the exchange of blows just now was no accident.

“Haha! Good, kid!”

Gu Firmament laughed loudly. The scene seemed too thrilling. All the elders of Gu Palace had a delightful look on their faces. If the Law Enforcement Palace fell into the hands of Gu Palace, it would be too good to be true, it had been many years since they took its control.

Heavenly Peng King also marvelled. His impression of Gu Chen changed.

“Desolate Yitang, you are not bad seeing that you could withstand my attack, but this will be the only time.”

Jiang Chen's Qi dashed to the sky. His remark stabbed Desolate Yitang's heart like sharp blades. Gu Chen's last phrase was an embarrassment and an insult to him.

“Gu Chen, don't get too arrogant. I was just testing your power with the first strike. Baking Sun!”

Desolate Yitang wouldn't dare underestimate Jiang Chen anymore, he struck his most powerful combat technique out. A 30 meter reddish golden sun was materialized. For a moment, the entire battlefield was filled with golden light and scorching Qi that came from the hot baking sun.

Even Jiang Chen was shrouded by the sun. The air current that flowed out of it was like sharp knife lights. If he was replaced by an ordinary person, he would've been cut to death by this piercing current.

"The combat technique isn't bad, but the person using it isn't good enough. Let's not waste any more time."

Jiang Chen was absolutely not concerned of Desolate Yitang's combat technique, the difference between this Baking Sun Combat Technique and the Golden Dragon Seal was too wide.

Hong Long...

Jiang Chen flicked his arm, striking out with the Golden Dragon Seal. A dazzling reddish golden dragon roared and dashed out, smashing against the rolling hot sun.

The fierce impact was like an intense fight between two ancient wild beasts. The hundred-mile battlefield was completely incinerated, but this was the battlefield constructed by Desolate Emperor after all. The energy inside wouldn't leak out of it regardless of how frenzied the clashes were.

The huge baking hot sun was torn into countless pieces. Desolate Yitang was once again, sent flying away by the destructive force, causing him to spurt out three mouthfuls of blood.

This was a round that clearly showed the winner without any suspense.

Even though Desolate Yitang was a great genius with a peak Fourth Grade Great Saint strength, he still couldn't fight against Jiang Chen. It was impossible to guess the difference between a genius and a monstrous talent using common sense.

Desolate Emperor's facial expression completely darkened. At this point in time, it was impossible for him not to see the outcome. This Gu Chen was far more powerful than he had imagined. Gu Chen was the scariest monstrous talent that he had ever seen. He could already imagine how terrifying he would become once he grew up.

Gu Firmament and Heavenly Peng King's face revealed solemnity, but their eyes were blazing, particularly Gu Firmament's, it was as if he had already seen the future of Gu Palace from Jiang Chen.

Keng!

Jiang Chen had the upper hand now, he would surely not show mercy and waste any more time; he certainly wouldn't expose his other combat techniques and trump cards. So, he immediately drew out the Heavenly Saint Sword, slashing at Desolate Yitang's

direction.

“Ahhh!!!”

Desolate Yitang roared furiously. Today's battle was utterly humiliating and his honour was at stake. If Desolate Emperor lost the seat of the Law Enforcement Palace master because of his defeat, he would be guilty and be expelled from Desolate Palace.

Presently, he had no way out. He could only bet his life to fight as his eyes turned bloodshot.

A golden handheld fan appeared in his hand, illuminating a brilliant light. Under his control, it turned into a giant fan that was as large as a sky barrier, covering the entire battlefield.

It was a powerful Great Saint Weapon that could deal considerable damage.

Chi La!

It was undeniable that Desolate Yitang's handheld fan was terrifying, but compared to the Heavenly Saint Sword, it was nothing. Out of the seven fragments, five had already been fused together. Although it still lacked two more fragments, the sword was Jiang Chen's natal weapon. It was incomparable to any ordinary Great Saint Weapon.

The power of the Heavenly Saint Sword wasn't the only factor.

The one who wielded the sword was also very important. Jiang Chen could instantly fuse with the sword and become a single unit.

Under the frenzied attack of the Heavenly Saint Sword, Desolate Yitang's giant fan was like a paper, chopped into halves.

The destruction of the combat weapon caused Desolate Yitang to suffer a serious injury. A large opening broke open on his chest, and blood was gushing out.

“No...”

Desolate Yitang gave out a shrill scream. He and Jiang Chen had only exchanged for three rounds, however, he was already pushed to the brink of defeat.

At the present moment, he no longer had the strength to fight back. With such serious injuries, he couldn't even use half of his strength. So, how could he be an opponent for Jiang Chen now?

Swoosh!

Jiang Chen didn't give Desolate Yitang a chance. The Heavenly Saint Sword turned into a divine light that shot forth, arriving above Desolate Yitang's head in a blink.

Innumerable light rushed out of the sword, turning into a sword web, enshrouding Desolate Yitang and sealing the entire void, leaving him no chance to escape.

An extremely dangerous Qi rose from the bottom of Desolate Yitang's heart. That was the taste of death he had never felt this before. Intense dread instantaneously flooded his heart.

He was certainly going to die soon. No one wasn't afraid of death. People who lived comfortable lives dreaded death the most.

“Stop, Gu Chen!”

Desolate Emperor shouted from the outside. He hadn't thought that Gu Chen would actually be this powerful. The great Desolate Yitang was about to be killed after three rounds of battle. How could he not be angry and impatient? That was a genius of Desolate Palace, losing such a genius would certainly incur a great loss.

However, Jiang Chen pretended as if he didn't hear Desolate Emperor's warning. From the moment he and Desolate Yitang started the battle, Desolate Yitang's fate was already doomed.

Chi La!

“Argh!”

Accompanied by a mournful cry, the genius of Desolate Palace, Desolate Yitang, was severed into half by the Heavenly Saint Sword and instantly died.

For a while, in the main hall of Law Enforcement Palace, all of the elders' eyes went wide, not believing what they just saw, especially those from Desolate Palace. It was really too hard for them to accept it as they all knew the strength of Desolate Yitang very well. This was the reason why Desolate Emperor summoned him here to fight Jiang Chen in the first place.

It wasn't just them, even Gu Firmament stood petrified on the floor. A while ago, he had underestimated Jiang Chen despite his high expectations. A genius like Gu Chen was literally heavenly defying. This time, Gu Firmament was sure that he had picked up a real treasure.

Jiang Chen slowly kept his Heavenly Saint Sword, and then walked out of the battlefield and back into the main hall. His mouth was curved into a smile. He looked at Desolate Emperor and said, "Desolate Emperor, I assume that you still remember our previous bet."

Including Desolate Emperor, all of the elders from Desolate Palace turned unpleasant all of a sudden. Just now, their minds were all focused on the monstrous talent, Gu Chen, and the death of Desolate Yitang, they had forgotten about the bet until Jiang Chen reminded them.

This time, the situation had gone out of their hands.

Desolate Emperor was very unwilling to believe this fact, but he couldn't deny it. It was true that he was an old man who had lived for a few hundred years, and the strongest of the entire Saint Origin World. It was also true that he was scammed by a brat, Gu

Chen. To him, this was an ultimate disgrace.

He was no fool, but why did he not see that this was a trap of Gu Chen? It started when Gu Chen demanded to fight any Fourth Grade Great Saint. Instead of retreating, he still continued and dived deeper into the trap that Gu Chen set. Thinking about this gave him an urge to cough up blood.

“Haha! Desolate Emperor, I don’t want to be disrespectful and decline the seat of being the Law Enforcement Palace master. This is the seat that I have longed to have.”

Gu Firmament was afraid that Desolate Emperor wouldn’t be furious enough, so he sent him another insulting remark. He now felt extremely relieved and delightful, Gu Palace had never been as proud as today.

Motherf*cker!

Desolate Emperor felt a little stuffy in his chest, as if there were hundreds of thousands of grass-mud horses galloping wantonly in his heart.

Chapter 965 - Glory

He was aggrieved! The high and mighty Desolate Emperor had forgotten when was the last time he got angry, because for a long time, no one had dared to make him angry, but today, he wasn't only furious. It was mixed with grievance and annoyance that it nearly drove him mad.

He was played by a brat. He, Desolate Emperor, fell into the plot of a newbie. How humiliating! If this was spread, he had no idea where should he put his face at. His prestige would suffer seriously.

However, he knew that this event would spread pretty soon to every corner of Saint Origin Palace. Even he, Desolate Emperor, could not stop the spread of the news.

“Desolate Emperor, given your status and position, you absolutely can't break your word. Since you gambled with Gu Chen, you must sincerely accept your loss. The seat of the Law Enforcement Palace master has changed. I suppose you have gotten tired and fed up of that position after occupying that seat for so long.” Heavenly Peng King said in serious tone, not sympathizing Desolate Emperor at all. This gave Desolate Emperor an impulse to dash forth and slash this giant Peng.

Without waiting for Desolate Emperor to speak, Heavenly Peng King held his fists at Gu Firmament formally. “Old Gu, congratulations!”

“Haha! Same to you. We are good friends and are both blessed. Why don’t we occupy this seat together?”

“That doesn’t seem very appropriate. There has always been only one person occupying the seat of the Law Enforcement Palace master. The rules have never mentioned about two people occupying a single seat.”

“Don’t refuse Brother Heavenly Peng. It wasn’t allowed before, but it’s different now. I am the palace master of the Law Enforcement Palace now, any word I say is a decree. Henceforth, the two of us will be in charge of handling the Law Enforcement Palace.”

“How could I possibly accept this...?”

.....

Looking at the actions of these two elderly, it looked as if they had already treated the Law Enforcement Palace as their own home. Everyone had a look of amazement plastered on their faces, even Jiang Chen could no help pursing his lips. Today, they finally experienced true shamelessness.

As if Gu Firmament and Heavenly Peng King were afraid that Desolate Emperor would not get angry enough, they started discussing how they would manage the Law Enforcement Palace in the future, and prepare a radical reformation of this association.

“Enough!”

Desolate Emperor roared, his eyes becoming bloodshot. Bloody Hell! He could not stand it anymore. He felt that he was about to explode. He was the true palace master of the Law Enforcement Palace, and his people were still in the main hall, but these two didn't even show him an ounce of respect. Their intention was that they would both occupy the seat after he left, they were even shamelessly discussing the reforms that they would make to improve the Law Enforcement Palace as if they were in some kind of business.

This would certainly infuriate a lot of people to death.

“Desolate Emperor, you must admit your defeat. Hand over the token of the Law Enforcement Palace.”

Gu Firmament didn't care even if Desolate Emperor was about to cough out blood, and extended his arm. Heavenly Peng King at one side had a gloating look. Jiang Chen was very satisfied with Gu Firmament and Heavenly Peng King's performance. As long as these two were together, Demon Palace and Gu Palace would be fully united.

Desolate Emperor could feel his body shaking due to his overwhelming anger, but there was nothing that he could do, his status and position prevented him from cheating. If the honorable Desolate Emperor could not even honor his promise, he would not just lose the seat of palace master, but also his hard earned fame.

“Here it is.”

Desolate Emperor threw it over casually. A golden ray flew over and was then caught by Gu Firmament. It was a golden token with the words ‘Law Enforcement’ carved on it. It was the token for the one who was in charge of the Law Enforcement Palace—the Palace Master.

Subsequently, Desolate Emperor stared at Jiang Chen without hiding his murderous intent. A genius like Gu Chen really made him feel envious. It would be so much better if Jiang Chen was a member of Desolate Palace.

Desolate Emperor’s figure slowly faded. He had lost the gamble and the seat of palace master. Continuing to stay here would only bring him unhappiness and misery.

The entire Law Enforcement Palace turned frantic. Ever since the establishment of the Law Enforcement Palace, the position of palace master would only change every three years, through election. There had never been a gamble that put the seat at stake. Today was the first time that such an event happened. The elders of Gu Palace were delighted, they ran towards Gu Firmament and congratulated him.

“Congratulations! Palace Master. I feel happy for you. At last, Gu Palace is now in control of the Law Enforcement Palace.”

“That’s right. It is truly exulting. Gu Chen, you are excellent. The future of our palace will get brighter with a genius like you.”

“Agreed. Gu Chen is merely a Second Grade Great Saint, but he could already kill a Fourth Grade Great Saint. That’s monstrously heaven defying. Plus, he was able to absorb all the immortal Qi in the Refining Tower. With his great luck, he will certainly prosper in the future. This is truly a blessing for Gu Palace.”

.....

The elders of Gu Palace looked proud and arrogant, but some people had sour faces. Each and every elder of Desolate Palace were extremely depressed. Initially, they had brought Gu Chen here to punish him, but they didn’t expect that instead of Gu Chen being punished, they had lost the seat of the palace master.

“The Law Enforcement Palace is used to enforce the laws, it doesn’t belong to Gu Palace alone.” The elder who brought Jiang Chen earlier said angrily.

But as soon as his voice faded, Gu Firmament turned to him and said in a cold tone, “You have now been dismissed, effective immediately. Be gone!”

“What rights do you have to dismiss me?”

The elder’s eyes went wide. Was this a joke? Dismissing someone so casually?

“The new palace master is in house. You have no right to speak.

When you are asked to scram, you will scram. You have disrespected me just now, it is already enough to charge you with treason. Dismissal is considered the lightest punishment for your mistake.”

With a wave of his hand, a gust of wind hit the elder, throwing him out of the main hall.

“Sh*t! This guy is awesome!” Big Yellow whispered.

“Of course. How can an overlord lack charisma?”

Jiang Chen shrugged. Peerless figures like Gu Firmament would have slight temperament. It was the elder’s fault that he failed to see the situation, putting himself in front of the muzzle of the gun. He should’ve never expressed his anger towards the new palace master.

“Alright. The Law Enforcement Palace will operate as usual. I will come to check things out from time to time. Gu Chen, let’s go,” said Gu Firmament.

A wave of air wrapped Jiang Chen and both of them disappeared.

Later, Heavenly Peng King also brought Big Yellow and Kong Yang back to Demon Palace while Gu Liufeng headed towards Gu Palace by himself.

In the Gu Palace. There was an imperial palace built in the void.

It was the place where Gu Firmament lived. No one were allowed to enter without his permission, but now, he had brought Jiang Chen here.

“Jiang Chen, you have earned Gu Palace enough reputation today, and you have exhilarated this old man very much. Having such a heaven defying talent at this young age is a miracle.”

Gu Firmament looked at Jiang Chen with great satisfaction. He called him by his real name instead of Gu Chen. Clearly, he had already known the identity of Jiang Chen.

In that case, Jiang Chen no longer needed to cover himself. With a burst, his face returned to his original appearance.

“I only achieved it because of the help of Palace Master. If Palace Master didn’t appear, I’m afraid that I wouldn’t have a chance, Desolate Emperor would’ve tortured me to death,” said Jiang Chen with a smile.

“Haha! You really have the guts! Gu Xuantian told me about the earth-shaking incidents that you did in Pure Land. I also learned that you are the son-in-law of our Gu Family. That means you are one of us. Today, you have helped our people in the Refining Tower and absorbed all the immortal Qi, earning Gu Palace tremendous glory. Also, you have fought for and won the seat of the Law Enforcement Palace master, disgracing Desolate Emperor craftily. You are now considered a great meritorious member in Gu Palace. I believe that once this news spread, everyone in Gu Palace will know you, and soon, your position and status in Gu Palace will soar by leaps and bounds.” Gu Firmament said with a smile.

He felt very satisfied in Jiang Chen's performance. He had no idea how long it had been since he felt so happy.

“Desolate Palace has become more powerful and ambitious. It is only a matter of time before the balance of the eight palaces is tilted off. We, Gu Palace, must stand out, along with Demon Palace. Desolate Palace has been growing bigger through all these years, do you know why?” asked Jiang Chen.

“Desolate Palace is no doubt, getting more powerful, especially the young generation, they are stronger than the younger generation of the other seven palaces. They seem to have received resources that we cannot get. The seat in the Law Enforcement Palace isn't the only contributing factor. There must be some other reason that we haven't found out. I have already investigated it but still found nothing about it. However, Desolate Palace's thirst for power is getting more obvious. You are right that the power of the eight major palaces will lose its balance soon. If we can unite with Demon Palace, it wouldn't be a bad choice,” said Gu Firmament with great confidence.

He was still skeptical when Gu Xuantian said that the future of Gu Family depended on Jiang Chen, but after seeing him today, he finally believed it.

“This is not the most important thing for the time being. There is an urgent matter that we have to solve first – the internal conflict in Gu Palace. Among the eight palaces, Demon Palace has the healthiest growth because there is fundamentally no internal conflicts amongst their people. Presently, we can't care about the

other palaces until we resolve this issue. Otherwise, it is going to affect the future of Gu Palace.” Jiang Chen said grimly.

“I agree with you. However, I can’t find any solutions to this conflict. Anyway, your appearance has brought this conflict to the surface and your deeds in the Refining Tower have surely helped ease the conflict. You have also contributed enormously in our palace and earned Gu Palace a great honor. Therefore, it is best if you personally solve this internal conflict. I believe that you already have a solution to this. In addition, the battle between you and Gu Lian should be canceled. You are already a Second Grade Great Saint now, killing Desolate Yitang wasn’t even a problem to you. There is basically no point in fighting Gu Liang.” Gu Firmament said.

“No.” Jiang Chen retorted.

Chapter 966 - Being the Centre of Attention

“The battle between me and Gu Lian is imperative. I must defeat Gu Lian in front of the people of Gu Palace, so that they will change their way of thinking and accept the geniuses of the outer palace, I am fighting on behalf of the outer palace. If Gu Lian admits defeat before fighting, the result will still be the same. Now that the conflict has risen to the surface, it has to be solve as soon as possible.” Jiang Chen said firmly, confirming that the battle was inevitable.

He had to win against Gu Lian and use the opportunity to resolve the internal issues of Gu Palace completely. The importance of the battle was already clear.

“Very well. I will come to watch your battle against Gu Lian. Lots of people will also be present. On that day, it will all be on you,” said Gu Firmament.

Jiang Chen was right. Since the internal conflict had reach the surface, it must be solved right away to get rid of any hidden problems. There were countless of lessons in history that proved that internal strife is dangerous.

Gu Firmament trusted Jiang Chen very much. If they only relied on Jiang Chen and Gu Lian’s fight, it wouldn’t solve the conflict completely. However, the things that Jiang Chen did in the Refining Tower and Law Enforcement Palace helped him gain enough reputation to help solve this conflict.

It was conceivable that the events in the Refining Tower had already spread across the entire Saint Origin Palace. The incident in the Law Enforcement Palace had even spread faster. By then, Gu Chen would become the idolatrous existence amongst the young disciples, regardless of whether they were disciples of the inner or outer palace. His status would certainly rise unceasingly. Even those high ranked elders would be extremely excited to see such a dazzling and rare genius appearing in Gu Palace.

“Palace Master, if there’s nothing else, I will take my leave.”

Jiang Chen cupped his fists at Gu Firmament.

“Jiang Chen, what kind of cultivation resources do you need? Don’t hesitate to tell me. Anything that is within the limit of Gu Palace, we will try to satisfy it.” Gu Firmament said.

He had made up his mind to nurture Jiang Chen, a talent very worthy of their effort and time. If Saint Origin World fell into chaos, Jiang Chen would definitely be one of the most important players in it.

Jiang Chen thought for a while, then shook his head immediately. “No resources.”

It was just two simple words, but it projected his hegemony and self-confidence. He was originally a person with a lofty disposition. After he integrated the heart of blaze, it boosted his heroic aura even more. A simple word, gaze and gesture of his could affect people around him.

Then, he switched back to Gu Chen's face, turned and disappeared. Instead of going to other places, he went straight back to his residence. In order to avoid trouble, he went into seclusion. He was sure that a lot of people would come and visit him after the incident in the Law Enforcement Palace was spread. He was a person who disliked to be disturbed.

“Today's reward is great. Not only have I advanced to Second Grade Great Saint, but also gained Gu Palace a reputation by suppressing Desolate Palace's arrogance. What's more important is that Big Yellow and I have reunited, pulling Demon Palace and Gu Palace together. It is absolutely important that these two major forces join together.”

Jiang Chen was smiling. He was quite satisfied with the current development. Now, he would just have to wait until his fight with Gu Lian finished before thoroughly resolving the conflicts in Gu Palace. Once this was achieved, the next thing that he would do was to hasten his cultivation. There was no doubt in Desolate Palace's greed to dominate. He speculated that Desolate Palace must be hiding some kind of secret, a secret that allowed their geniuses to grow faster than the other seven major palaces.

The secret behind Desolate Palace's fast growth intrigued Jiang Chen, but he still needed time in order to search for the root of it. At any rate, strength was the most important thing. Without sufficient strength, any action would only be useless, even if he found their secret. This was something that Jiang Chen had always been very aware of.

Moreover, he noticed his tremendous improvement after he absorbed the immortal Qi today. If he could continue to absorb the immortal Qi during his cultivation, his cultivation would surely skyrocket, reaching an extreme level. But sadly, this was only his wishful thinking.

After all, Saint Origin Palace wasn't really separated from Saint Origin World like the Immortal World. It was already good enough that they could absorb a little immortal Qi. It would simply be impossible to have immortal Qi that was as much as the Heaven and Earth Yuan Qi here, unless the expert had achieved the immortal realm and rose to the Immortal World.

While Jiang Chen was in seclusion, the situation outside were exactly what he and Gu Firmament expected. The incidents in the Law Enforcement Palace spread throughout the Saint Origin Palace, like a gust of wind.

“Oh my god. I regretted not being present in that scene at that time. I didn't expect that Gu Chen would be so amazing! He could actually kill a genius like Desolate Yitang and also anger Desolate Emperor to death? He has also won the seat of the Law Enforcement Palace master. I'm afraid that out of the entire Gu Palace, only Gu Chen could make such contributions.”

“Wicked! That's overly wicked! He has just arrived in Saint Origin Palace, but he has already created such earth-shattering events. However, he is quite a good person. At that time, he helped the disciples of Gu Palace fight back and killed three geniuses of Desolate Palace in the Refining Tower. I heard that he also asked Gu Yong to bring back some pills for those whom he had injured

the other day. Those pills were magical. All of the disciples who took the pill have almost recovered. Gu Chen is truly generous. He stood up for us regardless of how we treated him, and regardless of the past.”

“There’s more. He has absorbed all the immortal Qi in the Refining Tower dry. It is truly heaven defying. I was there at the time. All the immortal Qi in the miniature spatial zone were gone in a few minutes.”

.....

Everyone in Gu Palace was cheering and the topic of their conversation was Gu Chen. The emergence of Gu Chen had brought them endless glory. Gu Palace hadn’t seen this impressive deeds in decades. His arrival brought praise and respect from all the people in Gu Palace.

From these reactions alone, the internal conflicts between the geniuses of the inner and outer palace have almost been resolved even if the battle between Jiang Chen and Gu Lian didn’t happen yet. However, there were still some hidden conflicts amongst the higher ups.

Since the conflict had been brought to the surface, it had to be resolved no matter what. Jiang Chen had to use his battle with Gu Lian to achieve this goal.

“By the way, Gu Chen can even kill Desolate Yitang. Doesn’t that mean that Brother Gu Liang won’t stand a chance either if they

fight?”

“Wake up buddy! There is no chance at all. The result of the fight is already as clear as day. Brother Gu Lian is powerful but compared to Desolate Yitang, there is still a gap. So, when Desolate Yitang was instantly killed by Gu Chen, it only showed that Gu Chen is a rare genius that Gu Palace never had ever since. In my opinion, they have to cancel the battle. If the fight really happened, Brother Gu Lian will only humiliate himself.”

“Exactly. Seems like the battle is no longer meaningful, and our view of the outer palace have been wrong. When we fought them yesterday, we felt that they were also strong and powerful. Furthermore, Gu Chen was one of them. Who else would look down on him now, the one who earned the greatest glory for Gu Palace? I don’t care what you all think but I have already viewed Gu Chen as my idol.”

.....

People were discussing about the agreement between Gu Chen and Gu Lian excitedly. All the geniuses understood that the battle no longer held any importance, Gu Lian wasn’t going to be Gu Chen’s opponent.

The disciples of Outer Palace were even more excited. They had never felt so proud before ever since they entered Gu Palace. They had been oppressed by the geniuses of the inner palace. Their situation only changed the moment Gu Chen arrived. Aside from the satisfying battle yesterday, the outlook of the inner palace had already changed. Those haughty geniuses no longer showed them

disdain.

Two days passed. On this day, the martial arena was already crowded by so many people even before the fight even started. Most of them were disciples and elders.

The martial arena of Gu Palace was much larger than the one near Jiang Chen's residence. At the center of the martial arena stood several battle platforms that soared up to the sky above the clouds.

Today was the day of the fight between Gu Chen and Gu Lian. Even though everyone knew that there was nothing much to expect from this battle, they still came here anyway, because many of them hadn't seen Gu Chen before. Those powerful elders were also here to see Gu Chen's appearance. They wanted to know what the number one genius of Gu Palace looked like.

Gu Lian arrived. His expression didn't show any sign of tension. In his mind, winning or losing wasn't important, but the courage to fight.

There were a dozen Outer Palace geniuses that walked towards the martial arena. The one who led them was dressed in white clothes, and emitted a heroic aura, he was, without a doubt, Gu Chen.

“Look, Gu Chen has come.”

“He is Gu Chen. Sure enough, he has an extraordinary bearing. One look is enough to tell that he is a dragon among his peers. His future achievements is surely unimaginable.”

“Killing Desolate Yitang while being merely a Second Grade Great Saint? He didn’t just defeat his opponent but killed him. I have never seen such strength. It won’t be an exaggeration to call him the number one genius of Gu Palace.”

“No doubt. This man has earned Gu Palace so much honor and glory. He has also won over the seat of the Law Enforcement Palace master. His contributions are incomparable, even to the elders, a lot of them certainly won’t able to do so.”

.....

For a moment, everyone’s eyes fell on Jiang Chen, praising and admiring his demeanor.

Chapter 967 - Saving Face

Jiang Chen was currently in the limelight. It had been a very long time since there was such a remarkable young talent that appeared in Gu Palace. According to the norm, a fight between disciples wouldn't have attracted the presence of the higher ups, but now, many of them were present just to have a look on Jiang Chen.

At this moment, a powerful pressure suddenly spread out over the entire arena. Everyone stopped talking; each of their faces revealed a trace of awe.

A figure materialized. He was Gu Firmament. He was floating in the sky above the martial arena. He stood there without saying a word. He represented nobility and authority. It was the symbol of status. In Gu Palace, no one would be able to shake his position. He was the absolute lord.

Of course, Gu Firmament wasn't the only mighty Ninth Grade Great Saint in Gu Palace. There were a few elders who also had that cultivation. There were some old fogeys with peak Great Saint cultivation base that had secluded themselves to concentrate on breaking through into the immortal realm. Some of these old fogeys had become famous back when Jiang Chen reigned over the Saint Origin World. They wouldn't appear unless Gu Palace faced a critical situation.

“Look, even the place master has arrived. It only showed how important Gu Chen has become. If it was during ordinary times, such a battle would surely not attract the attention of the palace master even if there was a loss of life.”

“That’s of course. Gu Chen has helped the palace master gain tremendous reputation and won him the seat of the Law Enforcement Palace master. How could the palace master not attach great importance to such a rare genius?”

“Originally, it was only a battle between the disciples of the Outer Palace and Inner Palace. However, because of the palace master’s arrival, the battle had just become a major event in Gu Palace. Besides, so many elders have come, they are really treating this event as something important.”

.....

The appearance of Gu Firmament showed the importance of the battle, but many of them were aware that the battle was caused by the internal conflicts between the inner and Outer Palace. It would benefit Gu Palace greatly if this conflict was resolved today.

“Gu Chen, Gu Lian, step into the battle platform now.” Gu Firmament said.

As soon as his voice faded, Jiang Chen’s figure appeared on the battle platform. The crowd’s gaze shifted to Gu Lian, expecting that he wouldn’t dare fight but would admit his defeat, going up there would only bring him disgrace.

However, Gu Lian’s facial expression remained unchanged. With a leap, he stood on the platform, opposite of Jiang Chen.

“You have guts,” said Jiang Chen truthfully.

Gu Lian would certainly not be looked down when he dared to step into the platform. If he was replaced by another person, that person would surely lose his courage to step into the platform after hearing that Jiang Chen killed Desolate Yitang; Gu Lian didn't show a single sign of fear and his demeanor was as natural as usual.

“Gu Chen, I know that I am not your opponent and may even not withstand a single strike from you. However, incompetence and not having the courage to fight are two different things. I, Gu Lian, have decided to come up on this platform because I would like to see how you, a mere Second Grade Great Saint, were able to kill Desolate Yitang. I would like to experience how powerful the number one genius of Gu Palace is.” Gu Lian said loudly.

“Good. Brother Gu Lian does have the boldness. Being defeated and not having the courage to fight are two different things. We surely can't back away because of fear.”

“That's right. It won't be a disgrace even if Brother Gu Lian lost, we certainly won't look down on him, and we'll respect him instead.”

“That's of course, if it had been me, I wouldn't have the guts to stand on that platform. I would just admit defeat.”

.....

The crowd was praising Gu Lian for his action and courage.

“Gu Chen, come on. Borneo Divine Palm!”

Gu Lian exerted his Qi to the maximum, causing the Qi of a Fourth Grade Great Saint to linger in the air above the platform. Borneo Divine Palm was his greatest combat technique. He knew in his heart that he was not an opponent of Gu Chen, so he struck with his most powerful attack, leaving no regrets behind even if he lost.

Hong Long...

A rumble rang in the void. A huge golden palm was formed by Gu Lian, covering the sky, trying to enshroud everything beneath. Many were startled. If they were ordinary people, they would have been crushed by that terrifying force.

Pa Pa!

Golden glow appeared above Jiang Chen's fist and a thunderous sound was heard. Brilliant light radiated from his eyes. In just a few seconds, a punch smashed against the Borneo Divine Palm.

This was just a simple physical attack that incorporated no combat art. A Second Grade Great Saint was using his bare fist to fight the most powerful combat technique of a Fourth Grade Great Saint. In a situation like this, it's either the Second Grade Great

Saint was an idiot or he was extremely confident.

Jiang Chen naturally wasn't an idiot, anyone who thought so would be dumbfounded.

Jiang Chen's fist contained explosive energy. It collided violently with the Borneo Divine Palm. Raging energy spilled out from the impact, turning the atmosphere above the platform manic.

In every one's astonished eyes, the mighty Borneo Divine Palm was pierced through by Jiang Chen's punch, and was shattered into countless of golden fragments, vanishing in the void.

Deng Deng Deng!

Gu Lian suffered a great backlash and moved three paces back to regain his balance. These three paces had brought him to the edge of the platform.

"That's awesome! It seems like it was no accident that Gu Chen killed Desolate Yitang."

"Yeah. He is merely using his physique to defeat Brother Gu Lian. This kind of power is beyond logic. Aside from that, did you all notice that Gu Chen only used a single punch to face Brother Gu Lian's technique, instead of using any of his powerful combat techniques? That's because he wanted to give Brother Gu Lian some face."

“That’s right. Brother Gu Lian is fighting on behalf of the Inner Palace. If he were beaten too badly, it would put all the faces of the Inner Palace to shame, igniting the anger and resentment inside of them. Gu Chen’s method helped Brother Gu Lian save some face, he really has good intentions and is very empathic.”

.....

Many of them were able to see Gu Chen’s intention. If he acted just like three days before, trampling Gu Lian with his foot, it would undoubtedly humiliate all the geniuses of Inner Palace in front of everyone’s eyes. This would certainly not alleviate the internal conflicts in Gu Palace, but would make things worse instead. It would arouse resentment and make people feel that Gu Chen was unapproachable.

Gu Firmament and most of the elders nodded, appreciative of Gu Chen’s efforts.

Gu Lian couldn’t help but shake his head. He understood how strong Gu Chen’s power was after that collision. It also meant that one of his wishes was fulfilled.

Gu Lian clasped his fists at Jiang Chen. “Gu Chen, you are truly strong. I admit my defeat. Thank you for giving the Inner Palace some face.”

Gu Lian wasn’t a fool. How could he not see that Gu Chen intentionally held back his attack? If Gu Chen was really truthful in his attack, could he still stand on this platform, intact?

Chapter 968 - Situation

No one commented on Gu Lian's admission. At least, he tried his best in battle, and Jiang Chen had provided him a chance to step down. So, it was the wisest decision to admit his defeat. If he persisted to fight, he would be disdained by the people if he couldn't see the situation clearly.

“Don't mention it, Brother Gu.”

Jiang Chen clasped his fists in response to Gu Lian, then turned and looked around, seeing that no one was not looking at him with blazing eyes.

“Brothers of Inner Palace, I, Gu Chen, must first apologize for what happened three days ago,” said Jiang Chen loudly.

“I felt compelled to intervene, and the battle with Gu Lian today; all of these have a single purpose – that is to let everyone on Gu Palace know, that we are one family. We are all surnamed Gu, the blood that flows in our body is the bloodline of the Gu Family. There shouldn't be any distinction between the Inner and Outer Palace. In order for Gu Palace to stand strong, this internal conflict must be resolved. You should know that the ancestors who created Gu Palace came from the Gu Family in the Pure Land. Even though they had all risen to the Immortal World, I believe that they don't wish to see a fragmented Gu Palace. The things that I, Gu Chen did, is to let all the geniuses of the Inner Palace see how capable the geniuses of Outer Palace were. None of them would be standing here if they weren't capable geniuses. You all have no reason to look down upon them because we are all one family. It is very

disgraceful for us to feel superior to our own brothers. We should only display our sense of superiority to other people.”

The whole arena had become quiet, as they listened to Jiang Chen’s speech, including Gu Firmament. Every line of word that Jiang Chen spoke touched their hearts. Some geniuses of Inner Palace lowered their heads, feeling a trace of shame.

Jiang Chen was right. Even though they were geniuses of Inner Palace, they had the same ancestors and bloodline. They are one family. It meant nothing if they bullied their own people, but it was different if they oppressed their opponents and enemies.

Back in the Refining Tower, they were bullied by Desolate Palace. It was Jiang Chen who brought them back to the competition. The Inner Palace shouldn’t feel superior in front of their own people. Jiang Chen was a genius of Outer Palace; he came from the Pure Land, but in the aspect of talent and combat strength, no one knew how much stronger he was compared to them. So how could they claim that Jiang Chen was inferior to them? However, Jiang Chen had never expressed his superiority in front of them. Instead, he used it against his enemy, to help Gu Palace regain their reputation. It was a fact, so it was no longer necessary to go into details.

“Gu Chen, I, Gu Ling, apologize to you about the incident three days ago and to you all, geniuses of Outer Palace. From this day on, I will no longer look down on the people of Outer Palace. We are all one family.”

Gu Ling stood out from the crowd and said loudly, then saluted

deeply to the people of Outer Palace.

“That’s right. Brother Gu Chen is right. There will be no internal conflicts in Gu Palace anymore. We are one family. The blood that is flowing inside our bodies is the bloodline of the Gu Family.”

“I, Gu Lang, will never bully the people of Outer Palace anymore. Thinking of it now really disgusts me. Gu Chen’s appearance made us understand this truth. If our conflicts continues to develop, Gu Palace will face its own destruction.”

.....

At this instant, many geniuses of Inner Palace stood out to speak. Jiang Chen did not only have strong combat power, he also has a good conduct, which completely conquered them, changing their views of the Outer Palace. Many high ranked elders were touched by the situation. They knew better than anyone how terrible the internal conflicts in Gu Palace were and what kind of serious consequences it would lead to. Now, even the lower ranked disciples had realized it. If they, the seniors couldn’t realise it, they weren’t worthy to be called elders.

The disciples of Outer Palace felt truly relieved and exulted. They had lived enough of those oppressive days. Henceforth, they now have their own status and identity, becoming a true disciple of Gu Palace.

Each and every one of them gazed at Jiang Chen who was still standing above the platform. Their eyes were full of fervour and

reverence. They were people with great pride and were the geniuses of geniuses that had never really admired someone, let alone revere one.

“Not bad, kid. The conflicts which I couldn’t solved was so easily solved by you.” Gu Firmament’s voice rang in Jiang Chen’s ears.

What he said was true. Although he was the high and mighty palace master, it wasn’t easy for him to resolve the conflicts that was already deeply rooted in the hearts of the disciples. If he applied strong measures, it would backfire. The incidents that happened after Jiang Chen arrived had paved the way to resolve the conflicts inside Gu Palace. Therefore, the conflicts was completely resolved right after the battle between Jiang Chen and Gu Lian.

“As you have heard, all of you have the blood of Gu Family. I don’t want to see any more distinction between Inner and Outer Palace. Everyone has equal rights and status. We must all work together so that we can be truly strong in the future.”

After throwing these words out, Gu Firmament vanished. Many of them saw him smile before he left.

The internal conflict in Gu Palace had thoroughly been resolved. Its effect could be seen through their improvement in the future. This was a very important element to a major power.

Jiang Chen had become a very meritorious member of Gu Palace. The higher ranked elders began to attach him with so much

importance. The lower ranked disciples started to worship him. It only took him three days to become wholly famous, not just in Gu Palace but also across the entire Saint Origin Palace.

After his battle with Gu Lian, Jiang Chen didn't immediately go in seclusion. He went to Demon Palace. The incident in Law Enforcement Palace had pulled Gu Palace and Demon Palace together. Big Yellow must have a very high status and position in Demon Palace. It was time for Jiang Chen to go visit him. He believed that Heavenly Peng King would be delighted to see him.

Gu Palace had become unusually lively. All of them, from high rank to low rank, had smiling faces. Currently, Gu Palace was in control of the Law Enforcement Palace. It was certainly a good thing for them. It was important to know that the Law Enforcement Palace exist not only to enforce the laws, but also to allocate resources. Over the years, Desolate Palace had been in control of this palace, which gave them a lot of advantages and excellent cultivation resources.

Now, at last, it was Gu Palace's turn to take charge of the place. So, naturally, they felt excited about it.

As opposed to Gu Palace's bustling atmosphere, the atmosphere in Desolate Palace was heavy. For many years, Desolate Palace had never felt so aggrieved and frustrated. Ranging from Desolate Emperor to the ordinary disciples, each and every one of them were filled with anger.

It was exceedingly stifling. No one had ever made Desolate Palace suffer this much of a loss. They had lost three geniuses and their

dignity in the Refining Tower and also the Law Enforcement Palace, it simply put their Desolate Palace to shame. The incident not only made them lose Desolate Yitang, but also made Desolate Emperor an object of ridicule. These things were incomparably abhorrent.

“Damn! That Gu Chen is so abominable. We must find a chance to kill him.”

“I’m afraid that it won’t be that easy. If he hides in Gu Palace, we won’t be able to do him any harm, we can’t just intrude in Gu Palace to kill him. Besides, it was our palace master who chose to gamble with him in the Law Enforcement Palace.”

“I didn’t think that Gu Family was able to cultivate such a heaven defying genius in the Pure Land. This man is an absolute threat to our palace. We have to get rid of him as long as the opportunity presents itself. If he is allowed to develop, Gu Palace will certainly surpass us sooner or later. When that time comes, they are going to ride on our necks to sh*t and piss.”

.....

The people of Desolate Palace resented Gu Chen so much they wanted to bite his flesh. Gu Chen’s existence had also aroused the higher ups of Desolate Palace and were threatened. Many experts had made up their mind to eliminate Gu Chen, only by eliminating him would they feel relieved and at peace, and also regain the dignity of Desolate Palace.

As a matter of fact, it wasn't just Desolate Palace that was focused on Jiang Chen, but also the other palaces. It would be false to say that they weren't jealous about such genius. However, since Jiang Chen didn't have a direct conflict with them, they just felt envious and jealous.

They believed that given Desolate Palace's conduct, they would certainly not let Gu Chen go easily.

Jiang Chen stayed in Demon Palace for a day before returning to Gu Palace. He had had a very pleasant conversation with Heavenly Peng King, who also expressed his concerns in the present situation of Saint Origin Palace. Demon Palace was a race of demons. They were essentially different from humans. They had sharper senses towards danger compared to humans. Therefore, they already knew the ambition of Desolate Palace a long time ago. However, none of them, including Heavenly Peng King, knew about the secret of Desolate Palace. Anyhow, he and Jiang Chen agreed that with Desolate Palace's current strength, even if they were wildly ambitious, it would be impossible for them to eat the entire Saint Origin Palace up. No single palace would be able to do that.

Jiang Chen frowned. Saint Origin Palace might look serene and peaceful on the surface, but dark tide was surging. His intuition told him that something big would happen in Saint Origin World sooner or later, and that they weren't far away from the real chaos.

Jiang Chen created a spatial zone, and hid inside in contemplation. He was thinking about the matter of Ancestor Greenlotus. He had asked Gu Firmament and Heavenly Peng King

about Ancestor Greenlotus but none of them knew him. This was what baffled Jiang Chen even more.

According to Great Master Ran Feng, Ancestor Greenlotus didn't rise to the Immortal World and didn't die, but was captured and imprisoned. Of all places in Saint Origin World, Saint Origin Palace was the only plausible location that could imprison Ancestor Greenlotus.

However, if Ancestor Greenlotus was really in Saint Origin Palace, it was impossible for Heavenly Peng King and Gu Firmament to know nothing about it, after all, they were one of overlords in Saint Origin Palace. So it distressed him when they seemed to know nothing about Ancestor Greenlotus.

“Could it be related to Desolate Palace?”

Jiang Chen's eyes glittered, putting all of his focus on Desolate Palace. Neither Gu Firmament nor Heavenly Peng King knew about the whereabouts of Ancestor Greenlotus. It was already imaginable that the other palaces wouldn't have any knowledge about him either. If Ancestor Greenlotus was really imprisoned by someone, the only one that Jiang Chen could think of was Desolate Palace.

Chapter 969 - The Aging Greenlotus

Jiang Chen knew Ancestor Greenlotus very well. He was a living Buddha who could predict the future. There must be a purpose for them to keep him here. Great Master Ran Feng had also persisted for many years, trying to find his own master.

Jiang Chen believed and concluded that Ancestor Greenlotus was imprisoned in Desolate Palace, because there wasn't any other possible place across the world besides here. He guessed that there must be a reason if Ancestor Greenlotus failed in the heavenly tribulation that year. Maybe it had something to do with the people who had imprisoned him. Otherwise, with Ancestor Greenlotus abilities, it would be impossible for him to fail his heavenly tribulation. He would've risen and became an immortal.

“Gu Palace and Demon Palace didn't know anything about it. It seems that they didn't know the existence of Ancestor Greenlotus at all. The same goes to Dan, Narang, Huo, Shi and Bin Palace. The palace that arouses suspicion right now is Desolate Palace. Unfortunately, I can't go there myself. With my present strength, going there is equivalent to suicide.”

He now felt extremely distressed, but after a while, his eyes brightened. “Oh ya, I can use the flaming wings along with the Spatial Shift. I don't think it will be a problem if I make a trip to Desolate Palace. Ancestral Dragon Pagoda should have a function of concealing my Qi. However, that sounds too reckless. If Desolate Palace has the means to capture Ancestor Greenlotus under the very nose of the seven major palaces, they certainly have a very tight defense system.”

Jiang Chen sighed, and decided to give up the thought of exploring Desolate Palace. He was still weak after all. Although he had advanced to Second Grade Great Saint, he was just like a child compared to Desolate Palace. About the matter of searching for Ancestor Greenlotus, he needed more details and cautiousness.

The truth was just as Jiang Chen predicted. Ancestor Greenlotus was surely imprisoned in Desolate Palace.

Inside a deep layer of a spatial zone was an independent spatial zone. It was very small and perhaps, it shouldn't be called a spatial zone. It should be regarded as a large secret chamber. The chamber was 40 square meters wide, filled with frosty cold Qi, and frost was everywhere.

This secret chamber existed in the crevice in a deep layer of a spatial zone. Its surface was covered by a very powerful seal that not even a mighty Ninth Grade Great Saint could perceive the slightest bit of Qi inside.

At this moment, at the center of the secret chamber was an old monk sitting with his eyes closed. He wore a pale yellow robe that looked tattered, but his body was emitting a shimmer of luster. He looked as if he was a hundred years old. Of course, his real age was definitely more than a hundred years old.

The old monk was sitting there with his back bent a little forward. His breath was unnoticeable. His face was full of loose skin and wrinkles. He didn't seem like he could live much longer,

but he gave off the feeling that he couldn't die.

It seemed as if he had stayed here for too long, causing him to feel numb with everything around. The frosty Qi didn't seem to have the tiniest bit of effect on him.

There were some old monks in Buddha Sect who meditated for a hundred years. This old monk was literally in a similar state.

At this moment, a ripple occurred in the void inside the secret chamber. A ghostly figure appeared. He was an elder who looked around fifty years old. There was a long beard below his chin. He didn't look very robust but his Qi was terrifying, as if he had been detached from Heaven and Earth. Clearly, he didn't belong to this world. The Qi that was exuded from his body was the immortal Qi. That's right. The immortal Qi. He was a true immortal that was beyond the Great Saint realm.

If other people knew about this, they would be gaping at this scene in shock. One should know that after advancing from the Great Saint realm, that person would immediately be pulled by the force of the Immortal World and could no longer stay in the Mortal World.

This was because the Qi of an immortal was too strong. The world beneath could never bear its power. When immortals began a massacre, the entire world beneath would collapse, just like how Void Triangular Domain couldn't stand the power of Great Saints.

However, this elder was in this world physically.

“Greenlotus, it’s been a hundred years, but you still persevered. It won’t come to a good end when you go against Desolate Palace.” The elder said to the old monk sitting on the ground.

There was no doubt about it. The old monk wasn’t anyone other than the Ancestor Greenlotus whom Jiang Chen had been looking for.

“Here you are again.”

Ancestor Greenlotus slowly opened his eyes. His misty pupils suddenly brightened. This single gaze could stare people death. It was a supreme realm that made it impossible for people to associate it with the breathless old monk.

“Greenlotus, I have never admired anyone besides you. As long as you hand over that thing, I will immediately open the prison for you, allowing you to ascend to the Immortal World. This was supposed to be a smooth exchange, but you chose to stubbornly wait here for a hundred years. Why make it hard for yourself?”

The elder said in a slightly impatient tone, he had said the exact same thing numerous times.

“Exploiting me by keeping me in the Mortal World is a violation of the Immortal Path. I will not give you anything. You can leave now.”

Ancestor Greenlotus's tone was very calm, as though there wasn't the tiniest bit of anger within him. After he finished speaking, he closed his eyes.

"Greenlotus, you are too stubborn. Do you really think that I won't dare to kill you?"

The elder sounded a little angry.

"You won't dare, killing me will also kill Desolate Palace's 100 years of effort."

Ancestor Greenlotus shook his head.

"You..."

The elder was tongue-tied. It was just like what Ancestor Greenlotus said, he wouldn't dare to kill Ancestor Greenlotus as that would mean destroying their hundred years worth of efforts.

"Humph! Greenlotus, you should know very well that even if we can't get that item, imprisoning you will achieve the same result. You will be the only one to suffer the losses because you don't know how to grab the opportunity to become an immortal when it presents itself."

The elder let out a cold humph and disappeared immediately. This was another unpleasant chat. Such a conversation would happen once a year and Ancestor Greenlotus had been numb to it.

After the departure of the elder, the spatial barrier around closed once again. The surrounding was filled with white frosty mist. Ancestor Greenlotus opened his eyes again, revealing a sneer on his placid face.

Ancestor Greenlotus turned his palm. A three-meter long broken sword appeared in his hands. If Jiang Chen was here, he would be able to recognize this as a Heavenly Saint Sword fragment.

Looking at the broken sword, he felt like looking at his old friend. He muttered to himself, “Old fellow, when you fell a 100 years ago in the Saint Cliff, I went there and found this broken sword. I have never admired anyone in my life except you. You are the only one who had broken the Immortal Path, bringing hope for the Great Saints and also disasters to the land of Saint Origin World.”

Weng... Weng...

Suddenly, the broken sword trembled violently in his hand, producing a buzzing sound, as if it had been summoned.

It wasn't the first time that he had taken out the broken sword in a hundred years, but he had never seen something like this.

Chapter 970 - We Meet Again, At Last

“What’s going on? This is the broken sword that was left behind by Jiang Chen. It is a fragment of the Heavenly Saint Sword that I kept as a memorial of him. It has never reacted in such a way. In this world, only one person could cause this broken sword to tremble so intensely, but that isn’t possible, Jiang Chen had already been smashed to pieces in the Saint Cliff.”

Ancestor Greenlotus panicked. Considering his cultivation and disposition, it was extremely abnormal to see such reaction from him. He wasn’t able to remain calm.

At the same moment, in the spatial zone of Jiang Chen, two icy cold beams of light shot out from his eyes.

“It’s the Qi of the Heavenly Saint Sword. It’s the sixth fragment of the sword. I didn’t expect to find one here. That’s excellent. If I can get that broken sword and merge it into the Heavenly Saint Sword, my cultivation will be enhanced, and I’ll straightaway break through into the Third Grade Great Saint. Let me try and feel the exact location of that sword fragment.”

Jiang Chen was unable to hide his excitement. Five lost fragments had already been found and integrated into the Heavenly Saint Sword, leaving only the last two parts. Unexpectedly, he was able to sense another fragment here in Saint Origin Palace. What he needed the most now was advancement. If he could find the sword fragment, his cultivation would advance to Third Grade Great Saint. At that time, if he transformed into his dragon-form, not even a Seventh Grade Great Saint would be his

opponent. He would then be considered as a high ranked expert.

He cast out the Heavenly Saint Sword. It floated in front of him, brilliantly, producing the same buzzing sound as though it was affected by some kind of summoning force.

He closed his eyes and circulated the Great Soul Derivation Technique, and began to thoroughly sense the location of the broken sword. As he was connected to Heavenly Saint Sword, it was an extremely simple thing for him to determine its exact location.

Swish!

His eyes opened abruptly. Two beams of cold light shot out of his eyes; the ripples of the light cut open the void ahead.

“It’s in the direction of Desolate Palace.”

Jiang Chen’s expression turned grim. He had already sensed the exact location of the fragment, it was coming from the Desolate Palace. The present circumstance gave him a hard time to decide. Going there in search for his broken sword was undoubtedly snatching food from a tiger’s mouth. It was imaginable how dangerous it would be.

“It seems it's inevitable, I have to make a trip to Desolate Palace.”

In his eyes, there was a glint of ruthlessness. Moments ago, he

was considering whether to go Desolate Palace to investigate the matter of Ancestor Greenlotus. Currently, he could no longer hesitate, getting the fragment of the Heavenly Saint Sword was a must. He was not afraid to intrude even if it was Desolate Palace. As the saying went: How can you catch a tiger's cub without entering the its lair?

Jiang Chen had never been a timid person.

After keeping his Heavenly Saint Sword, he summoned the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda out. In the golden Ancestral Dragon Pagoda, three levels had been condensed. He used the pagoda to wrap his entire body. Then, he realised that the pagoda didn't just have an astonishing defensive capability, but also have an amazing stealth capability, which allowed him to silently traverse the void. He could also swagger in the void if he wanted to do so and no one would be able to detect him.

Adding his incomparably mystical Spatial Shift and the Flaming Wings, it gave him enough confidence to search Desolate Palace.

Swoosh!

His entire body vanished, travelling in the spatial zone like a spectre, heading in the direction of Desolate Palace with extreme speed. He initially wanted to bring Big Yellow with him, that dog was incomparably divine and could break open countless of seals and restrictions. But after thinking about it, he decided otherwise, he was heading to Desolate Palace after all. In case of danger, he could still make his escape.

In other words, neither he nor Big Yellow was strong enough to enter and leave Desolate Palace freely. In any case, it was easier for one person to hide compared to two.

In the frozen secret chamber, Ancestor Greenlotus was still staring at the broken sword, which trembled even more intensely now, unblinkingly. The metal had never stopped since it was taken out.

At the same time, Jiang Chen who was travelling in the spatial zone was approaching the frozen miniature spatial zone.

Soon, he arrived outside the miniature spatial zone. As he was still concealed by the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda, he felt shocked upon seeing the miniature zone.

“Damn! How could Desolate Palace have such a secluded place? There is only this tiny dimensional area in the deepest region of the spatial zone? And, it was sealed with a formidable freezing formation, not allowing even the slightest bit of Qi to come out. If I wasn’t guided by the Heavenly Saint Sword, it would totally be impossible for me to find this place. I’m afraid that my sword fragment is not the only one inside. To Desolate Palace, the sword fragment is no big deal. They won’t even put the metal in their eyes. If I’m not guessing it wrongly, there must be some other more important things inside,” muttered Jiang Chen in his heart.

He checked the surroundings carefully. He was completely hidden in the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda and wouldn’t be detected

by any expert.

As a matter of fact, there wasn't a single expert around here. Place like this would commonly not be defended by anyone. Let's not talk about whether or not people could find this place, the seal outside this tiny dimensional area was indestructible.

He cautiously got close to the seal, and circulated the Great Soul Derivation Technique. After analysing the seal, his facial expression change instantly.

“This is a seal placed by an immortal. There is no way that a Great Saint could deploy such a seal. Could there be an Immortal in Desolate Palace? Damn! I won't be able to break open this seal. If it is broken by force, it will immediately arouse the attention of the person who made the seal.”

After realising this fact, he became even more cautious. In the face of such a seal, he wouldn't dare act with the slightest bit of carelessness. More importantly, it was an Immortal's seal, which seriously aroused his suspicion of Desolate Palace hiding an Immortal. If that was the case, he shouldn't make any moves. If he was discovered, it was imaginable what consequences he would face. There was an immeasurable gap between a Great Saint and an Immortal. Even if the person was a powerful Ninth Grade Great Saint, he would die helplessly with a single blow from the Immortal's mouth.

This became an extremely difficult matter. For the first time in his life, he was out of wits. He held his Qi, and with the help of the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda, he integrated himself with the void to

prevent anyone from sensing his presence, however, this was not an effective solution. He came here for the sake of finding the fragment of the Heavenly Saint Sword. He was almost certain that the sword fragment was placed in this miniature dimensional area, he could sense it clearly.

The most difficult question right now was how would he be able to break open the seal? Even if he could break open the seal, it would still be incomparably difficult, or perhaps impossible to enter the dimensional area silently, without alarming the hidden expert of Desolate Palace.

“Am I going to give up just like this?”

Jiang Chen frowned. Given the present situation, for the sake of safety, it better if he left immediately, but he felt extremely reluctant to do so, he was a person who would not retreat because of a single obstacle.

“By the way, the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda is a Supreme Divine Item that is even higher than the Immortals. Maybe I can use it to enter this dimensional area. The interior of the pagoda is also a spatial zone, and has subtle control over the spatial force.”

He thought about the pagoda and wanted to give it a try. If it was possible, everything would turn out fine. If it was the opposite, he would run away immediately and absolutely wouldn't stay for a second or two.

Carefully, he controlled the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda, it slowly

moved towards the seal.

Swoosh!

The scene astonished him. As he circulated the spatial energy of the pagoda, it turned into a small particle of dust and went through the crevice of the seal.

Before Jiang Chen could react, he went into the secret chamber.

What he saw ahead shocked him. He was looking at Ancestor Greenlotus, Ancestor Greenlotus was also staring at him. They were gazing at each other with the same expression, while the tremble of the sword fragment intensified.

“Greenlotus!”

Jiang Chen regained his senses and exclaimed. There was no doubt about it. Although the aging old monk looked very different from the Buddha during his prime years, his Qi didn't change a bit, especially the Qi of the great monk. If he wasn't Ancestor Greenlotus, who would he be? Jiang Chen recognized him in just a glance.

“Y-you are.....”

Ancestor Greenlotus was dumbfounded. The broken sword had already left his grip and flew to Jiang Chen's side. Jiang Chen grabbed the sword fragment and strode towards Ancestor

Greenlotus, his face distorted, returning to his original appearance.

Although Jiang Chen already changed his appearance, Ancestor Greenlotus still couldn't recognize him. However, the change of a person's appearance wouldn't affect the person's Qi and eyes. Only the person who was most familiar with Jiang Chen could remember his aura and eyes. Ancestor Greenlotus saw the shadow of the Greatest Saint from his youth. More importantly, the broken sword could already explain everything.

“Make a guess of who I am.”

Jiang Chen dangled the broken sword in front of Ancestor Greenlotus. He was now feeling great. It seemed that his prediction was right. Ancestor Greenlotus was really imprisoned by Desolate Palace. He would naturally feel extremely delighted to see his old friend once again after a hundred years.

“No, it's impossible. This isn't possible.”

Ancestor Greenlotus was shaking his head continuously. Even with his composure, he absolutely couldn't believe that this was true. That year, he saw Jiang Chen fall in the Saint Cliff, but what was the explanation for this current scene?

“Nothing is impossible in this world. I, Jiang Chen, have a tremendous amount of luck. I was able to reincarnate into a person who was also called Jiang Chen. Old friend, we meet again, at last.”

Jiang Chen flopped down opposite Ancestor Greenlotus, and said with mockery.

Jiang Chen already expected that Ancestor Greenlotus would be shocked. It would be abnormal if his old friend wasn't surprised to see him again.

Ancestor Greenlotus's eyes went wide, words weren't coming out of his mouth, but he was certain that this young man in front of him had the same temperament as the Jiang Chen he was familiar with.

Using divine sense, he told Ancestor Greenlotus about his own situation speedily.

Chapter 971 - The World-Shaking Huge Secret

Hearing Jiang Chen recounting all the past events couldn't calm the turbulent emotions inside Ancestor Greenlotus. He felt extremely excited after he regained his senses and saw his old friend who died a hundred years ago being reincarnated with a new identity. He would never believe such a miracle if he didn't saw it with his eyes.

Ancestor Greenlotus' consciousness began to accept Jiang Chen as the old Jiang Chen not because of the reaction of the broken Heavenly Saint Sword, but because of Jiang Chen's demeanour and expression. In fact, the Buddha teachings were very particular about past and present life. Events like reincarnation were recorded in and recognized by Buddha monks.

“My dear friend, you truly are heaven defying. You survived a great catastrophe. Now, you looked as lively as before. I have been detained here for a hundred years but I have no more regrets now that I saw you again.”

Ancestor Greenlotus showed a rare smile in his face. It was a very difficult to see this old monk smile like this.

“I have been to Greenlotus Mountain.” Jiang Chen said.

Listening to the words ‘Greenlotus Mountain’, Ancestor Greenlotus' eyes couldn't help but sparkle. Hastily, he asked, “How's Greenlotus Mountain now? What about my disciple?”

“Don’t worry. Great Master Ran Feng is doing fine. He is now a Great Saint. Great Master Ran Feng has an outstanding apprentice who has been through many life and death challenges with me. Last time I went to Western Domain and Great Master Ran Feng told me about you. My assumption at that time was that you must be imprisoned in Saint Origin Palace.” Jiang Chen said.

“That little guy Ran Feng has also recruited an apprentice. Old friend, quickly tell me about the things that happened outside, and how did you enter Saint Origin Palace? I see that you are only at the Second Grade Great Saint. It has to be a miracle for you to find me here.”

Ancestor Greenlotus rarely spoke in this past 100 years. Now that he had reunited with his old friend, he became somewhat talkative.

“That year, when I fell in the Saint Cliff, I was lucky that my soul didn’t die and was reincarnated in a remote area in the Eastern Continent. It was a long and arduous path before I managed to have this cultivation base...”

Knowing how desperate Ancestor Greenlotus was feeling right now, Jiang Chen told him all the things that had happened over the years, particularly the topics concerning Great Master Ran Feng and Tyrant. It was a kind of enjoyment for Jiang Chen to talk about these things. He had been keeping the secrets he knew about this world and wasn’t able to share it with anyone until today. He was afraid that only this old monk could allow him to talk so openly and without restrictions.

After hearing Jiang Chen's story, Ancestor Greenlotus couldn't help but laugh. "Haha! Jiang Chen...You haven't changed, you are still the old Jiang Chen I knew, but you are more heaven defying than your previous self. In your past life, you stirred the entire Pure Land up all by yourself. Now, you are doing the same thing in Saint Origin Palace. I suppose that Saint Origin Palace won't have its peace soon. Not bad. You are still the 'you' I knew."

"By the way, you mentioned that you could sense the existence the fragment of the Heavenly Saint Sword and found this place. It isn't unusual for you to discover such a place given your ability, but how did you break open the seal outside? This seal is set by an Immortal. You won't be able to break it even if you were at your peak in your past life. Furthermore, I didn't even sense you when you entered, I couldn't feel a single ripple and the seal was still intact, it was as if you went through the seal without breaking it. What kind of technique did you use?" Ancestor Greenlotus asked with curiosity.

One should know that he could even sense the presence of the Immortals of Desolate Palace, but he felt nothing when Jiang Chen suddenly appeared into the secret chamber out of nowhere. Such means really amazed and astonished him.

"I have a secret technique that could allow me to travel through space stealthily. This seal couldn't stop me at all. Today, I was able to find you thanks to the Heavenly Saint Sword," said Jiang Chen while sighing.

It was his good luck that he was able to find Ancestor Greenlotus

so smoothly. If it wasn't for the fragment of the Heavenly Saint Sword, if it wasn't because Ancestor Greenlotus had taken the fragment out, there was no way that he could find Ancestor Greenlotus, even if he searched every corner of Desolate Palace.

“You said that this seal is created by an Immortal. Could it be that the Immortal is hiding somewhere in Desolate Palace now? If you are under close surveillance, wouldn't they sense me as well the moment I appeared?” asked Jiang Chen with a frown.

“It doesn't matter. The Desolate Palace's men had just left. They will only show up once a year. No one will pay attention to this secret chamber in normal days because I can't run away. However, they wouldn't have expected for you to be here. If those old guys know that the Greatest Saint is still alive, I wonder what kind of response they will have.”

Ancestor Greenlotus said with a smile, totally not worried that his old friend would be discovered by someone.

“What the heck is going on here? Why did Desolate Palace want to hold you captive here?” asked Jiang Chen.

This was the question that he was concerned the most. Back then, Ancestor Greenlotus was a peerless Buddha and had no grudge with Desolate Palace, but why did they attacked Ancestor Greenlotus during his tribulation. What kind of conflict did they have between them?

“Desolate Palace has a savage heart of a wolf. They wanted to rule

the entire Saint Origin World, and I have coincidentally become the most important tool in their hands.”

Ancestor Greenlotus’s eyes twinkled with two rays of cold light, thinking of his past encounters. It was impossible for him not to resent them.

“How?” asked Jiang Chen, feeling that there must be some kind of a secret.

“That year, after you fell in the Saint Cliff, I was there and found this broken sword. So, I kept it as a memorial. This broken sword has really been of really great help today. If it wasn’t for this broken sword, I’m afraid that I’ll never see you again.”

Ancestor Greenlotus seemed to be immersed in his past memories. “Later, I went to the Immortal Possessive Mountain, I found an Immortal Mark. It was incomparably mystical. It is still inside my body even until now, but I can’t show it to you. The experts of Desolate Palace have been trying to get this from me, which was why they put me here. If I took out this Immortal Mark now, it is very likely that they will sense it. This Immortal Mark has a great function. That is to fool the Heaven. Any Immortal who possessed this mark won’t be pulled by the the Immortal World, and could remain in Saint Origin World.”

“Therefore, Desolate Palace captured you, to use the Immortal Mark you obtained to deceive the Heaven. That is to say, there are really Immortals that exist here?”

Jiang Chen was clever enough to guess the crucial factor in those events.

“Exactly. I have no idea how the experts of Desolate Palace knew that I possessed the Immortal Mark. On the day of my tribulation, I have already predicted that there would be great changes. Subsequently, I was secretly framed by them, causing me to fail my tribulation. Many people thought that I was dead. The fact told otherwise. At that time, I was captured and imprisoned here. They used the Qi of the Immortal Mark to deceive the Heaven. As such, over the past 100 years, none of the Immortals of Desolate Palace ascended to the Immortal World. All of them are hidden here,” said Ancestor Greenlotus.

“What?”

Jiang Chen almost exclaimed. He had already expected that Desolate Palace had been hiding some big secrets, but he didn't imagine that it would be this shocking. In 100 years, none of the Immortals of Desolate Palace rose to the Immortal World while the Immortals of the other seven palaces did. He wondered how strong Desolate Palace had become.

“The ancestors of Desolate Palace have a big very plan. They wanted to see the entire Saint Origin World become one before ascending to the Immortal World. All these years, they wanted to get the Immortal Mark from my hands, but I refused. They had no other choice but to hold me captive here. As long as I am here, the effect of blinding the Heavens will still be here,” said Ancestor Greenlotus.

“You did the right thing by not handing out the Immortal Mark. If you did, given Desolate Palace’s means, they will kill you immediately. The Immortal Mark is your life-saving amulet now. But I don’t understand why didn’t you straightaway refine the Immortal Mark? I believe that you can get lots of benefits out of it,” said Jiang Chen with doubts.

“I tried but it didn’t work. There is a great luck that existed indistinctly inside the Immortal Mark. Perhaps, it was probably because my luck isn’t enough to earn the recognition of the Immortal Mark. Therefore, I couldn’t refine it.”

Ancestor Greenlotus shook his head.

“I see, but even if the Immortals of Desolate Palace are here, they won’t be able to fight in Saint Origin World. The power of an Immortal is too strong, it will probably cause the entire world to collapse. In that case, what’s the point of them staying here?” asked Jiang Chen, puzzled.

“There is a great significance if they stayed. You should know about the present situation in Saint Origin Palace after arriving here. After years of development, Desolate Palace had become stronger than before. Its overall strength is enough to suppress any one of the other seven palaces. In the process, the Immortals of Desolate Palace have made an indelible contribution. They contributed their resources to Desolate Palace. One could already imagine how powerful those resources are. As far as I know, the Immortals would pick excellent geniuses and train them personally, infusing Immortal Qi to them all year round. These geniuses have been hidden by Desolate Palace. They were the

treated like divine beings, they are the real secret weapon of Desolate Palace. Right now, I'm afraid that their strength have become so strong to such an extent. One day, when they are all released, it will also be the day when Desolate Palace dominates the whole world," said Ancestor Greenlotus.

Hearing this gave Jiang Chen an unsettling feeling. It seemed like Desolate Palace's plot was really too much.

"Sure enough, Desolate Palace has been plotting against all of us. Their Immortals didn't intend to directly help Desolate Palace rule the entire Saint Origin World. Instead, they greatly strengthened the army of Desolate Palace, so that Desolate Palace can utilize these forces to dominate the world. For a major clan to rise, it has to have a firm foundation, it has to build an unshakable foundation by producing more and more elites. This is the best way to prepare for either a war or domination. It seems like Saint Origin World really isn't far from chaos."

Jiang Chen's eyes sparkled.

"That's right. I initially thought that Desolate Palace would certainly become the ruler of the world, and would watch the other seven major palaces disappear, but I see a turn for the better after seeing your presence. Only you, my old friend, can turn the present situation around."

Ancestor Greenlotus looked over at Jiang Chen with blazing eyes, like he was a hero.

Chapter 972 - Third Grade Great Saint

Jiang Chen took a deep breath, feeling a great pressure all of a sudden, and a strong sense of urgency. He didn't expect Desolate Palace to have such a secret and how strong they had become. With so many Immortals staying in Desolate Palace over these past hundred years, no one knew how many geniuses had been secretly trained by them.

Furthermore, these elite geniuses were hidden, even before the very eyes of the other seven major palaces. Considering the innate talent of those geniuses plus the nurturing of the Immortals that provided them with Immortal Qi day after day, year after year, it was hard to imagine how powerful they had grown.

If these killing machines were released by Desolate Palace, it would even be harder to imagine how much harm and damage it would bring to the other seven palaces. This was how strong Desolate Palace's desire for hegemony. This was the biggest secret of Desolate Palace.

However, a stream of hot blood suddenly flowed in his veins and fighting spirit rushed out of his body. The stronger the enemy, the more challenging the situation, and the more excited he would become. The clash with Desolate Palace was destined to be a hot-blooded battle. He couldn't wait to meet those secret weapons of Desolate Palace.

“My old friend, I feel you. The present ‘you’ is even more terrifying than the past ‘you’, but fighting Desolate Palace with your current strength is still far from enough. If you want to

survive this catastrophe, you must grow as quickly as possible. We don't have much time left before the real event occurs. Plus, the Saint Origin World of today is not the same as before. Facing this alone isn't going to be enough, you aren't facing Great Saints anymore, but the terrifying Immortals," said Ancestor Greenlotus grimly.

"I know. In my eyes, every enemy is the same. The might and scariness of the enemy will not be an obstacle to my progress, they will be my fuel instead. To me, the present Saint Origin World doesn't differ much from the Saint Origin World 100 years ago. I was able to reign over this world in my past life, and I can also do it in this life. Even with the Immortals standing in front of me, I won't hesitate to blow them up."

Jiang Chen was full of ambition, emitting the aura of a ruler. Every word he said was filled with so much confidence and power. His simple gesture alone could influence the morale of people around. This was what made him Jiang Chen, the immutable Jiang Chen.

"Haha! Sure enough you are still my old friend, Jiang Chen. The one who can defeat Desolate Palace has finally appeared. I initially wanted to take out the Immortal Mark to see whether you can refine it, but it is not yet the right time for now. If you take away the Immortal Mark, Desolate Palace will certainly find out about it. After that, you and I will both die and the other seven palaces will also be doomed eternally," said Ancestor Greenlotus.

"You are right. It isn't the right time to deal with Desolate Palace now. I have already reaped a great harvest when I found you today,

and learned about their secret plan. Greenlotus, I am going to leave soon. If I stay here any longer, it might arouse the vigilance of the higher ups of Desolate Palace. I'm afraid that you will have to nurse this grievance for a while more. One day, I will personally come here and restore you to your former glory."

Jiang Chen stood up. It was no doubt very depressing that he couldn't save Ancestor Greenlotus out of the chamber. Considering the overall situation, Ancestor Greenlotus had to stay here. Jiang Chen needed time to improve himself. As such, it was vital that he didn't act rashly and alert the enemy.

"Oh, how's the little monk that you mentioned? The one that Ran Feng accepted." Ancestor Greenlotus asked.

The disciple of Ran Feng was also considered his descendant. Naturally, he would be concerned about him.

"That brat has unparalleled gift and a deep connection with the Buddha. He has received tremendous benefits last time. He is currently cultivating in Greenlotus Mountain. I believe that he is now on the verge of breaking through into the Great Saint realm. Great Master Ran Feng has an excellent vision. He has been trying his best to cultivate Tyrant, putting all of his hopes on him, hoping that Tyrant will grow really strong one day, and then find you." Jiang Chen said with a smile.

Thinking about that shameless monk whom he hadn't seen for quite a while now, he suddenly missed his sworn brother. As for Tyrant's talent, he wasn't even boasting. Tyrant did have a strong connection with the Buddha. He would become a supreme

existence like the Buddha in the near future. While cultivating in the Greenlotus Mountain, he should've been making progress very often.

“Well, I still have an Immortal Soul Sarira with me. It was left after I failed my tribulation.”

Ancestor Greenlotus turned his palm. A glittering golden Sarira emerged, surrounded by misty air—the Immortal Qi. This Sarira was more powerful and essentially different from the average Sarira.

“Even though I failed my tribulation that year, I had touched the threshold of the Immortal Path. Half of the Combat Soul in my body has already evolved into Immortal Soul. I had merged the fragmented Immortal Soul together to refine this piece of Sarira. Help me give this Sarira to Tyrant as a token of mine.”

Ancestor Greenlotus handed over the Sarira to Jiang Chen.

Jiang Chen looked stunned, feeling that the Sarira weighed 10,000 kilograms. He knew better than anyone how valuable this Sarira was. A Sarira that contained the Immortal Soul was fundamentally an inheritance. It consisted of the techniques and skills of the half-Immortal expert. Putting the Immortal Soul aside, the powerful and pure Buddha energy in it was incomparable to ordinary Ninth Grade Great Saint's Sarira.

If Tyrant could use this item, he would immediately undergo earth-shaking changes, and his cultivation would improve by leaps

and bounds. He might even surpass Jiang Chen's current level. Such opportunity was truly great and unimaginable. Not even the pie that fell from the sky could be as great as this.

“Greenlotus, you have infused all of your Immortal Qi into this Sarira... But what about you?”

Jiang Chen frowned. His tone was full of worry. To any Buddhist monk, Sarira was the most important item. Besides, Ancestor Greenlotus had put all of his Immortal Qi into this Sarira. Losing the Immortal Qi was just like any ordinary cultivators losing their Combat Soul and becoming a cripple.

“I don't mind it at all. As long as I can get out of this prison, my power will be automatically restored to its pinnacle. Don't judge me based on my look, I am still very far away from death. I have once cultivated the supreme mantra of Buddha Sect—Great Compassion Mantra. A new Combat Soul has already started to form in my body,” said Ancestor Greenlotus with a smile.

“I knew that you aren't weak.”

Jiang Chen felt relieved. He never admired anyone in his past life except for Ancestor Greenlotus. As the most powerful Buddha in Buddha Sect, how could he not have some powerful skills of his own?

“Go now. I hope that you'll get me out of this chamber next time.”

Ancestor Greenlotus waved his hand.

“Take care of yourself.”

Jiang Chen clasped his fists at Ancestor Greenlotus, and then casted the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda and disappeared in a blink. Truly, he looked like a shadow and moved like a phantom, totally untraceable.

Not long after that, he returned to his own place. His face exuded beads of sweat, he seemed a little tired.

“Dammit! This Ancestral Dragon Pagoda is a real vampire. It consumed so much of my energy when I just used it to travel in the spatial zone. I can’t imagine how tremendous the consumption will be when the ninth or tenth floor is condensed.”

Jiang Chen sighed. His foundation was already considered very strong. His Qi Sea was filled with dragon marks and his Yuan Force was as vast as an ocean. He wouldn’t face any shortages of Yuan Force even if he used his most powerful True Dragon Combat Technique.

Presently, only the third floor of the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda had been condensed but it had used half of his Yuan Force. How Appalling!

“But the harvest is great this time. This Heavenly Saint Sword fragment is enough for me to make another advancement. Also, I

found the location of Ancestor Greenlotus and known about Desolate Palace's hidden agenda. Now, the most important thing for me is to increase my cultivation. Once I advanced to the Third Grade Great Saint, I have to find ways to return to the Pure Land and hand over this Sarira to Tyrant," muttered Jiang Chen. Without delaying any longer, he began refining the sword fragment.

To Jiang Chen, it was extremely simple and effortless, as it was part of his natal weapon—Heavenly Saint Sword. In less than ten minutes, he had completely merged it to the Heavenly Saint Sword.

Howl

The Heavenly Saint Sword let out a harsh howl. It became even more powerful after the sixth fragment was fused. As long as the last piece of the fragment was found and fused, the Heavenly Saint Sword would return to its peak state and become the Saint Weapon of the Greatest Saint.

Under the stimulation of the fusion, his cultivation improved once again. Another 2, 000 dragon marks were formed, making a total of 85, 000 in his body and it had fully stabilized his foundation.

Bursts of powerful force spilled out of his body, he could feel the power inside. He couldn't help but reveal a trace of a smile. The feeling of power could always make any cultivator feel obsessed.

With his current ability, he could kill a Seventh Grade Great Saint if he transformed. He could eliminate those powerful Sixth Grade Great Saint geniuses even without his half-dragon form, let alone killing those Fifth Grade Great Saints.

It now seemed that only Jiang Chen had such a heaven defying strength across the entire Saint Origin World.

Subsequently, he didn't immediately return to Pure Land as he had just arrived in Saint Origin Palace. How could he find an excuse in going back to the Pure Land? Besides, he was needed temporarily in Gu Palace. As the internal conflict in Gu Palace had already been resolved, it was necessary for him to socialize more with the geniuses of Gu and Demon Palace.

Therefore, he would head to the Refining Tower of Gu Palace for cultivation. Sometimes, he would pay a visit to Demon Palace and Big Yellow. About the secret of Desolate Palace and the situation of Ancestor Greenlotus, he kept his silence because it wasn't the right time for their showdown yet.

Chapter 973 - The Ling Chi Execution*

A month later, there was basically no more internal conflict in Gu Palace. Moreover, Jiang Chen's rapid progress greatly stimulated Gu Palace's geniuses' enthusiasm in cultivation. Adding the fact that Gu Firmament had taken control over the Law Enforcement Palace, Gu Palace was able to get enormous amount of cultivation resources, allowing everyone in the palace to have big progress in their cultivation.

Jiang Chen felt quite satisfied with this circumstance. He was also relieved now that Gu Palace and Demon Palace had established a good relationship. It was just like what Gu Firmament said earlier, both Gu Palace and Demon Palace were currently in charge of the Law Enforcement Palace. Heavenly Peng King was given the seat of vice palace master.

Jiang Chen's month long effort wasn't in vain. He was ready to return to Pure Land tomorrow and tell Great Master Ran Feng about the news of Ancestor Greenlotus as he was worried about his master for a century. Great Master Ran Feng would certainly be very happy to hear about Ancestor Greenlotus' news.

Just as Jiang Chen was about to leave, Gu Firmament called to see him.

"I wonder why the palace master is calling me for."

Without any delay, he went straight to where Gu Firmament lived with extreme speed and arrived in just a few blinks.

“Is there anything that the palace master calls me for?” Jiang Chen asked.

The current Gu Firmament didn't look pleasant as if something big had happened. Seeing Jiang Chen's arrival, he quickly said, “Jiang Chen, there is something that I have to tell you. Gu Xuantian just sent me a message saying that something has happened in the Pure Land.”

“What happened?”

Jiang Chen had a premonition as it was a personal message from Gu Xuantian. The matter must be related to him, otherwise he wouldn't be summoned by Gu Firmament.

“Do you have a brother called Han Yan?” Gu Firmament asked.

“What happened to Ah Yan?”

Jiang Chen's facial expression changed. His intelligence allowed him to guess that it had something to do with his brother, whom he had known back in Eastern Continent. Han Yan was his first sworn brother since his rebirth.

“This Han Yan is also a great genius but he had acted recklessly. He has a powerful and extremely rare bloodline—The Ancient Divine Devil Bloodline. I heard that he entered the ancient battlefield with you, but he didn't come out until a few days ago.

He was already a Fourth Grade Great Saint when he emerged. When he heard that your death was caused by the six major families, he got infuriated. For several days in a row, he killed plenty of the disciples and geniuses of the six major families and some Fifth Grade Great Saints. Later, he was taken down by the experts of the six major families and will be executed in public.”

Gu Firmament told Jiang Chen about the news of the Pure Land, word by word.

“What?!”

Jiang Chen’s eyes shone with a cold light. A sudden burst of anger erupted out of his body. No one could understand the relationship between him and Han Yan. It was the brotherhood of sworn brothers. Han Yan must have fully refined the Ancient Devil, allowing his cultivation to rapidly increase. Naturally, when Han Yan heard that his own sworn brother was killed, he would be enraged. If he was replaced by Jiang Chen, he would also immediately rush over to the six major families to avenge his brother’s death.

Considering Han Yan’s terrifying Fourth Grade Great Saint cultivation, killing Fifth Grade Great Saints wouldn’t be a matter. Even if he confronted a Sixth Grade Great Saint, he would have no problem fleeing, but if he was surrounded by the Sixth Grade Great Saint experts of the six major families, he would only face one outcome.

Part of the blame should be put on Jiang Chen for keeping the news very concealed. Han Yan didn’t have a clue that Jiang Chen

was still alive, which caused him to fall into the hands of the six great families. Han Yan's fate would surely not be good.

Gu Family and Demon Race must have tried hard to help Han Yan, but the situation was just like last time when the six major families was determined to kill Jiang Chen. Even if these two families combine, they would still be powerless and wouldn't stand a chance against the other six families.

Therefore, Gu Xuantian quickly sent the news over, because he knew the importance of Han Yan to Jiang Chen. If Han Yan died because of this and Jiang Chen wasn't informed, the consequences would be unbearable even to Gu Xuantian.

"At noon today, the six major families will bring Han Yan out of Desolate City and execute him. In order to defend the prestige of the six major families, they would want to let everyone under the Heavens know that opposing them will only bring bad fortune. I have already calculated the time, if you rush back now, perhaps you might arrive in time," said Gu Firmament.

"Alright, those six families, it's time to settle our score once and for all. I plead Place Master to open the passageway for me immediately. I have to go back this instant."

The killing intent in his body could no longer be concealed. What he hated the most was when others try to hurt his families and friends. They were his sore spot. No one was allowed to touch them. He secretly swore that if anything were to happen to Han Yan, he would have all the people of the six major families buried with his sworn brother.

“Alright. It’s inconvenient for Saint Origin Palace to resolve your scores in the Pure Land. This is your matter now. You have to resolve it yourself. Given your current strength, there is no one in the Pure Land that can stop you. Go back and catch Desolate Family off guard, giving them a heavy blow to disrupt their plans.” Gu Firmament said.

He knew all the things that Jiang Chen did. Now that the six major families was targeting Jiang Chen’s sworn brother, Jiang Chen was seriously angered without a doubt. Jiang Chen was a wild dragon. The land would be overturned and blood would flow like a river if this dragon turned frenzied.

The present Jiang Chen was totally different from the Jiang Chen who arrived in Saint Origin Palace a month ago. It was conceivable what kind of shock Jiang Chen would bring the moment he appeared again in the Pure Land. Saint Origin World was destined to be in chaos sooner or later; the prologue of the chaos would certainly start in the Pure Land.

“I don’t care about their plans and whatever chaos that may happen. Anyone who touches my brother will die.”

Jiang Chen’s tone was incomparably cold. In his heart, personal relationship was far greater than any power in the world.

Gu Firmament nodded. He liked Jiang Chen’s ferociousness very much. He knew that Han Yan was in a life-threatening situation, so without wasting any time, he waved and produced a passageway

for Jiang Chen.

“This passageway will lead you to Gu Palace. With your ability, you should be able to reach there in half an hour’s time. I hope that you will arrive there on time.” Gu Firmament said.

Without saying a word, Jiang Chen flashed and vanished into the passageway.

“Pure Land is going to be manic this time.”

Gu Firmament chuckled. With Jiang Chen’s current strength, he could almost imagine the fate of those six major families. Everyone knew that the strongest cultivators in the Pure Land were Sixth Grade Great Saints. All the Seventh Grade Great Saint and above cultivators were in Saint Origin Palace. With Jiang Chen’s current cultivation, killing Sixth Grade Great Saint experts would be effortless. Even if there were more Sixth Grade Great Saint experts, it wouldn’t be enough for him to kill.

Pure Land. Since Jiang Chen was killed by the six major families, it had never been so lively. Almost all the experts of the eight major families had gathered outside Desolate City.

Desolate City was the territory of Desolate Family. Currently, on a vast open space outside the city, was a white-haired youth in iron chain.

This white-haired youth was no stranger. He was Han Yan. He

was bounded by a stout iron chain which glowed faintly. This was no ordinary iron chain. This chain was carved with a seal by a powerful expert.

Outside the iron chain was a void that was also sealed, giving Han Yan no chance of escaping. Moreover, he was guarded by four Sixth Grade Great Saints. They had all witnessed Han Yan's ferocity, not even a Fifth Grade Great Saint was his opponent. Thus, not even they, dared to be relaxed in front of this monster.

Besides the four Sixth Grade Great Saints, there were also people from the eight major families standing around. It was like a sea of people. The patriarchs of the eight major families had all arrived. In fact, executing Han Yan didn't require the presence of so many overlords, especially the overlords of Gu Family and Demon Race. The six major families knew Han Yan was close to Jiang Chen. They wanted to show the other two major families that Han Yan would have no chance of turning over his fate.

A horrifying figure emerged after Jiang Chen's death, causing another great loss to the six major families. Such an outstanding genius must be eliminated as soon as possible to prevent any future threat.

Han Yan's face did not show any signs of fear because until now, he still didn't know that Jiang Chen was still alive. Jiang Chen's death had aroused his devil nature, slaughtering everything he saw. To him, his life no longer mattered. It was his greatest regret that he wasn't able to annihilate the six major families, to avenge Jiang Chen's death.

“Uncle, what shall we do? It’s almost noon.”

Within the crowd of Gu Family, Wu Ningzhu was standing beside Gu Xuantian. Her face was full of worries. She and Han Yan go way back. She knew pretty well how deep the brotherhood between Han Yan and Jiang Chen. She could hardly imagine that if Han Yan died today, how mad Jiang Chen would become when he returned.

“I have already sent a message to Saint Origin Palace. I believe that Jiang Chen has already been informed of the news here.”

Gu Xuantian’s facial expression also turned ugly. He looked at Desolate Yuntian and shouted, “Desolate Yuntian, are you six families ignoring your faces when so many of you bully a junior?”

“Humph! You Gu Family and Demon Race have helped Jiang Chen before. Now you want to come and aid this devil? This is a clear opposition against us. This devil has killed so many of our people. He has committed the most heinous crime. The execution today is to let everyone in the world know that going against Desolate Family will bring no good outcome. Jiang Chen had tasted it and so will this devil. There is only one punishment to his crime – death. And it will not be a pleasant death.”

Desolate Yuntian said with anger. Thinking about the huge losses that they have suffered because of this devil made him grit his teeth and had the urge to tear Han Yan apart. Today, he would slice Han Yan’s flesh one by one in front of the public.

*Ling Chi Execution or Lingchi is a form of torture, a form of

execution that remove portions of the body over an extended period of time, eventually resulting in death.

Chapter 974 - The Return to Power

“You six major families are putting your face to an appalling degree of shame. It was a shame when you all killed Jiang Chen jointly. Today, you are all sentencing a junior to death in public? You all certainly have thick skins!” yelled Lang Xingtian.

They weren't familiar with Han Yan and this was the first time that they saw him in person. Nevertheless, what Han Yan did really made them admire him. It was also very emotional when Han Yan was willing to sacrifice his own life just to avenge his sworn brother, making the entire world his enemy in the process. How many people in this world could actually do this? Moreover, Han Yan had the powerful Ancient Divine Devil Bloodline, which was stronger than any average physique. He was a true genius with excellent talent. The moment his bloodline was thoroughly awaken, he would become an unparalleled great devil with unfathomable strength.

This was something that the six major families noticed. Although he was merely a Fourth Grade Great Saint, no Fifth Grade Great Saint could ever match him. He could even fight ordinary Sixth Grade Great Saints. Even if he lost the fight, it wouldn't be difficult for him to flee, but when all of the Sixth Grade Great Saint experts of the six major families encircled him, running away was no longer an option, even if he had an unparalleled ability and was given an extra pair of wings. After all, he didn't possess the Spatial Shift and the Flaming Wings of Jiang Chen.

“Lang Xingtian, go f*ck yourself. Won't you feel your back aching while standing here talking? If you have lost as much elders and geniuses as we did, I'm afraid that you won't be standing here

speaking sarcastically.” Narang Changtian scolded Lang Xingtian.

“Gu Xuantian, Lang Xingtian, is there something wrong with you two? That Jiang Chen is already dead. What’s the point of trying to protect his people? Even if you put your heart into it, Jiang Chen won’t come back and reward you.”

“Exactly. There is no doubt that Jiang Chen is outstandingly gifted, even this little devil king in front of us is also a rare genius. However, a devil king is just a king, everybody has the right to punish them. These two devil kings went against us, and there is only one ending for them, death! The dignity of us, six major families, had been repeatedly challenged. If he isn’t executed today, how are we going to defend our dignity?”

Danyang Tian and Shi Haotian added.

What they said wasn’t unreasonable. Anyone who suffered such enormous losses would surely get infuriated.

Ever since the clash between Jiang Chen and them in Void Triangular Domain, the six major families hadn’t been at peace. Back in the ancient battlefield, Jiang Chen had brought them even greater losses. They hadn’t expected that another wild devil would appear after just a month of Jiang Chen’s death. This incident had brought chaos to the six major families. So, how could they not be angry about it?

“Don’t talk nonsense to them. Noon is almost here. At that time, we will slice off the flesh of this wicked devil. With our presence

here, it would be impossible for the Gu Family and Demon Race to save him.”

Desolate Yuntian’s face turned dark and ruthless when he decided the fate of Han Yan. The reason they were all here today was to prevent the Gu Family and Demon Race from interrupting the execution. In other words, they were here to repress any opposition.

“Uncle, it’s almost noon. If Little Chen doesn’t come, Ah Yan will be in real danger.”

Wu Ningzhu felt extremely anxious and could no longer wait. If something were to happen to Han Yan, it would deal a great blow to Jiang Chen.

“Brother Gu, even if Jiang Chen arrives in time, I’m afraid that not only will he not be able to save Han Yan given his cultivation, but also send himself into the tiger’s mouth,” said Lang Xingtian worriedly.

“Rest assured, Brother Lang. Gu Palace has replied to my message, saying that Jiang Chen isn’t the same as the previous Jiang Chen. No one in the Pure Land will be his opponent now.” Gu Xuantian said. This message was personally sent by Gu Firmament. There was no doubt about it.

“Jiang Chen is really terrifying. It’s only been more than a month since he went to Saint Origin Palace. To a Great Saint, a month’s time isn’t really sufficient, it is virtually impossible to

make any great progress within a month. I'm afraid that only those monstrous talents like Jiang Chen is able to do this." Lang Xingtian marveled.

He had always looked up to Jiang Chen, but after hearing this news, he knew that he had underestimated Jiang Chen once again.

"Little Chen, come back quick!"

Wu Ningzhu was about to lose her patience, sensing that the hour was slowly approaching. The six major families would never let go of Han Yan. Given the present situation, even if the Gu Family and Demon Race interfered, they wouldn't be able to save Han Yan.

"There is no need to worry, Ning Er. If he really comes late, uncle will stall them to buy him some time."

Two rays of brilliant light flashed out of Gu Xuantian's eyes. Today, whether he could save Han Yan or not, he had to do his best. There was a vast difference between waiting and acting regardless of the success. He wouldn't feel guilty in front of Jiang Chen if Han Yan really died at the end, because he had done what he could. If he only watched Han Yan being tortured to death without doing anything, Jiang Chen would never forgive them and they would feel guilty for the rest of their lives.

"En."

Wu Ningzhu nodded. It was useless for her to feel anxious now, also Gu Xuantian promised to buy Jiang Chen some time, which eased her worried heart. In any case, Jiang Chen had to come and deal with this situation.

Minutes and seconds passed. The crowd had been very silent and the atmosphere was stifling. Han Yan who was bound by chain didn't have the slightest fear on his face.

“Patriarch, the time is up.” Someone said.

“En, let the Ling Chi Execution begin.” Desolate Yuntiang said emotionlessly.

Standing beside Han Yan was a Sixth Grade Great Saint with a face full of ruthlessness. A long sword appeared in his hands. Then, this extremely sharp sword slowly moved towards Han Yan.

“Brat, you have to pay for what you did. What do you think, should I cut your flesh into a thousand or ten thousand slices?” The Sixth Grade Great Saint asked with a sneer.

“I'm afraid even ten thousand cuts won't kill me. I suggest you to kill me directly, otherwise, you will be tired to death instead of killing me. That will certainly cause you to lose your face.”

Han Yan grinned at the Sixth Grade Great Saint. It seemed like to him, Ling Chi wasn't torturous enough of an execution but something that would only tickle his skin.

“Sure enough, the dead duck always has a hard mouth even when it is on the verge of death. You can rest assured that I won’t let you die so easily. I will slowly cut you with my sword, cutting all of your flesh into pieces, and then your soul, letting you die in endless pain and suffering.”

The Sixth Grade Great Saint gritted his teeth. He resented Han Yan so much he wanted to stab him to death immediately. His grandchild that he was so proud of was killed by this devil.

“Enough of the nonsense old man. Come on and kill me now. Eighteen years later, I will be a good man again.”

Han Yan sneered at the old man. It was men’s nature to never surrender to their enemies.

“I hope you won’t shout later.”

The Sixth Grade Great Saint said while gritting his teeth. He immediately raised his sword. A harsh buzzing sound rang and a sword light spilled out of the body of the sword as it cut at Han Yan’s direction.

Hong Long.....

At this instant, a rumble rang all of a sudden in the void. Everyone looked over and saw a figure walking out of the void and reached the sky above them in just a blink. The incomer looked

around 20 years old. He was dressed in snowy white clothes, his black hair danced along with the breeze, his eyes were as brilliant as the stars and as bottomless as the abyss. He stood there like a large mountain, giving everyone an invisible wave of pressure.

When everyone saw the youth's appearance, they couldn't help but exclaim. The crowd immediately burst into commotion, as if a bomb had been set off all of a sudden.

“Jiang Chen? What's going on? Wasn't he dead? Why did he show up again?”

“No, this is impossible. That day, we certainly destroyed him with our joint attack. How can he still be alive? How could this happen?”

“Are you kidding me? The dead man has come back to life? How did this guy get away? He was surrounded and trapped by us that day. He didn't even have the chance to escape.”

.....

The experts of the six major families were shocked, especially those who ganged up on Jiang Chen that day. Seeing Jiang Chen again was like seeing a ghost. They couldn't accept this reality.

“Oh my god. Jiang Chen wasn't dead. We all thought that he was dead. Does this guy have an extraordinary luck?”

“This is a miracle, to be able to survive under that attack and make everyone believe that he was dead. Did you all notice that after more than a month of disappearance, he became stronger, a lot stronger than the time at the ancient battlefield?”

“Haha, Jiang Chen is still alive. The six major families’ effort was in vain.”

.....

The people of Gu Family and Demon Palace cheered when they saw Jiang Chen again, especially those people who received the grace of Jiang Chen and those who were saved by him. They had been brooding and feeling sad ever since Jiang Chen’s death. They didn’t expect to see that Jiang Chen was still intact and was as good as before, naturally, this turned their sadness to happiness.

Wu Ningzhu smiled. She knew that Han Yan was safe the moment Jiang Chen appeared, no one would be able to kill Han Yan in front of Jiang Chen.

“Little Chen, you son of a b*tch isn’t dead yet!”

Seeing Jiang Chen’s abrupt arrival, Han Yan felt neither crying nor laughing. After he came out of the ancient battlefield, his heart was wrung to the very core when he heard about Jiang Chen’s tragic death. He had spent these days in darkness and turned into a killing devil. Now that Jiang Chen had appeared before him, all the darkness and gloom were instantly swept away.

“You fool. Don’t you know what I’m capable of? Can they really kill me?”

Jiang Chen scolded Han Yan. Although he appeared to be scolding him, everyone could feel the brotherhood that they had within their conversation.

Immediately, Jiang Chen turned his gaze to the elder who was holding the sword and said coldly, “If you dare touch him, I’ll make sure you die along with your entire family.”

Chapter 975 - Sky Integration Grand Formation

What a hubris was it to say that he would eradicate an entire family? But when this came out of Jiang Chen's mouth, it wasn't arrogance but dominance. No one would doubt his words because he was telling the truth. If those elders really touched Han Yan, Jiang Chen would have had no choice but to erase all of them in this world.

This was neither a joke, nor a clamour. This was a gentle reminder of a fact.

“Jiang Chen, I didn't think that you are still alive. You do have great luck, but it's foolish of you show up here instead of hiding yourself. It seems like there is another advantage of Han Yan's execution—drawing you out. In that case, the two of you will die together. Everybody, listen up. We will not let Jiang Chen run away this time by any means necessary.”

Desolate Yuntiang's Qi fluctuated and commanded the Great Saints of the other five major families. All the experts unleashed their Qi and killing intent, meanwhile, 30 powerful experts rushed out of Desolate City. All of them were Sixth Grade Great Saints. These were the true experts of the six great families that wouldn't appear in normal times, except today.

Such a scene was absolutely the grandest in the history of the Pure Land. Jiang Chen's reappearance had frightened the six major families. They could ignore Han Yan's existence but they certainly couldn't ignore Jiang Chen's. Last time, they had allowed him to

escape. As such, the existence of this man was truly a threat to them.

Nevertheless, they were lucky that today's event had drawn Jiang Chen out. Otherwise, they would still be kept in the dark. If Jiang Chen really grew powerful one day, it would be the end of their days.

Unfortunately for them, Jiang Chen had already reached that powerful extent and today would be their end.

“Good, all of them have come out today. In that case, we will settle all of our scores today.”

Jiang Chen's eyes swept around the place, and saw that almost all of the higher ups of the six major families were here. This was indeed better than what he had expected. They had touched his sore spot when they injured Han Yan so badly and wanted to put him to death using the Ling Chi execution. This had really infuriated him and when the wild dragon got furious, thousands of miles of land was doomed to be covered with dead bodies.

The sudden appearance of the experts changed the facial expression of Gu Family and Demon Race. They couldn't help but curse.

“Son of a b*tch! It turns out that they have made the preparation secretly. These experts are specially arranged for us. If we attacked just now, the consequences will be unimaginable.”

Lang Xingtian swore.

“That’s right. It seems like they are well prepared for this. Judging by their formation, they are prepared to eradicate our families. Haha! Too bad, Jiang Chen alone is enough to make them suffer.”

Gu Xuantian revealed a sneer on his face. Given his wisdom, he was able to figure out the reason these Sixth Grade Great Saint experts from the six major families were present.

The truth was that the execution of Han Yan wouldn’t require any of their efforts, but in order to prevent Gu Family and Demon Race from interfering, they had brought their forces along. Fortunately, Jiang Chen arrived in time, otherwise, if Gu Xuantian attacked to buy Jiang Chen some time, he would’ve fallen into their trap and would give them an excuse to heavily attack the Gu Family and Demon Race.

With dozens of Great Saints joining together, the void was completely sealed, creating a thousand miles wide prison cell. This time, they would never give Jiang Chen any chance of escaping.

“Kill Han Yan first,” ordered Desolate Yuntian.

His hatred for Jiang Chen was everlasting. There was nothing much to discuss. It was either he died or Jiang Chen died.

“Roger.”

A Sixth Grade Great Saint elder holding the long sword slashed at Han Yan's head like lightning.

“Before killing someone in my presence, reflect on your own capability first. Die!”

Jiang Chen moved like a spectre, and appeared above the elder in a blink. A giant dragon claw materialized and grabbed the elder.

“What?!” The elder exclaimed. He was a majestic Sixth Grade Great Saint expert, but he felt like a mountain was pressing against him as he was grabbed by Jiang Chen. Totally powerless.

“You want to kill him? Then, I will kill you first.”

Jiang Chen was ruthless. The sharp dragon claw tore the elder into pieces on the spot. This elder had just advanced to the Sixth Grade Great Saint while Jiang Chen had already reached the peak Third Grade Great Saint. To Jiang Chen, killing any ordinary Sixth Grade Great Saint would be a piece of cake and totally effortless.

Furthermore, he wasn't in his half-dragon form. With his current combat strength, he didn't need to transform to deal with the experts of the Pure Land. Not just these two ordinary Sixth Grade Great Saints but even a peak Sixth Grade Great Saint like Desolate Yuntian.

If he transformed, he could instantly kill Desolate Yuntian; his

opponent wouldn't have the chance to resist.

“That’s amazingly strong.”

Many people who were watching exclaimed, including the higher ups of the Gu Family and Demon Race were also gaping. They hadn't thought that Jiang Chen's one month's disappearance allowed him to grow to such a powerful extent. One should know that that elder was a Sixth Grade Great Saint. He killed the elder so quickly without leaving any marks. It was difficult to imagine the horrifyingness of his power.

“He’s abnormal.”

Han Yan shook his head, but he had already grown accustomed to Jiang Chen's anomaly.

At the moment, there were three more Sixth Grade Great Saints standing beside Han Yan. Their facial expression changed drastically when they saw their companion got killed. Someone reacted quickly, and attacked Han Yan. As long as they got rid of Han Yan, they would gain the upper hand and could force Jiang Chen to submit.

Sadly, they had belittled Jiang Chen's strength. It was a wishful thinking to kill Han Yan before Jiang Chen.

“Seems like you can't wait to die too.”

In Jiang Chen's hands, the Heavenly Saint Sword roared, slashing at the Sixth Grade Great Saint. Countless of sword light intertwined into a net, trapping the Sixth Grade Great Saint, stopping him from running as the sword slashed towards him.

Along with a mournful cry, the Sixth Grade Great Saint was slashed into half, blood poured out uncontrollably.

Killing two experts didn't made him stop. A divine aura was exuded from his Heavenly Saint Sword as he moved extremely fast with his Spatial Shift. The other two people couldn't escape their fate. They were also slashed to death by Jiang Chen.

In just a few blinks, the four Sixth Grade Great Saints who surrounded Han Yan were all killed by Jiang Chen as easily as chopping melons and vegetables. The scene frightened all the people around. The atmosphere instantly became silent. Regardless of whether it was the enemy or ally, all of them had difficulty in breathing.

Is he still human? It was a miracle for a person to be so heaven defying.

Jiang Chen waved casually and the iron chain that bounded Han Yan's body broke apart and fell. Han Yan once again regained his freedom. A monstrous devil wave instantly rushed out of his body.

“Little Chen, let's begin the massacre.”

Han Yan's white hair fluttered in the air, like a wild devil who had just descended to the world. The entire void above was covered by the black devil ocean, radiating a stench of fright.

Hiss.....

The people of the six great families began to regain their senses. Jiang Chen's attacks were too fast. It only took him a few blinks of time to finish the four Sixth Grade Great Saints. Putting the ones who were killed aside, those bystanders were still lost in their trance as they still couldn't see clearly what exactly happened.

"Damn! How could this little beast be so overbearing?"

"Sixth Grade Great Saints were instantly killed by him? It only took him a month to reach such a powerful extent? With his current ability, I'm afraid that none of us can take him down, even if we all combine."

"What do we do now? This man is too terrifying."

.....

The people of the six major families started to feel horrified. They could hardly believe what was happening in front of them. Jiang Chen's ferocity and fearsomeness was like an iron hammer, pounding hard on their hearts, giving them the urge to cough up blood. Plenty of those who unleashed their Qi a while ago shrivelled up.

“It looks like we don’t need to attack. The Pure Land is already doomed to be chaotic today.” Gu Xuantian said in surprise.

From Gu Firmament’s message, he only said that Jiang Chen had become very terrifying and no one in Pure Land could match him, but Gu Xuantian didn’t think that Jiang Chen would be so powerful, so powerful that everyone became powerless.

“The scary thing is he hasn’t even used his terrifying transformation yet.”

Lang Xingtian couldn’t keep calm either. As an overlord of a major family, he had seen many scary geniuses before, but no one was as unbelievable as Jiang Chen.

“Listen, all Sixth Grade Great Saints. Deploy the Sky Integration Grand Formation this instant, quickly!”

Desolate Yuntian was able to remain calm, and immediately, he called out for all the Sixth Grade Great Saints to deploy the mighty Sky Integration Grand Formation. He was able to determine that no one would be Jiang Chen’s opponent on a one-on-one battle, including him, they would all end up as good as dead in the end.

“Roger!”

Desolate Yuntian’s command prompted them into action. Dozens of Sixth Grade Great Saints speedily began the transition of

positions. An invisible grand formation was formed in a few blinks, besieging Jiang Chen and Han Yan within.

The Sky Integration Grand Formation is a powerful formation created specially by Great Saint experts. Because many of them were familiar with this formation, the layout of the formation was relatively simple, but its power was unordinary. This so-called Sky Integration Grand Formation could integrate the combat power of all the Sixth Grade Great Saints. Neither of them could defeat Jiang Chen, but it wouldn't be the case when there were dozens of them.

“Jiang Chen, don't let them succeed in laying out the Sky Integration Grand Formation.”

Gu Xuantian hastily warned him. He knew very well how scary the Sky Integration Grand Formation was, but he was afraid that Jiang Chen was still young and didn't have knowledge about it.

“Haha! Let them lay it out. I would like to see what kind of grand formation in the Heaven and Earth can trap me.”

Jiang Chen laughed aloud, absolutely not putting the Sky Integration Grand Formation in his eyes. Today, he wanted to crush all the six major families in one fell swoop. He wanted them to pay for what they did. Besides, how could this Sky Integration Grand Formation stop him? Slaughtering might not bring much meaning. On the contrary, a hard and challenging battle would shock the entire Saint Origin World.

Chapter 976 - Crazily Domineering

Dense overbearing Qi poured out from Jiang Chen's body like a tidal wave. He stood in the void with his heroic Qi piercing through the sky. His black hair fluttered with the wind. His hand was holding the dragon sword. He looked like a peerless war god that had just descended to the world, so dazzling that no one dared to stare directly at him.

Around 40 Sixth Grade Great Saints had surrounded him tightly. The void around had turned viscous and was thoroughly sealed, leaving not a single crevice on the surface. The Sky Integration Grand Formation occupied the sky above and radiated a brilliant light. Each one of these Sixth Grade Great Saints showed a tense and grim face. It only showed how much they feared Jiang Chen, and how much they wanted to kill him.

“Little Chen, it looks very powerful.”

Looking at the situation, Han Yan couldn't help sighing.

“Nonsense. Could the Sky Integration Grand Formation that was created by dozens of Sixth Grade Great Saints be a weak formation? Ah Yan, you have been injured quite badly, go into the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda and treat your injuries first. Leave these people to me.” Jiang Chen said.

“Ancestral Dragon Pagoda?”

Han Yan was baffled. But the blame wasn't on him, it was Jiang

Chen who didn't tell him about it. Therefore, it was normal that Han Yan had no knowledge about this pagoda.

Jiang Chen tore open an opening for Han Yan to enter. At the moment, Han Yan had been seriously injured. Plus the fact that he didn't have a very high cultivation base, he wouldn't be of any help fighting in this grand formation, probably, he would lose his life too.

“Jiang Chen, use your transformation skill. I would like to see how will you defend against the Sky Integration Grand Formation with your strength alone.”

Desolate Yuntian's Qi rushed to the sky. The Sky Integration Grand Formation was perfectly deployed, which gave him a sense of relief, Jiang Chen was just too difficult to deal with. Jiang Chen had become so powerful that he could kill any of the Sixth Grade Great Saints here, including Desolate Yuntian. As such, they had to use the Sky Integration Grand Formation to eliminate him. As long as Jiang Chen was captured, he would be eliminated.

One should know that these 40 experts were the higher ups of the higher ups. They were the true pinnacle existence. With all of them combined together, deploying the Sky Integration Grand Formation, no one knew how terrifying its power would be. Even a powerful Seventh Grade Great Saint wouldn't be able to withstand its blows if he was caught in this formation. Even if the Great Saint could stay alive, his skin would be peeled off.

“Dealing with you all doesn't require me to transform.”

The long sword in Jiang Chen's hand buzzed. The aura coming from all over his body projected his astounding self-confidence.

“Arrogance! I will kill you now!”

Desolate Yuntian bellowed. His Qi rose again by a notch. In a few blinks' of time, his power rose to a shocking degree. In this instant, the dozens of Sixth Grade Great Saints integrated their combat power into his body, enhancing his combat power to an unknown level.

“Heaven Splitting Divine Claw!”

Desolate Yuntian's voice rolled like thunder. All of his power materialised into a giant and majestic ancient savage beast which only had the outline of its shape; its face was vague. However, its claws were distinct and incomparably sharp. The Heaven Splitting Divine Claw could tear open even the sky.

This was a great technique of the Desolate Family, or at least one of the pinnacle Saint combat technique. It wasn't inferior to Jiang Chen's past life combat technique—The Profound Nine Solar Finger.

Jiang Chen's facial expression slightly changed. He knew this technique very well. That year, when he fought against the old ancestor of the Desolate Family, his opponent used this exact same technique. If this technique was only casted by Desolate Yuntian, he wouldn't need to worry about it and could straightway crush it.

However, this was casted from the combined power of 40 Sixth Grade Great Saints, it was another matter. This would certainly increase the power of the Heaven Splitting Divine Claw enormously. Even Jiang Chen couldn't help but take this seriously.

“This is too strong. The power of the Sky Integration Grand Formation is unpredictable. This combat technique encompasses the combat power of 40 Great Saints. I'm afraid that I will die instantly under this attack. Jiang Chen is being careless this time.” Gu Xuantian said with unparalleled concern.

“That's right, Jiang Chen was too confident. He shouldn't have let them finish deploying the grand formation. How terrifying was it when over dozens of Sixth Grade Great Saints combine their power. I'm afraid that even a Seventh Grade Great Saint will die more than nine times inside that formation.”

Lang Xingtian's facial expression turned ugly. He had the same thought as Gu Xuantian. Jiang Chen was a smart person but he became too careless. His ability to instantly kill Sixth Grade Great Saints wouldn't allow him to defend against such a huge formation. Now that he had fallen into range of the grand formation, he had also fallen into a quandary.

Yet, a billowy combat power rushed out of Jiang Chen's body. The stronger the enemy, the more excited and fearless he becomes. The Heaven Splitting Divine Claw did not make him afraid and discouraged, instead, he felt even more alive.

“Five Elemental Combat Dragon Seal!” Jiang Chen yelled.

The powerful Five Elemental Combat Dragon Seal was unleashed. More than a dozen colorful dragons charged out, like real ancient savage dragons, their presence immediately turned the entire battlefield dark.

Hong Long...

While everyone was shocked, the Five Elemental Combat Dragon Seal smashed violently against the Heaven Splitting Divine Claw. The massive impact almost broke the surrounding viscous barrier.

The Five Elemental Combat Dragon Seal was destroyed by the Heaven Splitting Divine Claw. Jiang Chen spurted out a mouthful of blood, his face turned deathly pale. He suffered a slight injury from the collision just now, but it was just what he expected. After fusing their combat powers into the Sky Integration Grand Formation, Desolate Yuntian's strike was akin to the strike of a Seventh Grade Great Saint. With Jiang Chen's combat strength, he was no match for a Seventh Grade Great Saint unless he transformed.

“Look, Jiang Chen is injured. He is going down.”

“Haha! That guy is too arrogant. He dares to compete with so many Sixth Grade Great Saints. Is this called courting death? This Sky Integration Grand Formation is really terrifying. One blow could already seriously injure him. It looks like he is going to die today, no doubt.”

“He must be killed. He is just too horrifying. If he isn’t killed today, he will become a great threat in the future.”

.....

The people of the six major families cheered at Jiang Chen’s injury, his horrifying strength had left an indelible trauma in them, plus the fact that he could instantly kill four Sixth Grade Great Saints truly shocked them.

“Keep it up everyone. We’ll take him down with this blow!”

Desolate Yuntian was exhilarated. The other Sixth Grade Great Saints were also glad to see Jiang Chen injured. They let out a long sigh of relief in their hearts. At least, now they knew that Jiang Chen wasn’t invincible.

“Humph! You think this is going to injure me? I just want to know how powerful this Sky Integration Grand Formation is. In that case, I won’t be courteous. Today, all of you will have to die.”

Jiang Chen let out a cold humph. Accompanied with a dragon’s roar, he transformed. Both of his eyes turned bloodthirsty-red. One look from his eyes would give people the feeling of falling into the abyss. His combat power surged enormously and became ten times greater than before.

This wasn’t very surprising to them, they already knew that Jiang Chen possessed this transformation skill. But then again, the

thing that they couldn't accept was his recovery speed. It was just a few blinks of time, but his injuries that was caused by the Heaven Splitting Divine Claw were already fully healed. With Desolate Yuntian's eyesight, it was impossible for him not to see Jiang Chen's state; he was as good as new.

“Motherf*cker! How could there be such a crazy recovery rate? What kind of monstrous ability does this guy have?”

“Dammit! He heals too fast. The blow we sent just now didn't even pose a threat to him at all. If this continues, instead of killing him, we will wear ourselves out.”

“His injuries were recovering too quickly. Now, with his half-dragon form, his combat power is ten times stronger, making it even harder to kill him. It looks like this is going to be a desperate fight.”

.....

Desolate Yuntian and the other Great Saints had an urge to spurt blood. However, they also knew Jiang Chen's methods and skills. Even his transformation skill was within their expectation. As such, they weren't afraid because they were highly confident in the Sky Integration Grand Formation. As long as Jiang Chen was injured continuously, his combat power would gradually decline. At that rate, they would certainly wear him down to death, but Jiang Chen's rate of recovery was beyond their expectation. They still couldn't accept the fact that Jiang Chen was as good as new after the damage they had done to him.

Naturally, they didn't know that such injury was simply a hair to Jiang Chen. Every time his dragon transformation skill undergoes a transformation, his healing power would be enhanced by a notch. Plus the wood essence that he acquired, his body was simply immortal.

“Desolate Yuntian, attack again!”

Jiang Chen was arrogantly domineering.

“Heaven Splitting Divine Claw!” Desolate Yuntian roared.

He struck with the same technique again. A giant image of an ancient savage beast and a huge gruesome claw materialized again, shrouding Jiang Chen in an instant.

As the Heaven Splitting Divine Claw was coming forth, Jiang Chen moved. He stepped out five steps in lightning speed. Every step created a hole in the void. The fifth step trampled the Heaven Splitting Divine Claw.

*Hong Long...”

A rumble was heard. Under the strong pressure of the Azure Dragon Five Steps, the Heaven Splitting Divine Claw was torn apart and turned into fragments. Desolate Yuntian's body trembled, including the entire Sky Integration Grand Formation. Each of their faces changed dramatically. One should know that

this formation was created by dozens of Sixth Grade Great Saints. When Jiang Chen turned into his half-dragon form, he became so aggressive that he could even crush their attack and shake the entire grand formation.

“Haha! Desolate Yuntian, Shi Haotian, Narang Changtian, give me all you got. I would like to see how strong your abilities are. I, Jiang Chen, have a hundred ways of breaking your Sky Integration Grand Formation, but today, I will only use one way—that is to pulverise all of you and dispersing all of your combat powers.”

Jiang Chen laughed wildly.

Chapter 977 - The End of the Six (1)

Overbearing! He's absolutely overbearing and disdaining the entire world! Jiang Chen certainly wasn't bragging about himself. Given his ability, breaking the Sky Integration Grand Formation was an extremely simple matter, but he wanted to use the most savage means. Not only he would kill these people, but also crush their faith before killing them.

“What a terrifying transformation skill! Even if I've seen it before, it still makes me feel amazed. His transformation skill has at least multiplied his combat power by tenfold, which can straightaway overturn the situation.”

Lang Xingtian felt very excited. He couldn't deny that Jiang Chen was the most heaven defying genius he had ever met.

“Brother Lang, if Jiang Chen can break this Sky Integration Grand Formation and defeat all the higher ups of the six major families, doesn't it mean he has created another historic moment in Saint Origin World?”

Gu Xuantian smiled. All his worries were gone when he saw how fierce and powerful the half-dragon Jiang Chen was.

“That's right. Regardless of how this battle ends, it will be recorded into the history of Saint Origin World. There's no doubt about it.”

Lang Xingtian nodded.

“Uncle. I should take some credit that Gu Palace had recruited such a genius, right?”

Wu Ningzhu gave a mischievous smile while both of her eyes stared at the figures of experts who were disdained by Jiang Chen, feeling indescribable pride. In spite of how dignified she was, she was now overwhelmed with exaltation.

“Ning Er is the great meritorious person of Gu Family. She naturally will receive the credit.” Gu Xuantian smiled and said.

On the battlefield. Without wasting any time, Jiang Chen drew out his Heavenly Saint Sword that had fused with six other fragments which increased its power more than twofold.

“Stabilize the grand formation, and kill him!”

Both Desolate Yuntian’s eyes turned bloodshot; he then roared. A dark sabre materialized in his hand. This large sabre was full of serrated edge. It seemed ghastly and emitted creepy Qi.

Howl

The large sabre gave out a harsh sword sound as dozens of Sixth Grade Great Saint experts injected all their combat power into it. The sabre began to magnify until it became 100 meters long like a heavenly sword hanging in the sky. One slash of the sabre could slash a small world. The huge sabre charged forth.

Jiang Chen's Heavenly Saint Sword Qi wasn't weaker than the huge sabre, instead, its Qi was more powerful than it. The current Heavenly Saint Sword had fully turned into a true dragon sword. The blood-red dragon head hilt was like a true dragon.

Equivalently, the Heavenly Saint Sword turned into 100 meters long. Due to the improvement brought by the dragon transformation skill on the sword, the sword looked greatly different than the original Heavenly Saint Sword. If that was the opposite case, given everyone's eyesight, they would have no doubt determine that this was the Saint weapon of the Greatest Saint who travelled unhindered across the world.

Clang!

The Heavenly Saint Sword and the huge sabre hung resplendently at both sides of the heavenly river, radiating boundless colors as they collided fiercely.

A collision between two unparalleled Saint Weapons happened! The destructive power and damage from the impact was infinite, covering the sky like a tidal wave. The collision between two ordinary Combat Weapons could at most send out sparks while the impact of the Heavenly Saint Sword and the huge sabre created a horrifying sea of fire.

Deng Deng Deng!

Desolate Yuntian had received a very strong backlash; he

retreated three large steps to regain his balance. The large sabre in his hand whined as if it had suffered a serious injury. Not just that, the Sky Integration Grand Formation began to tremble more intensely and looked like it would break at any time.

“Haha! Again.”

Jiang Chen laughed wildly. His Heavenly Saint Sword had become frenzied. He lifted his sword once more like an incredible war god, and slashed at Desolate Yuntian’s direction. In fact, if Jiang Chen attacked the other Sixth Grade Great Saints instead, he would be able to instantly break the Sky Integration Grand Formation for none of them would have enough time to convert their power to defend against him and his very fast speed because of the Spatial Shift and Flaming Wings.

However, he didn’t do so. Instead, he wanted a hard battle with these Sixth Grade Great Saints. This would not only crush their confidence, but also stabilized his cultivation. Although the foundation of his cultivation was strong after advancing from First Grade Great Saint to Third Grade Great Saint in a month’s time, he needed training to hone his cultivation.

“F*cker!”

Desolate Yuntian couldn’t help but curse. He had just retreated from the backlash and hadn’t regained his senses when Jiang Chen sent another slash.

He had no other alternative than to grind his teeth and defend.

Clang!

On the second impact, Desolate Yuntian was sent retreating three paces backwards once more. His Qi had become somewhat disordered, not only him but also the other Sixth Grade Great Saint were having the same situation, because all of their Qi had integrated to the Sky Integration Grand Formation. As such, if one succeeded, all would succeed but if one collapse, the others wouldn't be able to escape the same fate.

“How can this bastard be so terrifying? Our Sky Integration Grand Formation can't even stop him!”

“Grandmotherf*cker! What now? The situation won't be in our favor if it continues.”

Everyone was in terror. At this point in the battle, no one was able to remain calm. Jiang Chen was becoming more and more powerful while their strength was gradually being consumed. They would all be finished when the Sky Integration Grand Formation was broken and what awaited them after that would be Jiang Chen's brutality.

“Haha! The six major families are just this strong and so vulnerable to my blow.”

Jiang Chen laughed. He raised his Heavenly Saint Sword and made another strike.

Clang Clang Clang...

Desolate Yuntian was out of his wits. The only way to deal with Jiang Chen's stormy attack was to defend it while gnashing his teeth, but Jiang Chen's attack speed was too fast and every blow carried a heavy amount of power.

He stepped back a few paces every time the attack connected him. Eventually, he spurted out blood. The Sky Integration Grand Formation seemed to break at any moment. Each of their faces changed. They stared at Jiang Chen as if they had seen ghosts. It was not hard to imagine what would welcome them after the collapse of the grand formation.

"Oh my god! How can this bastard be this strong? This group of Sixth Grade Great Saints comprises a large portion of all the Sixth Grade Great Saints in Pure Land and they were using a grand formation to attack but they're still no match for Jiang Chen."

"Everything's finished. The grand formation won't hold much longer. The patriarchs and others are losing their defensive strength. Could it be today is the day of our destruction in the hands of this devil king?"

"No, it certainly won't happen. Our Desolate Family won't be annihilated. Patriarch is a high and mighty being. He won't perish."

.....

Currently, the people of six major families were in a state of trepidation. Jiang Chen had crushed their confidence using the sharpest, scariest and most direct means, causing all of them to plunge in hopelessness

Clang!

On the battlefield, the Heavenly Saint Sword roared wildly. This time, Jiang Chen had exerted all his power to perform a perfect integration with his sword, and slashed forth with the force that could lift up a mountain.

“Break it!”

His black hair fluttered in the wind, exuding the aura of divinity. This strike had incorporated his most powerful attack before it cruelly collided with Desolate Yuntian’s huge sabre!

Chapter 978 - The End of the Six (2)

Hong Long.....

The sky was falling, the earth was quaking and the void was crumbling. This time, Desolate Yuntian could no longer resist it. He lost his grip on the large sabre. A miserable wail was heard before he spurted out blood from his mouth. His hand that held the sabre was crushed by the serious shock.

Bang Bang Bang—

Meanwhile, due to Jiang Chen's aggressive strikes, the Sky Integration Grand Formation lost its ability to stand. It began to crack after absorbing the massive force of backlash. Many Sixth Grade Great Saints spurted out blood after suffering the severe shocks.

“How can this happen?!”

“Is this bastard still human? How did he even break the our formation? Dammit! We are all injured, we are no match for him in a one-versus-one battle.”

“What do we do now? Quickly send the distress signal to Saint Origin Palace, or else, today is going to be the end day of the six major families.”

.....

Everyone's facial expression changed tremendously. Even the patriarchs were exclaiming desperately. Some of them thought of asking for reinforcements from the Saint Origin Palace. It was all because Jiang Chen was too terrifying. At this point, they were afraid that only the personal interference of those experts in Saint Origin Palace could alleviate their crisis.

But then, only patriarchs had the ability to send a distress signal to them. Without delaying any longer, each of them started to take out a special signalling talisman.

“Haha! Trying to get help from the Saint Origin Palace? I won't give you the chance.”

Laughed Jiang Chen. Everything in the scene was within his vision. So, how possibly could he not know what these patriarchs were doing? How could he provide them the chance of calling for reinforcements when the battle had developed into this stage? He was certain that he would heavily blow the six major families off the map.

Hua La.....

The Five Elemental Sphere spread out, and at the same time, he summoned the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda. The pagoda was huge in size, and its color golden, integrating perfectly with the Five Elemental Sphere that shrouded the entire void in an instant. Every Sixth Grade Great Saint in the battlefield was encompassed by it. There was no exception.

“What’s this place? What a strong domain Qi! It has actually integrated five different kinds of power spheres. Also, this place is like some kind of precious spatial zone. Are we imprisoned?”

“Dammit! I don’t know what this bastard has done to lock the whole void here. This place has become enclosed, I have no way of sending the distress signal to Saint Origin Palace.”

“It’s over. This maniac is going to kill us all here. He’s truly ruthless. Now that this zone has been sealed, neither of us could get out, including our signals. That means no experts from Saint Origin Palace will come. Does that also mean the six major families are going to face extinction too?”

.....

The entire void had been sealed. Everybody including the six patriarchs were feeling the emotions that they had never felt, such as deep fear, despair and panic. Jiang Chen had shattered their confidence using his strength alone. They had now lost the courage and morale to fight Jiang Chen. The Sky Integration Grand Formation that was deployed by 40 Sixth Grade Great Saints was no match for Jiang Chen, not to mention, it was destroyed by him.

The bystanders standing outside the battlefield were all dumbfounded as the incident happened too fast and the experts of the six great families were defeated too quickly. Even Gu Xuantian and Lang Xingtian hadn’t awakened from their shock. Presently, the people outside the battlefield could see clearly what was going

on inside.

“He’s not going to kill all these people, isn’t he?” Heavenly Leopard King said in disbelief.

“Brother Heavenly Leopard thought that he doesn’t have the guts to do this?”

Gu Xuantian said and smiled. He knew Jiang Chen too well. It was absolutely a bad idea to offend someone like Jiang Chen. The consequences would certainly be scary once they provoked him. Today, what the six major families did had touched his bottom line. Trying to sentence Han Yan to Ling Chi execution was tantamount to digging their own grave.

“The world is going to be thrown into chaos.” Lang Xingtian said and sighed. He’d expected there would be chaos but didn’t think it would come so soon.

Inside the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda, Jiang Chen’s face was cold. The Heavenly Saint Sword in his hand radiated unlimited killing intent that filled the hearts of his enemies with a layer of mist.

“Jiang Chen, you dare to kill us? Do you know the repercussion of doing so?!” Narang Changtian yelled.

“I know,” replied Jiang Chen with two simple words.

“In that case, let us go this instant. Or else, you will be doomed

eternally,” shouted Shi Haotian.

“I truly admire your courage and intelligence for being able to threaten me even at this point. I don’t know whether or not I will be doomed eternally but I’m sure you all will face the everlasting doom immediately,” said Jiang Chen.

Then, he turned into a ray of light and rushed forth. A clatter rang from the Heavenly Saint Sword followed by a mournful scream; a Sixth Grade Great Saint was severed into two on the spot.

Killing any Sixth Grade Great Saints didn’t require the power of his half-dragon form. But now, considering the fact that he was in his half-dragon form and adding the either heavy injuries received by these Great Saints, even those peak Sixth Grade Great Saint patriarchs would be instantly killed by Jiang Chen.

“Argh...” “Argh...” “Argh...”

Subsequently, Jiang Chen started a massacre. Every swipe of his sword would accompanied by a miserable cry. No one could resist it. After being trapped in the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda and Five Elemental Sphere, they were like a turtle in the jug, and Jiang Chen was killing them one by one as easily as chopping melon and cutting vegetables.

The people outside were horrified by the scene. This was a unilateral killing. If there were no accident, each and every Sixth Grade Great Saint inside the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda would die

miserably. It was hard to imagine what Pure Land would become if all these people died. In any case, it would surely startle the Saint Origin Palace. Jiang Chen had started the chaos the moment he drew out his sword to kill.

No one was able to think of the earth-shaking outcome of this battle.

Even though Gu Xuantian and Lang Xingtian were standing on the same side as Jiang Chen, they couldn't help being frightened by such a scene. They were considered the most powerful existences and peak figures in Pure Land, and as such, they had never thought that a Sixth Grade Great Saint could be so weak and fragile.

“Argh...” “Argh...” “Argh.....”

The massacre went on. Jiang Chen had no intention of showing mercy. Inside the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda had turned into a miserable scene. Those high and dignified figures were now defenseless lambs waiting to be slaughtered.

However, immediately after killing them, he threw them out of the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda. Otherwise, the pagoda would automatically absorb their human essence and that could cause devastating effects.

Han Yan was situated on the second level but he could see the battlefield below clearly. After witnessing Jiang Chen's improvement and recalling the scene he and Jiang Chen met for

the first time in Whirling Sun City of Qi Province, he felt their difference now was so big as if a generation had passed. Jiang Chen's rapid growth had totally caught his sworn brother by surprise.

“Don't stand there and watch everybody. Attack the barrier to rip it open. As long as an opening is created, we can get out by controlling the spatial energy!”

Narang Changtian yelled. Currently, Jiang Chen was like a peerless devil king to them. He was also like a bloodthirsty devil king, a killing god and the god of the dead, which made it impossible to confront him. The only chance to escape was to tear a hole in this sealed spatial zone.

But sadly, they had very little understanding about the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda. Considering how solid and strong the pagoda was, they wouldn't be able to create an opening even they wore out themselves. Once a person fell into the zone of the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda, he wouldn't be getting out. In truth, even without the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda, the Five Elemental Sphere was enough for them to suffer.

Swoosh!

With a flash, Jiang Chen reached Narang Changtian. A pair of cold eyes glared at the patriarch while his face brimmed with killing intent.

“Jiang Chen, what-what are you doing?!”

Narang Elder's facial expression changed drastically. That was right. He was afraid for the first time in his life, it was real and deep fear. With Jiang Chen standing in front of him gave him the feeling of dense Qi of death. There was no doubt about it. It was the taste and smell of death.

“What am I doing? You should be well aware that you will face nightmare if you offend me. Now, your nightmare has arrived.”

As he was speaking, the Heavenly Saint Sword pierced through Narang Changtian's chest with a puff. The sharp sword intent mercilessly raged through his body. Narang Changtian could feel himself losing his vital force rapidly. Currently, he was feeling desperately hopeless.

Pu Chi!

Jiang Chen drew out his long sword and threw Narang Changtian's body downwards. It was considered a very face-saving act by allowing Narang Changtian, the patriarch of Narang Family, to have his full corpse.

“Patriarch!”

“No...”

.....

All the disciples of Narang Family screamed. Someone rushed forth to catch Narang Changtian's body. Countless of them were filled with despair. At this moment, they felt like the sky had fallen. All the time, Narang Changtian was like a god-like existence in their hearts, and also a high and might being that was all powerful and inviolable.

Today, the god in their hearts had fallen. It dealt an unimaginable and unbearable blow to them.

For so many years that the eight major families dominated the Pure Land, this was the first patriarch that fell under Jiang Chen's sword. This was an incomparably sad scene and also a historic moment.

“Jiang Chen, you are finished. You dare to kill a patriarch? You freaking maniac! No one in this world can save you now!”

Huo Batian's body was burning from top to bottom as he bellowed at Jiang Chen.

“Think about how to save yourselves first. Narang Changtian is the first but he's definitely not the last. All of you have to die today. All the patriarchs of the six major families will head to the same path. So, all of you won't be lonely and will have companions. I will leave your body intact after your death. That will be the most merciful thing I can do.”

Jiang Chen's eyes had turned bloodshot. His moved at the maximum speed. With the combination of Flaming Wings and

Spatial Shift, his opponents were unable to catch his shadow accurately.

Pu Chi!

Huo Batian felt his body trembling but when he lowered his head, he saw a dazzling sharp sword went through his body. Instantly, the Qi of death shrouded all over his body.

Chapter 979 - Wild and Frenzied

“I’m dying... no...”

Huo Batian felt very reluctant. He was the patriarch of a major family, like Narang Chantian. He had a mighty and powerful cultivation. He had never thought that he would meet his death today. He thought that he still had a great future awaiting him, and that one day, he would be able to cultivate in Saint Origin Palace and could even breakthrough into the Immortal realm and ascend to the Immortal World.

But then, all of these dreams turned to nothing. Jiang Chen had become his ultimate nightmare and the terminator of his life.

“No, our patriarch is killed. This abominable maniac!”

“It’s over. Huo Family is going to be finished. None of us can beat this bastard, even our patriarch is killed.”

“The world is going to be in complete disorder. Jiang Chen won’t stop. I’m afraid that the patriarchs of the six major families will die, including all the Sixth Grade Great Saints.”

.....

The disciples of Huo Family felt like their hearts were wrung to the very core. The six major families had been thrown into chaos. None of the trapped Sixth Grade Great Saint would be able to

escape alive. After killing Huo Batian, Jiang Chen made another sword attack. His Heavenly Saint Sword had become a life-seizing sword. Every place it went, there would be a splash of blood and a miserable cry. Merely a minute's time had passed but the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda was only left with four people—the last four patriarchs, Desolate Yuntian, Dan Yangtian, Bin Longtian and Shi Haotian. The rest of them were dead. The scene was at its worst when only these four overlords were left alive. They were all like mourning dogs, with their dying-ember-like faces. They had already given up resisting.

Resistance was no longer useful, Jiang Chen was just too strong. Neither of them was his opponent and they had witnessed Jiang Chen's ruthlessness. They knew pretty well that Jiang Chen would never let them go no matter what.

“It's over. This is thoroughly over.”

“Haha! I hate myself for not killing this brat at that time on Spiritual Space Mountain, which led to the disaster today.”

“Jiang Chen, you'll be finished once you killed us. You have killed so many people and caused the entire world to be in chaos. Saint Origin Palace will never forgive you. The six palaces will never let you go. You can never escape from the pursuit of Saint Origin Palace even if you have three heads and six arms.”

.....

The four overlords snarled. At this time, besides despair and fear

overflowing their hearts, there was also regret. Back when Jiang Chen just came back from Void Triangular Domain, he was merely a Minor Saint expert. Killing him at that time was as easy as pinching an ant, but they gave up that chance for the sake of their reputation, and this turned out to be a disastrous event today.

No one wouldn't be afraid of death. The higher their position and authority, the greater they feared death. They were supposed to have great future awaiting them, and considering their position and status, they thought they were immortals.

“Humph! From the moment you offended me, your fate has already been set. I, Jiang Chen, am the nightmare of your families. Today, that nightmare has arrived because of your actions. Saint Origin Palace has also offended me and they will face the same consequences as you. Anyone who goes against me will face the same consequences. That is all.”

Jiang Chen let out a cold humph; sword light swept across wildly, slashing the head of Dan Yangtian and Bin Longtian. After killing so many people, adding these two wouldn't make much difference. Furthermore, the grudge between him and the six major families would never end. There was nothing they could talk about except their deaths. If Jiang Chen didn't kill them, they would do everything to eliminate him, or even harm his family. This was something that Jiang Chen didn't wish to see.

The battle scene was left with two people. Both Desolate Yuntian and Shi Haotian's face already had become so ugly, they already knew that death was just ahead.

“Now it’s your turn.”

Jiang Chen walked towards the two men one step after another.

“Jiang Chen, I have already sent the message to Desolate Palace. The experts over there will arrive here soon. You can already imagine what the consequences will be if you kill me!” said Desolate Yuntian loudly.

“Haha! Desolate Yuntian, so you are scared. It’s impossible to get your message out of here. Even if you really did sent a message, it will take at least half an hour for the experts of Saint Origin Palace to arrive here. Everything would be over at that time,” said Jiang Chen while laughing.

Hong Long.....

Just then, a sudden explosion of thunder rang in the sky. The void burst into a gap and an old man in grey robe came out. After his appearance, a strong pressure spread out from the sky which made it difficult for everyone to breathe.

Everyone turned their gaze at the elder. When Desolate Yuntian saw the elder, he felt overjoyed and hurriedly shouted, “Sixth Uncle, save me!”

There was no doubt about it. He was an expert that came from Desolate Palace. Impressively, this elder was a Seventh Grade Great Saint which was many times stronger than a Sixth Grade

Great Saint.

“This is great, Brother Desolate. Never thought that you could send a message out to Saint Origin Palace. We have hope now.”

Shi Haotian was overjoyed too. Initially, he thought that this zone had been thoroughly sealed up by Jiang Chen, losing all the capability to send a Signalling Talisman. Thus, he didn't imagine that Desolate Yuntian would be able to send the message through the sealed zone.

“Of course, this is a unique Signalling Talisman of Desolate Family that couldn't be blocked. Jiang Chen, you are finished.”

Desolate Yuntian once again became arrogant.

The fact that Desolate Yuntian could send a message out to Desolate Palace also astonished Jiang Chen a little. But immediately after that, he found the answer to it. After all, Desolate Family was different from the other families, they had powerful Immortals in their palace. Naturally, they would have extraordinary means and it wasn't strange for the message to get past his seal.

“Here comes the expert of Saint Origin Palace. He is the expert of Desolate Family. That's great, this will be the end of Jiang Chen.”

“Jiang Chen must be killed, he is too dangerous. He is merely a Third Grade Great Saint, but he already has incredible strength

and ruthlessness. If he is allowed to continue his growth, no one could imagine how monstrous he would become.”

“Kill him! Today, we must kill Jiang Chen. This man is a heinous devil and he has killed too many people.”

.....

The people of the six major families were stirred by the arrival of Desolate Palace’s expert. At last, they saw a glimmer of hope. They were truly in terror before this, or perhaps, scared to death.

The faces of the Gu Family and Demon Race changed. Most of them only saw this expert of Saint Origin Palace for the first time. In their hearts, Saint Origin Palace was a divine land and the pinnacle existence in Saint Origin World.

Immediately after the Desolate Palace’s elder emerged, he saw the tragic situation of the battlefield and the trapped Desolate Yuntian. A violent anger sprang out of his body in an instant.

Swoosh!

The elder’s gaze were as sharp as knife as it landed on Jiang Chen’s body. He said furiously, “Little monster! Are these your doing? Good, very good, even the Greatest Saint that year wasn’t as conceited as you. You won’t die enough even if you have a hundred lives for killing so many of our people.”

“Haha! Isn’t Desolate Palace overconfident? They sent only you, a Seventh Grade Great Saint, to kill me? I’m not sure whether it is overconfidence or your old life isn’t worth much. Coming alone is equivalent to death. If I were you, I will scam instantly and perhaps that will save your life.”

Jiang Chen laughed, certainly not putting the Seventh Grade Great Saint in his eyes. He was now in his half-dragon form and possessed the combat strength of a Seventh Grade Great Saint. It wasn’t impossible for him to kill a Seventh Grade Great Saint if he went all out.

If the expert who came was an Eighth Grade Great Saint or there were a few Seventh Grade Great Saint experts, Jiang Chen wouldn’t even say a word or two. He would immediately turn and run, but now, he had no intention of fleeing. It wasn’t easy to encounter a Seventh Grade Great Saint opponent. This was a good way to test his combat ability and strength.

“That’s arrogant, extremely arrogant. I can’t believe that someone as arrogant as you has actually existed in the Pure Land. Little beast, I order you to immediately release the patriarch of my family now, otherwise, you will be doomed.”

The elder raged. His status in the Pure Land was on par with the position of the supreme ruler. For so long that he had lived, no one had ever dared to speak to him in such a way.

“Humph! Then, I’ll doom your patriarch first.”

Two beams of cruel light shot out from Jiang Chen's eyes. Without warning, the Heavenly Saint Sword pierced through Desolate Yuntian's brows. His body trembled, however, the smile on his face hadn't thoroughly faded yet. Originally, he thought that his Sixth Uncle could save him, but he never thought that he would die first before his uncle could react. This was no doubt a real disaster.

"No... no..."

Desolate Yuntian couldn't believe it at all, but this was the cruelty of reality. He only felt that a man was so fragile in the face of death until now.

Shi Haotian, standing at the side, was completely dumbfounded. He absolutely couldn't believe that Jiang Chen would still dare to kill in front of a Seventh Grade Great Saint. This wasn't audaciousness anymore, but insanity.

"You are going to die too."

Jiang Chen drew his sword. With a wave, Shi Haotian's head was detached from his body. At the moment, not single one among the dozens of Sixth Grade Great Saints remained, including the six patriarchs, all of them ended up in a tragic death.

The six renowned overlords had fallen in this battle. This battle would surely shake the whole world and be counted into the history of Saint Origin World. Jiang Chen's name would definitely be famous because of this battle which would be passed down to

generations.

“Bastard!”

The elder was infuriated. Substantial fury escaped from the top of his skull. He glared at Jiang Chen, not believing that there was such an arrogant young punk in this world, that dared to kill in front of him. This wasn't merely an insult to him, but also an insult to the entire Desolate Family.

“Little beast! Today, by hook or by crook, you will die. I will let you taste the hell-like suffering!”

The elder's killing intent was overwhelming. He had decided to kill Jiang Chen without a doubt.

“You talk too much, old man. If you want to fight, come. We'll see who will die first.”

Jiang Chen kept the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda and the Five Elemental Sphere and pointed at the elder with his sword.

Chapter 980 - Bloody Awesome

Such a scene gave everyone the urge to cough out blood. He was arrogant, too arrogant. Jiang Chen was definitely the most arrogant person that they had ever seen. No Third Grade Great Saint would dare to point a sword at a Seventh Grade Great Saint and claim that he would kill him. This was a scene that they had not even dreamt of.

The blood of the Gu Family and Demon Race had been kindled up. They were attracted and affected by Jiang Chen's domineering demeanour. They were no doubt deeply convinced by him. A good man like Jiang Chen would never have regrets living in this world.

Jiang Chen was the reincarnation of the Greatest Saint, which naturally equipped him with an influential bearing. After getting the heart of blaze, a simple radiance of his aura could affect plenty of people.

"That's too awesome. If I have such a day in my life, even if I die straight after that, it will be worth it."

"Exactly, Jiang Chen is really too handsome. He is my real idol."

"Don't dream. You all should take a closer look of yourselves in the mirror. Don't you feel ashamed for comparing yourselves with Jiang Chen?"

"Do you think Jiang Chen can handle that elder from Saint Origin Palace? He is a Seventh Grade Great Saint, that's so

powerful.”

“It’s hard to say. Jiang Chen killed so many Sixth Grade Great Saints, it only showed that his strength is comparable to a Seventh Grade Great Saint. Moreover, Jiang Chen has created numerous miracles all this while. I admire him so much that I will prostrate before him. I won’t feel surprised if he can kill that Seventh Grade Great Saint.”

.....

Most of the people from Gu Family and Demon Race were unable to restrain their stirred emotions. They were wondering whether Jiang Chen could deal with that Seventh Grade Great Saint, but thinking back to his past deeds and achievements reminded them how many miracles he had created. As such, they wouldn’t be very surprised if he could really kill that Seventh Grade Great Saint.

Compared to the people of the Gu Family and Demon Race, the people of six major families were feeling restless. They hated Jiang Chen to their very core. All their hopes were now placed on that elder, hoping that he could kill Jiang Chen to avenge their patriarchs’ and elders’ death.

“You overly conceited little beast! I will let you know what true power is.”

The elder of Desolate Palace raged. Without saying another word, he struck out a palm at Jiang Chen. It was a giant golden palm that dazzled incomparably, like a cage pressing down against Jiang

Chen.

“This senseless attack is of no use to me.”

Jiang Chen didn't even look at the attack from the elder. He raised his hand and sent out a knuckle blow. A huge punch connected with the dazzling palm. After hearing a rumble, the elder's palm cracked and shattered to pieces in the void.

“What?!”

The elder exclaimed, doubting that his eyes had some problems. He was a mighty Seventh Grade Great Saint which was many times stronger than any Sixth Grade Great Saints. How could he ever put a Third Grade Great Saint in his eyes? Crushing a Third Grade was no different than pinching an ant.

But then again, after their first exchange, he learned the true meaning of heaven defying and monstrous. His previous attack was just a test, it wasn't a full-fledged attack; Jiang Chen appeared to be also probing his attack instead of going all-out. Viewing this from another perspective, both of them were on par.

“Old man, you should be careful in front of me. Give me whatever you got. Don't wait anymore cause you might not have an opportunity to use your strongest attack, by then, it will already be in vain,” said Jiang Chen loudly, absolutely not putting his opponent in his eyes. He was currently in his half-dragon form and with his current cultivation and combat strength, he was qualified to disdain his opponent.

“I don’t believe that a puny Third Grade Great Saint is powerful enough to fight me. Heaven Splitting Divine Claw.”

From top to bottom, the elder’s body was filled with a dense killing intent. He no longer dared to underestimate Jiang Chen; he struck out with the most powerful combat technique of the Desolate Family – the Heaven Splitting Divine Claw. The power of this Heaven Splitting Divine Claw was many times stronger than Desolate Yuntian’s. Scales grew out on the surface of the red-golden palm.

At this very moment, the elder’s hatred towards Jiang Chen was so intense. Desolate Yuntian wasn’t merely just a patriarch, he was also his nephew. As his Sixth Uncle, he couldn’t even save his nephew’s life and had to watch him die in the hands of the enemy. It was imaginable how much hatred he was feeling right now.

Hong Long.....

The Heaven Splitting Divine Claw ripped the sky and enshrouded the entire battlefield, not giving Jiang Chen a slim chance of escaping. Also, Jiang Chen’s Qi had been locked on by the giant claw the instant it materialized, leaving him no way of fleeing, confronting the attack head-on was his only option.

“Haha! Come on!” Laughed Jiang Chen loudly.

He didn’t even show any politeness towards his enemy. He raised his Heavenly Saint Sword, fusing himself with the sword to

become a single unit that looked like a giant dragon, dancing back and forth in the void; he now looked extremely valorous.

Howl!

The Heavenly Saint Sword uttered a shrill howl as it slashed forward at the Heaven Splitting Divine Claw.

Bang!

The two huge attacks collided, immediately, a large spark was produced. The Heavenly Saint Sword reached the internal part of the giant claw but couldn't completely slash it apart; the Heaven Splitting Divine Claw was no doubt terrifying, it gave the feeling that it was indestructible.

These two powerful attacks were like glued to each other, both were trying hard to pulverise the other.

“How could this brat be this strong? His power is akin to a power that can topple the mountains and overturn seas. I can feel extreme pressure from him. And, his sword is incomparably dreadful, being able to slash open my Heaven Splitting Divine Claw.”

The elder's expression changed. He couldn't believe that such a monstrous figure actually existed under the Heavens.

“Break it now!”

Jiang Chen exerted an extra force into it, countless of dragon marks surged out like a blood-red shadows of dragons. The power of the Heavenly Saint Sword doubled in an instant. A sound of ‘Chi La’ rang and the core of the Heaven Splitting Divine Claw was severed in half.

Deng Deng Deng!

The elder received a massive force of backlash and plunged backwards. His bloodshot eyes revealed an expression of shock. The fact that he was quashed by a Third Grade Great Saint gave him an impulse to spurt out blood.

“My goodness, he can actually suppress a Seventh Grade Great Saint? Is he still human?”

“No, this is impossible. How can he be so overbearing. Their cultivation are four levels apart. The gap is almost impossible to overcome. If a Seventh Grade Great Saint is not even a match for him, does it mean that there’s no way for us to take our revenge on him?”

.....

A while ago, the people of the six major families were full of hope, but after seeing that even the Seventh Grade Great Saint was sent plunging backwards by Jiang Chen, they felt utterly disappointed, as if a large bowl of cold water was poured over their scorching head. Now, they no longer expected the elder to kill

Jiang Chen. It was already considered favorable when the elder wasn't killed by Jiang Chen.

“Brother Lang, did you notice that the combat power of the Seventh Grade Great Saint is almost the same as the combat power of the Sky Integration Grand Formation? And just now, Jiang Chen was able to rip apart the Sky Integration Grand Formation, this means that Jiang Chen's cultivation is enough to suppress the elder,” said Gu Xuantian, his eyes sparkling.

“It's true that he has amazing combat strength. I'm afraid that the Seventh Grade Great Saint is no match for Jiang Chen, but he is after all a Seventh Grade Great Saint, it's probably not a problem for him to escape.” Lang Xingtian said, sighing.

Each time Jiang Chen emerged, he would bring them shock and miracle. Since the incident in Void Triangular Domain, his name had been circulating in the Pure Land. Moreover, all the earth-shaking events that happened in the Pure Land during this period of time were related to Jiang Chen.

The battlefield was shattered and a few large holes could be seen. An icy cold spatial air currents were rustling from the openings. After the strike that suppressed the Seventh Grade Great Saint, Jiang Chen made another strike swiftly. The Heavenly Saint Sword turned into a brilliant divine light and reached the elder in a blink.

The elder roared. Seven extra swords with seven different colors appeared. This was a set of Saint Weapon. These seven swords would combine to increase its power drastically and launch an

attack. Saint Weapon like this were the most horrifying one.

At this point, the elder no longer dared to look down on Jiang Chen. He transferred all of his energy to the seven long swords, forming a dazzling sword formation that were displayed in the form of seven stars. Each and every sword looked like a heavenly sword, indestructible as they stabbed towards Jiang Chen.

“This is a good sword formation, but it’s not enough to harm me.”

Jiang Chen praised the sword formation. A pair of red-golden fiery wings appeared behind his back, and with a swoosh, he merged his blood-red dragon wings and formed the flaming wings. With a casual flutter of the wings, he moved like a sailfish in the ocean, dodging the most powerful attack of the sword formation like lightning, and entered the sword formation through a narrow opening.

As he went into the sword formation, he casted the Great Soul Derivation Technique. Immediately, he found the weak point of the formation. The Heavenly Saint Sword then slashed violently at that spot. After hearing a ‘bang’, the sword formation instantly crumbled while the seven swords buzzed; the void trembled intensely.

“What a set of good swords. I will kindly accept this gift of yours.”

Jiang Chen summoned the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda that sucked

in all the swords instantaneously. The elder was greatly shocked. That was his natal weapon, it couldn't be easily taken by anyone. Hastily, he recalled his seven swords back, but sadly, he couldn't sense them anymore, as if they had vanished.

“No need to summon them anymore, old man. Your Combat Weapon has already been subdued by me,” said Jiang Chen.

“It's impossible.”

The elder couldn't believe it, but the truth was just like what Jiang Chen had said, he could no longer feel the Qi of the seven swords. This was no ordinary surprise. If he lost those weapons, he would certainly suffer a tremendous loss.

“Little beast! I will fight it out with you! Violent Blood Sea!”

The elder had gone mad; endless energy was spewing out of his body.

Chapter 981 - The Fury of the Wild Dragon

This was a formidable Forbidden Art that consumed one's essence. It looked like the elder of Desolate Palace was going all out. His heart must be bleeding right now after losing the seven longswords.

Hu Hu.....

A wave of blood wind surged all over the sky, like a blood-red tidal wave. The elder had unleashed all of his Yuan Force that turned into a blood-red and viscous air current before forming a sea of blood that was filled with turbulent Qi. Once his opponent fell within the perimeter, he would be affected by the atmosphere inside. It would also affect one's thinking and mentality, causing the person to go mad. When a person's mind was in a turmoil, he would become flawed and vulnerable. At this time, even without the attack from the host, he would be struck dead by the attack of the Violent Blood Sea.

One couldn't deny that this was a cruel move, with swift attack that covered a wide range of area, giving no chance for his enemy to flee.

Just like what was happening now, Jiang Chen was instantaneously shrouded by it. The sea of blood was like an aggressive beast that engulfed Jiang Chen in split seconds.

This horrifying scene made many people nervous. Anyone with good eyesight was able to see that this was the last blow of the

elder, and also the last round for Jiang Chen. If Jiang Chen could pulverize this attack, the elder would surely be finished due to a massive backlash, but if Jiang Chen failed to do so, he would be gotten rid of by the blood sea.

This was a life-and-death blow, and also the final life-and-death struggle.

“Little beast, I will let you taste the scariness of my blood sea. It’s utterly abominable that you dare plunder my Combat Weapons.”

The elder of Desolate Palace ground his teeth, feeling the urge to bite Jiang Chen to pieces at the instant.

“Old man, it sounds ridiculous that you want to trap me with this trick.”

Jiang Chen’s voice was transmitted out of the blood sea, totally not putting this Violent Blood Sea in his eyes. This attack, which could affect one’s mind, was essentially no different than an illusion art, but it was more terrifying than an illusion art because it had a tremendous attack power.

However, the attack power wouldn’t work on Jiang Chen. As for the effects on the mind, putting the daunting Great Soul Derivation Technique aside, he was well-versed in Illusion Heart Sutra. Compared to the Illusion Art, the inside of the Violent Blood Sea was nothing in front of Jiang Chen, truly insignificant.

*Swoosh... * Swoosh... *Swoosh...*

Jiang Chen's speed reached the extreme. Immediately, he swung his sword dozens of times. Every sword light was like an incomparably potent stretch of shining silk, instantly dividing the blood sea into many parts.

Hong Long.....

Subsequently, the entire blood sea exploded. Innumerable blood light filled the sky. The turbulent waves inside rolled outwards. In spite of its distance, the bystanders could still feel its dense destructive Qi. They all gaped at the scene, imagining that if they were the ones caught in such a battlefield, they would immediately be pulverised. There was no chance of survival for them.

As the Violent Blood Sea was broken by Jiang Chen's brute force, the elder spurted out an arrow of blood. The Qi in his body declined rapidly, making him an entirely different person. He had suffered a great backlash from the Violent Blood Sea, and was seriously injured.

Furthermore, he had expended some of his essence before using the Violent Blood Sea. Thus, he was now close to emptying his power. At last, he had lost the ability to fight Jiang Chen.

Run!

The elder didn't dare show any of his disdainful character. He

was truly frightened by Jiang Chen, his opponent was just too horrifying. There was no other option besides running away. If the battle continued, he probably would lose his life here.

He disappeared in the blink of an eye, going into the deepest layer of the spatial zone, however, Jiang Chen would never give him the opportunity to escape. Almost at the same moment that the elder fled, Jiang Chen moved.

“Old man! If you chose to flee at the very beginning, I wouldn’t be able to stop you but now, you have totally lost the chance to escape.”

Jiang Chen’s voice rolled through the void, his Flaming Wings was fluttering intensely. In a blink, he went into the deepest layer of the spatial zone. The next moment, one side of the void burst into a hole. Then, Jiang Chen walked out from it, carrying a person—the elder who fled just now.

The elder looked extremely perturbed. He now looked like a dead dog being carried by Jiang Chen, and there was blood all over his body.

Hua...

This scene immediately set off a rough wave of commotion. The six major families had the impulse to spurt out blood, especially the people of Desolate Family. They felt as if their hearts were going to break apart. That kind of roller-coaster-emotion made their heads spin.

“My god! Is he really that strong? That formidable Seventh Grade Great Saint didn’t even have the chance to escape? Is he still human?”

“That’s a mighty Seventh Grade Great Saint, an elder and also a high-level figure of Saint Origin Palace, however, he was still defeated by Jiang Chen just like that. Jiang Chen is merely a Third Grade Great Saint now. It is hard to imagine how powerful he would be if he advanced to the Fourth Grade, Fifth Grade or Sixth Grade Great Saint.”

“As long as Jiang Chen doesn’t fall, he will become a superior being and an invincible existence. Even the Greatest Saint that year wasn’t as awesome as him.”

.....

None of them could stay calm. Every young disciple of Gu Family and Demon Race regarded Jiang Chen as their idol. Gu Xuantian and Lang Xingtian felt very fortunate to befriend such a peerless figure. As the patriarchs, they knew better than anyone about the situation of Saint Origin World and Saint Origin Palace. Desolate Palace was obsessed in dominating the entire world. It was only a matter of time before they engulfed the other seven palaces. On the other hand, Jiang Chen’s emergence had created a turning point, giving the rest of them a glimmer of hope.

The Desolate Palace’s elder was in Jiang Chen’s full control. No matter how much he struggled, he couldn’t break free from Jiang

Chen's hands.

“Jiang Chen, you dare to kill me? Do you have any idea who I am?” said the elder ruthlessly.

“I don't care who you are. In my eyes, you are an enemy and my enemies only has one outcome, death! Desolate Yuntian is dead and you will soon follow him. The same goes to your Desolate Palace as they have offended me,” said Jiang Chen in a cold-blooded tone.

If the elder knew that Jiang Chen had another identity—Gu Chen—he certainly wouldn't have uttered such a threat.

The Gu Chen of Gu Palace could even plot against Desolate Emperor, let alone getting rid of an elder of Desolate Palace.

“Jiang Chen, you frenzied devil king! If you kill me, Desolate Palace will never let you go and you will surely die painfully in the end. Not just you, but also all of your families, friends, and everyone that is close to you, all of them will die! They will make nine... ten of your generations vanish from this world.” The elder continued to threaten.

“Very well. Then I won't kill you first today. I will let you see how I, Jiang Chen, will make ten generations of Desolate Family extinct with your own eyes. I will kill all of them and destroy Desolate City.”

As he said that, he struck out the True Dragon Palm. A giant dragon claw 300 meter long slapped towards the group of Desolate Family abruptly.

Hong Long...

Argh... *Argh...*

When the palm strike landed, miserable cries reverberated. Sea-like blood covered the land and corpses heaped up like mountains. At least hundreds of people died and there was no room for revolt.

Afterwards, Jiang Chen raised his Heavenly Saint Sword and slashed out a thousand miles long dragon sword intent at the direction of Desolate City. Boundless destructive waves rippled as the city was separated into two by that single slash. Countless buildings collapsed with a loud crash, turning into ruins. A very deep gully was produced in the middle. Smoke rippled and billowed up to the sky.

Hiss...

Everybody took in a breath of cold air as it was too cruel and overbearing. Desolate City was instantly destroyed. Perhaps it might've been already empty and there were no casualties, but still, Desolate City represented Desolate Family. Such an event was no doubt the first to ever happen in the history of Pure Land.

The scene had completely frightened the people of Desolate

Family. The elder of Desolate Palace was utterly shocked. After watching over hundreds of their people being killed and their city being destroyed, he spurted out a mouthful of blood.

“Old man, I will now kill every one of your Desolate Family here, and then go to the main territory of Desolate Family and continue my slaughter. I will make sure that every one of them will turn to ash and none of them would remain. Do you believe it?” said Jiang Chen loudly.

He didn't intend to kill those people and destroy the city, but this elder had infuriated him. He hated it the most when someone threatened him using his families and friends.

“I believe you. I believe you Jiang Chen. Kill me now. Please let go of Desolate Family.”

The elder cried, and didn't dare utter another line of threat. It was true that Desolate Palace was strong, but the news here hadn't reached there yet. He was finally aware of how ferocious Jiang Chen was. He wouldn't dare doubt the truthfulness of Jiang Chen's words. If he continued to provoke Jiang Chen using his threats, Jiang Chen would really kill everyone of his family members in front of him. Once Jiang Chen started his massacre, not a single one of his family members would be able to escape. Also, the inheritance and land of Desolate Family would then turn to nothingness. His life was never worth that much anyway.

Bang!

Jiang Chen slapped the elder's skull with his palm, killing him instantly, he then released the corpse from the sky. At this point, all the experts of the six major families were dead, including their last hope—the elder that came from Saint Origin Palace. Everyone was shocked and didn't dare say a word.

In the face of such a fierce enemy, they thought that it would be better to keep their mouth shut. Otherwise, they would meet the same fate as those more than hundreds of disciples.

This was a mad and frenzied dragon. Once it got angry, thousand miles of the land would be covered by corpses.

You should never challenge a powerhouse's bottom line, these kind of beings would certainly not show any kindness in front of his enemies.

Jiang Chen shifted his gaze at the six major families and yelled, "Scram now! It's not worth my time to kill you all."

These line of words had granted the people of the six major families amnesty. Hastily, they flew away and vanished in a few blinks. Jiang Chen initially had no intention of killing them as his real enemy right now was Desolate Palace. Today's battle made him an absolute celebrity, but the things here would certainly spread to Saint Origin Palace very soon. What he needed to do now was to make preparations and arrangement for his family.

Chapter 982 - Ten-Thousand-Year-Old Profound Ice Beast

The people of the six major families had fled. Desolate City was destroyed and many Sixth Grade Great Saint experts were dead, including the Seventh Grade Great Saint expert that came from Saint Origin Palace. All of them died in the hands of Jiang Chen. This was a big event that had never happened in Pure Land.

The battle today would certainly startle the Heaven and Earth. It would be regarded as the prologue of Saint Origin World's chaos. Jiang Chen would become famous and his name would soon spread across the world. At that time, he would no longer be a stranger to anyone. The people of Gu Family and Demon Race didn't say anything. Their eyes were fixed on the white-clothed figure above the sky. Currently, Jiang Chen had returned to his original form. They couldn't regain their calmness as the scenes of Jiang Chen's war-god-like combat power lingered in their heads.

Han Yan came out from the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda. The present him almost had all of his injuries heal. He patted Jiang Chen's shoulder. "Fabulous."

Han Yan grinned. Jiang Chen's performance today could only be described with this one word—fabulous. But then, Han Yan also knew that Saint Origin World would lose its peace after today's battle. The news here would reach Saint Origin Palace in no time.

"Ah Yan, you have to hurry back to Eastern Continent and move everyone in Martial Saint Dynasty to Gu Family. And also the people of Nebula Sect. You have to bring them all to Gu Family. I

will head towards Western Domain. The news here will spread to Saint Origin Palace very soon. I fear that they will find my family members when they can't find me," said Jiang Chen to Han Yan. At the same time, he told Han Yan about everything that happened in Gu Palace within the month via divine sense.

"Alright. I'll go to Martial Saint Dynasty now."

Knowing the seriousness of the situation, he wouldn't dare to slow down. He also knew what the consequences of today's battle were. Given the means of Saint Origin Palace, it was incomparably easy for them to investigate the background of Jiang Chen. If Jiang Chen vanished and couldn't be found, probably the higher ups of the six great families would harm his family members to lure him out.

Martial Saint Dynasty was where Jiang Chen grew and also his concern. He wouldn't allow anything to happen in Martial Saint Dynasty as he couldn't bear repercussion of losing them. As such, it was vitally important to settle his worries first before dealing with his enemies.

Considering Han Yan's present means, it was extremely easy and effortless for them to move a dynasty to another location.

Jiang Chen came to Gu Xuantian and said, "Patriarch, I have asked Ah Yan to move Martial Saint Dynasty and Nebula Sect over to Gu Family. I hope Gu Family will ensure their safety."

"Rest assured. No matter how arrogant these people are, they

won't dare to come Gu Family to kill your family." Gu Xuantian said reassuringly.

The major six probably would go to Gu Family but as long as Jiang Chen wasn't in Gu Family, they wouldn't purposely go over there to harm his family. In any case, the major six wouldn't act so shamelessly in this regard.

"Take these seven swords as your present."

Jiang Chen turned his palm and handed over the seven swords he seized from the elder of Desolate Palace to Gu Xuantian. This set of swords could be arranged into a powerful sword formation. Although Jiang Chen didn't know it, he couldn't deny its power. This set of weapons would magnify its role in the hands of Gu Family.

"Well, I won't be polite then."

Gu Xuantian skipped all the formalities; he kept the swords straightaway.

"Jiang Chen, after killing so many higher ups of the major six, I'm afraid the people of Saint Origin Palace will be here soon. What are your plans now?" asked Lang Xingtian.

"It doesn't matter. I have my own plans. I will be long gone at the time they arrive here. I will go to the Western Domain. You all don't have to worry for me."

After he finished speaking, he turned and vanished. He felt very comfortable and relieved when the task of moving the ones close to him to Gu Family was entrusted to Han Yan. This had indeed saved him a lot of troubles and worries.

Currently, he wanted to find his monkish friend. He must complete the task given by Ancestor Greenlotus. The world was heading towards chaos. If Tyrant could grow to a powerful extent, he and Han Yan would become Jiang Chen's right and left hands, they would become Jiang Chen's assistants.

Not long after Jiang Chen left on his way to the Western Domain, he stopped abruptly. "Oh, Xiao Yu is still in the ancient battlefield. This little girl still doesn't know what has happened outside. If she finds out that I was killed, she may do something stupid. The consequences will be unthinkable if she falls into the hands of the major six. I have to make a trip to the ancient battlefield to find out what has happened to her inside there."

Jiang Chen thought of Yan Chenyu all of a sudden. That time, he went into the ancient battlefield with Han Yan and her. Later, they were separated until the ancient battlefield collapsed. But Yan Chenyu didn't come out after that.

According to Jiang Chen's prediction, Yan Chenyu must have encountered a similar situation like Han Yan. She might have encountered a great luck and was absorbing it. But then, even Han Yan who refined the powerful Ancient Devil had come out, so why hadn't she come out from the ancient battlefield yet? Wasn't the time she spent inside considered too long?

Putting aside the possibility that Yan Chenyu fell into his enemy's hands due to her rash actions, the fact that she was still in the ancient battlefield made him worried. Therefore, he had decided to make a trip to the ancient battlefield. He had to find Yan Chenyu first before going to the Western Domain.

In Eastern Continent. The spatial zone of the Inferno Hell had fallen apart, turning from a land of trial to a land of ruins. However, it was still an independent spatial zone that was separated from the outside world.

The ancient battlefield was blew up by the Dragon Phoenix Major Tribulation. The present site had become completely different from the previous overlapping spatial zones. There weren't much spatial zones left. So it wasn't hard to find Yan Chenyu here.

He exerted the Great Soul Derivation Technique, his spiritual energy penetrated into the void and discovered a spatial zone that was a little special from other remaining spatial zones.

The spatial zone was filled with incomparable frostiness. That was the Qi of Supreme Coldness. As Jiang Chen had cultivated the Heavenly Earth Pure Water, he was incomparably sensitive to such coldness.

“Xiao Yu must be in that hidden spatial zone. It looks like she has had a fortuitous encounter. Her Nine Yin Meridian has already begun to transform, directly affecting the Qi of that particular spatial zone.”

A trace of smile was revealed at the corner of his mouth. Anyhow, it was good that he could find Yan Chenyu's location.

Judging from the Qi that permeated from the spatial zone, he was almost certain that it was caused by Yan Chenyu's presence instead of the original environment.

He broke past the spatial barrier with bare hands and stepped into it. A cold wave welcomed his face, sending him a chill down his spine.

The spatial zone was entirely white, even the air was frozen. Every inch of the area was a piece of solid ice. This whole spatial zone had already solidified. Ordinary cultivators who entered here would immediately be turned into an ice pop and lost the ability to walk.

Jiang Chen, however, wasn't affected by it.

His gaze fell upon the front where an ice sculpture was erected. He was able to see the situation inside through the ice sculpture.

Presently, Yan Chenyu was inside the ice sculpture but her form was changing randomly. Sometimes she looked like herself and sometimes she turned into another woman with ferocious face. When that ferocious woman appeared, she would struggle violently causing her pretty face to distort, seeming to have suffered endlessly inside there.

“Profound Ice Beast!”

Jiang Chen exclaimed. He was able to discern that the woman was definitely not a human being but an extremely rare beast—the Profound Ice Beast. After analysing the beast’s Qi, he discovered that this beast had been born 10, 000 years ago. One should know how terrifying a 10, 000 years old Profound Ice Beast was.

With his eyesight, naturally, he could discern what was happening at this moment. It looked like Yan Chenyu encountered a situation similar to that of Han Yan’s. It was unexpected to find a great 10, 000 years old Profound Ice Beast here.

Yan Chenyu had the Nine Yin Meridian. The beast must have wanted to refine and devour Yan Chenyu after meeting her.

But then, it was obvious that its plan had backfired. The beast didn’t expect Yan Chenyu to have condensed the heart of Ice God. That indicated that Yan Chenyu was a high and mighty existence and the true inheritor of Ice God while the Profound Ice Beast was merely a citizen of Ice God.

It was conceivable that when the beast wanted to refine Yan Chenyu, due to the suppression of the heart of Ice God, it was in turn refined by Yan Chenyu. After such a long period of time, the beast had already lost the ability to resist. It was only a matter of time before it was fully refined by Yan Chenyu.

After refining the Profound Ice Beast, Yan Chenyu’s cultivation would improve by leaps and bounds, and would reach a horrifying

level. With the influence of the Nine Yin Meridian, her improvement would be greater. Possibly, she could reach the Fifth Grade Great Saint.

The encounter this time was exceedingly great.

“Brother Chen, give me a hand.”

Yan Chenyu’s voice came from the ice sculpture. Their competition was reaching its final moment and Jiang Chen appearance was too timely. She needed Jiang Chen’s help to completely refine this Profound Ice Beast once and for all.

“No problem!”

Without delay, he circulated his Great Soul Derivation Technique. The powerful spiritual energy turned into an invisible sword of divine sense and pierced through the ice sculpture with a swoosh.

It was the right moment of the Profound Ice Beast manifesting herself. The invisible sword of divine sense stabbed into the spot between the brows with a puff.

“Argh.....”

The beast gave out a mournful cry; its body began to twist and distort, vanishing completely at incredible speed.

That sword of Jiang Chen had thoroughly destroyed the last will and spirit of the Profound Ice Beast causing her to be totally refined by Yan Chenyu.

Chapter 983 - Goodbye Tyrant

Ka Cha.....

When the Profound Ice Beast was refined completely, the ice sculpture began to crack and crumble. Yan Chenyu materialized from the inside. She was currently sitting cross-legged and digesting the last batch of benefits.

Her Qi started to rise. In a matter of minutes, her cultivation rose to the peak of Fourth Grade Great Saint and yet, it still continued, heading towards the Fifth Grade Great Saint.

“This surely is a great encounter. The Ice God’s heart represents the inheritor of Ice God. It looks like Xiao Yu’s cultivation base is going to break through into the Fifth Grade Great Saint and hit the peak of the grade. Given the scariness of her Nine Yin Meridian Physique, not even ordinary Seventh Grade Great Saint is a match for her.”

Jiang Chen was in a very good mood, seeing Yan Chenyu growing so rapidly. He knew very well that Yan Chenyu had been through a lot of hardship along the way. In order to follow him, she, a young girl of Red City, embarked on a difficult and boring path of cultivation. It was all because of her efforts that she managed to obtain such achievements today.

Hua...

Frosty cold Qi was sucked into her body like tidal wave. All the

cold Qi in the spatial zone disappeared; this was the frightening part of her Nine Yin Meridian Physique. Yan Chenyu took a deep breath before she strode towards Jiang Chen for a hug.

“Congratulations on Xiao Yu’s advancement to the Fifth Grade Great Saint.” Jiang Chen said and smile.

“Brother Chen, Xiao Yu would be able to help you fight the enemy from now on.” Yan Chenyu said happily.

“Xiao Yu, there have been a lot of things going on recently. Currently, time is of the essence. I’m relieved after knowing that you are safe. Look ...”

Due to him having very limited time, he told her everything that happened during her absence through divine sense. Xiao Yu gaped in disbelief. When she advanced to the Fifth Grade Great Saint, she initially thought of helping Jiang Chen deal with the six major families of the Pure Land. She didn’t expect that all of them had already been annihilated by Jiang Chen, and now, the matter involved even the Saint Origin Palace.

“What are you going to do, Brother Jiang?” asked Yan Chenyu.

“I am going to the Western Domain first before heading back to Saint Origin Palace. I have already asked Ah Yan to move Martial Saint Dynasty and Nebula Sect to Gu Family. After leaving here, go straight to Gu Family which is the safest place for the time being.” Jiang Chen instructed.

“I see. You have to be careful.”

Yan Chenyu nodded. She always followed whatever Jiang Chen said.

Jiang Chen kissed her on her forehead. This girl was truly sensible. He never have to worry about her because of her sensibility but it also gave him a heartache.

The both of them then parted outside the ancient battlefield. One headed to Gu Family whereas the other went to Western Domain.

Western Domain, Greenlotus Mountain.

This place was still as peaceful as ever. The Great Lightning Tune Temple didn't seek troubles from the master and disciple, acting as if they had already forgotten about their conflict.

During this period of time, Tyrant had been in seclusion, trying to break through into the Great Saint realm. When Jiang Chen arrived, he met Great Master Ran Feng.

“Great Master.”

Jiang Chen clasped his fists at Great Master Ran Feng.

Great Master Ran Feng looked surprised upon seeing Jiang Chen's arrival, then felt overjoyed. “Haha! Little friend, I knew

that you wouldn't die so easily."

Jiang Chen smiled after hearing what Ran Feng said. Despite the fact that Great Master Ran Feng never stepped out of his house, he seemed to know the news of Jiang Chen's death, but he surely didn't know that Jiang Chen had gotten rid of all the higher ups of the six major families today.

"It's been a while, Great Master. You are still as refreshed as always." Jiang Chen said and smiled.

"Little friend's growth has truly shocked this old monk. It was just a period of time, but you have already gotten so far in your cultivation. You are worthy of being called the greatest prodigy."

Great Master Ran Feng couldn't help praising him. These words came from the bottom of his heart. It was the first time that he had ever seen such a peerless genius like Jiang Chen. He had never seen a person that could grow so fast.

"Great Master, did the Great Lightning Tune Temple seek trouble from you all during this period of time?" Jiang Chen asked.

This was the issue that concerned him the most. After all, the relationship between Great Master Ran Feng and the Great Lightning Tune Temple hadn't been good due to him. He wouldn't feel good if Great Master Ran Feng suffered the revenge of Great Lightning Tune Temple.

“There wasn’t any huge troubles but there were constant hiccups.” Great Master Ran Feng shook his head and said.

“It seems like Great Lightning Tune Temple isn’t giving up. Sooner or later, I will annihilate the entire Great Lightning Tune Temple.”

Two beams of cold light shot out from his eyes. Naturally, he understood what Great Master Ran Feng meant by the words ‘constant hiccups’. Great Lightning Tune Temple must have come often to ask for the inheritance of Ancestor Greenlotus, thus disturbing the peace of the master and disciple.

He knew that Great Lightning Tune Temple didn’t cause great trouble to Great Master Ran Feng because they hadn’t obtained the inheritance of Ancestor Greenlotus yet. Once they acquired the inheritance, they wouldn’t hesitate to attack Greenlotus Mountain.

“Where have little friend been during this time?” asked Great Master Ran Feng.

“I’ve entered the Saint Origin Palace with another identity. I got some good news for you. I’ve found Ancestor Greenlotus.”

Jiang Chen said straightforwardly. Over the years, Great Master Ran Feng had been trying very hard to uncover the news of Ancestor Greenlotus and was always worried for his master. Therefore, Jiang Chen must tell Great Master Ran Feng the latest news about Ancestor Greenlotus.

“What?!”

Sure enough, upon hearing that there were some news regarding Ancestor Greenlotus, his emotion was almost stirred up despite his disposition. The news was like a thunderbolt striking on his head. For 100 years, he had spent countless efforts just to get some information about his master. Today, he could finally hear some news about his master. This kind of feeling and excitement could not be understood by ordinary people.

“My master, he... is still alive?” Great Master Ran Feng said, his tone trembling.

“That’s right. Ancestor is still very much alive. It’s just that he has been imprisoned and I can’t save him for the time being, but that day won’t be too far away. There are some things that I can’t tell you yet. What I can tell you is that Ancestor is doing fine and he will still be fine in the future. It won’t be long before you two meet again,” said Jiang Chen.

The fewer the people that knew about the secret of Desolate Palace, the better. Now, not even Desolate Emperor, Heavenly Peng King and the others knew about this. After all, this secret was of great importance.

“Haha! Good, good! Master, it has been 100 years and I knew that you old man didn’t die.”

Great Master Ran Feng turned to look at Ancestor Greenlotus’

statue; two lines of tears trickled down on his face. People said men never dropped tears easily, not to mention, Great Master Ran Feng was a Buddha. This explained how deep the affection between the master and the disciple was, and also how much weight Ancestor Greenlotus was in Great Master Ran Feng's heart.

“Great Master, is Tyrant still in seclusion?” asked Jiang Chen.

“Yes, he is. His current cultivation has already reached the peak of Ninth Grade Minor Saint, only a step away from the Great Saint realm. He is currently making the final break through,” answered Great Master Ran Feng.

If he had any thing that he was so proud of in his life, it would be Tyrant. The relationship of these two were like father and son.

“Great Master, can you call Tyrant now? I don't have much time to explain but there is something that I have to do before I go. Ancestor Greenlotus has entrusted me to hand over something very important to Tyrant. After getting this item, he will immediately advanced to the Great Saint realm. Not only that, his cultivation will also progress by leaps and bounds until he reached a terrifying extent.” Jiang Chen said solemnly.

He wasn't just bragging. A Sarira that consisted of Immortal Soul was priceless and couldn't be measured.

“Alright, I will go and wake him up now.”

Soon after Great Master Ran Feng's voice faded, a tremble was felt in the main hall. Suddenly, a figure appeared. He was no doubt Tyrant.

The instant he appeared, he looked at Jiang Chen with a grin, and then gave Jiang Chen a big bear hug.

“Damn! You are truly a beast. How long has it been? How did you become so powerful?”

The words he spoke didn't portray even the slightest impression of being a monk. He looked exactly like a scumbag from Buddha Sect.

Naturally, Jiang Chen was also delighted to see his brother again. Judging from Tyrant's expression, Great Master Ran Feng didn't tell him about Jiang Chen's death. Otherwise, given his bad temper, he would've gone to the six major families and risk his life, just like what Han Yan did. He wouldn't have stayed here and remained in seclusion.

“Tyrant, cut down the crap. Something big has happened during this period of time. I have found Ancestor Greenlotus...”

Jiang Chen could only compress all the information into the divine sense and transmitted it to Tyrant.

After hearing this, Tyrant's expression was just the same as Yan Chenyu: They were dumbfounded. He wouldn't have thought that

such great events were happening outside during this period of time. More importantly, Ancestor Greenlotus was found, this was the most exciting news for him.

“Sure enough, grandmaster is being held in prison.” Tyrant said, sighing.

Although he hadn't seen his grandmaster before, he had unparalleled admiration for him. Ancestor Greenlotus was the one whom his master worshipped. In his heart, Ancestor Greenlotus was an unparalleled existence.

“Tyrant, this Sarira was given by Ancestor Greenlotus as a gift to you. Refine it well and it will bring you boundless benefits. Inside the Sarira contains the Immortal Soul of Ancestor Greenlotus. I don't need to elaborate how invaluable it is. I will wait for your drastic growth. Soon, Saint Origin World will be in complete chaos. At that time, we will fight side by side.

Jiang Chen took out the Sarira and handed it to Tyrant.

Chapter 984 - The Rage of the Six Palaces

Tyrant's face changed, as if he was struck by a sudden shock. Both of his eyes were fixed on the glittering gold Sarira. He became tensed. Not just him, even Great Master Ran Feng who stood beside him also revealed a similar expression. As a high-ranked monk of Buddha Sect, he knew better than Jiang Chen how powerful and valuable this Sarira is.

“Thank you, Grandmaster.”

Tyrant had become unprecedentedly solemn. He had never been so serious in either his tone or bearing. Slowly, he received the Sarira, feeling that it weighed hundreds of millions of kilogram.

“Kneel.”

Great Master Ran Feng said to Tyrant, “You and Grandmaster hadn't met before but he has already given you such a great gift. This is enough to show that Grandmaster attaches great importance to you. Tyrant, you will have to walk on your path yourself in the times to come. I hope you won't disappoint your Grandmaster and Master. I also hope that one day, you can also be of great help when your Grandmaster gets out of the prison.”

Flop!

Tyrant knelt before the statue of Ancestor Greenlotus, and kowtowed three times. This kind of reverence for someone was beyond the reach of most people. Even if there was no Sarira, it

wouldn't change the unshakable and high position of Ancestor Greenlotus in Tyrant's heart.

Looking at this scene, Jiang Chen felt extremely gratified. For many years, this pair of master and disciple had been guarding Greenlotus Mountain, and were longing for this day to arrive. Today, they finally obtained some news regarding Ancestor Greenlotus. There was no way that they wouldn't be exhilarated.

"Tyrant, train well. I have to return to Saint Origin Palace now. You don't have to worry about Ancestor Greenlotus. He still has a big bargaining chip in his hand. For now, not even Desolate Palace would dare to touch him," said Jiang Chen.

"Little Chen, this old monk can never repay your kindnesses."

Great Master Ran Feng saluted Jiang Chen.

"Don't mention it, Great Master. We have known each other for a long time."

Jiang Chen hastily helped Great Master Ran Feng up from the ground. Ancestor Greenlotus was his good friend in his previous life, and in this life, he and Tyrant became good friends. Naturally, he had a compelling obligation when it came to the matter of Ancestor Greenlotus.

"Little Chen, you have to be careful when you are at Saint Origin Palace. I will try my best to refine the Sarira as soon as possible."

Tyrant stood up and said.

“Alright then, I’m going now.”

Finishing his words, Jiang Chen flashed and vanished.

Much time was spent after making a trip to the ancient battlefield to find Yan Chenyu and settling the affairs in Western Domain. Jiang Chen anticipated that the six palaces must have already known about the news in Saint Origin World, and soon, experts would be sent here to take care of him.

Therefore, he must return to Saint Origin Palace before the experts came hunting for him. His present combat strength wasn’t enough to fight the cultivators of the six major palaces. As such, it was necessary for him to buy some time using the identity of Gu Chen.

The first person he went to see was Gu Xuantian without alerting anyone, and asked him to open the passageway that led straight to Gu Palace.

Just after Jiang Chen left, the experts of the six major palaces arrived in Saint Origin World. Obviously, the first group to appear was experts of Desolate Palace. Jiang Chen had already expected them as with the elder’s fall, his spiritual jade slip was also broken.

There were a total of three cultivators. Two were Eighth Grade Great Saint while one was a Seventh Grade Great Saint.

In Pure Land, the eighth grade of the Great Saint realm was akin to a supreme existence. Such an expert would certainly be admired by countless of people once they appeared.

The three experts returned to Desolate Family. Then, with several Fifth Grade Great Saint elders leading the way, they reached the battlefield outside Desolate City.

They saw the ruined Desolate City and the completely destroyed battlefield. When they saw blood flowing everywhere on the land, their monstrous anger was ignited.

“Bastard, bastard! That damned little beast! No one had ever dared to massacre our people. He is really courting death, he is courting death!”

“Kill him, we must kill him! Quickly search for him! Regardless of where he’s hiding, we must find him!”

“I have collected a trace of Qi left by that little beast. Using the Deduction Law, I will find him.”

The experts of Desolate Palace had truly gotten furious. The Eighth Grade Great Saint collected a trace of Jiang Chen’s Qi to determine his location.

Not long after their arrival, the experts of Dan, Narang, Bin, Shi and Huo palaces emerged. They all had the same cultivation level

—peerless Eighth Grade Great Saint experts. Instantly, after seeing the battlefield, they got infuriated. With so much anger burning inside each of them, it almost burnt part of the void where they stood.

“Elders, you must seek justice for our family. That Jiang Chen is truly too audacious. He has killed so many of our people and almost made us plunged into an irrecoverable state.”

“That’s right elders. It was so tragic and that battle was too dreadful. I must kill Jiang Chen in order to the avenge the dead ones and the insult he gave us.”

“No one has ever dared to do this to our family in years. This is the first time that our patriarch is killed, this is really a disgrace.”

.....

The people of the six major families sobbed, and one by one, they faced the experts of the six major palaces. Thinking back to the scene where Jiang Chen killed their experts gave them chills, and their hatred for him intensified.

“Jiang Chen, it’s Jiang Chen! I have never thought that such a heaven defying person would emerge in Pure Land. We must kill him as soon as possible. Otherwise, he will become an endless trouble.”

“Kill him! There is no doubt about it! He must die, even if he has

run to the very edge of the world.”

“There is still some remains of his Qi. Let’s use the Deduction Law at once to scan the entire Saint Origin World for him. We must scan every corner of this world to find him, and kill him!”

.....

FURY. All the experts of the six major palaces were furious. No one knew how many years had passed since the eight major families in the Pure Land was established, but everyone knew that nothing like this had ever happened. This was no doubt the first time. Not only did the six major families lost their patriarchs, but also their reputation and dignity they had accumulated over the years. Their high and mighty existence had been severely defied.

For a moment, all the Eighth Grade Great Saints had joined together and began their search using the Great Deduction Law. They wanted to explore every corner of the land in Saint Origin World, to find the whereabouts of Jiang Chen.

Gu Palace!

Jiang Chen arrived at Gu Firmament’s place.

“Jiang Chen, I didn’t expect you to create such a big scene after your return. The experts of the six major palaces have already gone to the Pure Land, they should be looking all over the world for you right now. It’s the first time that the patriarchs of the six major

families were killed, obviously, they will never let you go.” Gu Firmament said, sighing.

He did expect Jiang Chen to cause a big scene in the Pure Land, but not as big as this, but from his expression, anyone could tell that he was very satisfied with what Jiang Chen did. Since the world would turn chaotic, why not straightaway throw the entire Pure Land into chaos?

This event told Gu Firmament that Jiang Chen was the true wonder of the world. It was also the first time that a mere Third Grade Great Saint could kill a Seventh Grade Great Saint. Plus, Jiang Chen acted decisively and never hesitated. He killed the six patriarchs of the six major families without hesitation. If Gu Firmament replaced Jiang Chen at that time, he wouldn't have done it.

Gu Firmament told Jiang Chen the latest news in the Pure Land. Even though he was Saint Origin Palace, he knew very well the situation in the Pure Land.

“Of course, if they want to kill me, I will kill them. If the six major palaces would go against me, they will face the same fate.”

Jiang Chen's Qi fluctuated. His act of disregarding the world influenced even Gu Firmament. Gu Firmament could already imagine how unfathomable Jiang Chen would be after he had grown to a certain level.

“Palace Master, you have to send some powerful experts back to

Gu Family to control the situation. I'm afraid that those experts will express their anger on my family and friends which are now in Gu Family if they can't find me. I will only feel relieved if the experts of Gu Palace guard there," said Jiang Chen.

"You don't have to worry about this. I have already sent four Eighth Grade Great Saints back to Gu Family to help suppress the situation. I'm sure the experts of the six palaces won't act at will. You can now be at ease, and just focus cultivating. It is true that you are very strong but the gap between you and the six palaces aren't insignificant," said Gu Firmament.

Jiang Chen nodded. What he lacked right now was strength and power. He had to do all that he could to improve his strength in the shortest time possible. Gu Firmament was a meticulous man. They had the same thoughts, which saved him plenty of troubles.

Pure Land. The experts of the six palaces had been using the Great Deduction Law for two consecutive nights, but unfortunately, they found no trace of Jiang Chen, making them incomparably depressed.

"Damn! This man has just disappeared completely! We can't even feel a bit of his presence even after combining our efforts. Even the Gu Family and Demon Race has no trace of him. Could it be that he has really gotten away?"

"This genius is truly a miracle. He is surely going to be the root of great troubles in the future if he isn't eliminated."

“What are we going to do now? This man has thoroughly disappeared. I want to seek him for revenge, but there is no sign of him at all.”

.....

The experts of the six palaces had gotten very frustrated. They had been angrily casting their Deduction Law here for two days, but still got no results.

“Since he refused to appear, we will kill his families and friends and end nine generations of his family to draw him out.” An Eighth Grade Great Saint of Desolate Palace said violently.

“Agreed. We must have his families and everyone that is close to him killed. Then, we will see whether he will show up at that time.” Someone agreed immediately.

“Elders, I have already done a background check on Jiang Chen. He originated from Eastern Continent. Martial Saint Dynasty is his hometown and his father and friends are currently living there, he also has a close relationship with Nebula Sect.” A Fifth Grade Great Saint elder of Desolate Palace spoke.

Chapter 985 - Having No Sense of Shame

“Go to Eastern Continent at once and bring back everyone who’s close to Jiang Chen in Martial Saint Dynasty.”

An Eighth Grade Great Saint of Desolate Palace issued an order. The present situation was exactly as Jiang Chen expected. The experts wouldn’t give up if they couldn’t find Jiang Chen. They would shift their attention to his family and friends, and use them to prompt his appearance.

However, the experts were destined to be disappointed because Jiang Chen had already made preparations for the matter. Currently all the people of Martial Saint Dynasty were gone. Therefore, they wouldn’t find anyone that was close to Jiang Chen.

The furious elders went to Eastern Continent with haste but soon came back looking annoyed.

“What’s going on?” asked one expert of Desolate Palace with a frown.

“Elder, it seems that Jiang Chen has anticipated our moves. The entire Martial Saint Dynasty disappeared, along with the buildings. That place has turned into a piece of empty land.”

“It’s lucky for him. Such a big sect is left with nothing, not even a single strand of hair. All of them were gone, as if they weren’t there at all. It looks like Jiang Chen had planned well.” Someone

said angrily.

“That kid has a meticulous mind. He is audacious and resourceful. He is going to become a huge threat in the future.”

An expert of the Huo Family couldn't help but sigh. Every one of them could deeply feel Jiang Chen's terrifyingness, not only his talent and strength but also his extraordinary wisdom. Fundamentally, everything was under his control. He would never leave a trace behind and give his opponent the chance to threaten him.

A man like him was undoubtedly terrifying because he had almost no weakness. This made it even more difficult to deal with him.

“Elder, Martial Saint Dynasty and Nebula Kidd must have been moved to Gu Family. In my opinion, let's go directly to Gu Family and get them.”

A Fifth Grade Great Saint elder said.

“That isn't appropriate. After all, our target is Jiang Chen, not their family. If Jiang Chen were to stay in Gu Family, we would attack Gu Family if they didn't comply. However, going there just to seize Jiang Chen's family and friends will affect the dignity and reputation of the six palaces negatively.”

An expert of the Bin Family shook his head.

“We couldn’t care about that anymore. We must get rid of Jiang Chen as soon as possible. We surely can’t give him too many rooms for growth.”

An expert of Desolate Palace shook his head too, then flew towards the Gu Family’s direction. The other experts of five major families followed. They all knew what was at stake and Jiang Chen’s existence was a potential threat.

Now, there wasn’t even a single sign of Jiang Chen despite them using the Deduction Law. At this time, targeting his family was the only way to resolve this issue. In any case, they had to find out about it in Gu Family.

The territory of the Gu Family was vast, even if Martial Saint Dynasty and Nebula Sect were added into the region, it didn’t look congested at all. At this moment, outside the compound of these two sects, a protective layer with brilliance was created by a powerful formation. Gu Xuantian understood the importance of Martial Saint Dynasty to Jiang Chen, so he wouldn’t dare be neglectful of them.

Hong Long.....

In the clear sky tens of thousands of miles, the void was blown up producing a large hole. Outside the territory of the Gu Family, numerous powerful experts came out of the void. Each and every one of these experts was a formidable cultivator. The Qi that exuded from their bodies sent chills to people.

“Look, those people are so strong. They must be the supreme experts of the six major families that come from Saint Origin Palace. They must be here for Jiang Chen.”

“Jiang Chen is not here. It’s useless for them to come.”

“You fool! Jiang Chen has killed so many experts of the six major families, including even the patriarchs. Do you have any idea how humiliating this is to them? It’s true that Jiang Chen isn’t in the Gu Family but his family and friends are here. I suspect that they are probably here for his family. This is really shameless. Trying to harm his family when they failed to kill him? It is simply a disgrace to the six major families.”

“Yeah. If they are really here for Martial Saint Dynasty and Nebula Sect, it will undoubtedly be shameless. However, several powerful figures from Saint Origin Palace have come to the Gu Family. So, I don’t think that the six major families would dare to do anything outrageous.”

.....

The appearance of these experts immediately aroused the attention of everybody in Gu Palace. Many disciples were seeing them for the first time; they began to talk about them. Many could guess the intention of their arrival. They must have come here to take Jiang Chen’s family hostage because they couldn’t find him.

“Gu Xuantian, come out now!”

The leader of Desolate Palace yelled.

Immediately, all the higher ups of the Gu Family flew out. The leader among them wasn't Gu Xuantian but the seven elders with powerful Qi. There were four elders among them whose cultivation were extremely strong. A simple Qi exuded from them made anyone feel pressured. They were the experts of Gu Palace and Eight Grade Great Saints.

“Who’s causing an uproar outside my Gu Family?”

The head of the group said it in a deep and unfriendly tone.

“Gu Laoqi, never thought that you all have come.”

The people of the six major families were dumbfounded when they saw several experts of Saint Origin Palace emerged abruptly. However, after a moment of contemplation, they found that it only make sense. After all, Gu Family had been famous for being a great ally of Jiang Chen. It wasn't surprising to them when Gu Firmament sent experts here to guard the place after learning what had happened in Saint Origin World.

This man was ranked seventh among his peers and was called the seventh elder in Gu Palace. That was why he was named Gu Laoqi*

“I thought it was somebody else. It turns out that it was you, Desolate Wuleng. Are you suggesting that only you all are

permitted to return but we aren't allowed to do so? Gu Family is the very foundation of Gu Palace. It's up to me to decide when I will return and I don't have to ask for Desolate Palace's opinion. Furthermore, the Law Enforcement Palace is now under the control of our people. Saint Origin Palace stipulated that the eight palaces aren't allowed to disturb the peace of the Pure Land. Today, so many of you have come and intruded in my Gu Family. I will need an explanation for you all, ignoring the laws of the Law Enforcement Palace. When I return, I will report this to the palace master and let you all go to the Law Enforcement Palace to receive your respective punishments."

Gu Laoqi sounded very intense, sending them a verbal blow, not giving the intruders any face.

His words slightly made their heads spin because what he said was true. Their current action was in violation of the provisions of Saint Origin Palace. According to the law, Law Enforcement Palace had the right to punish them. What annoyed them more was that the guy who was called Gu Chen was the one who caused them to lose the seat to Gu Palace.

"Gu Laoqi, I suppose you have already known the purpose of us coming here. That Jiang Chen has killed so many of our experts and our patriarchs. Such killings are described as frenzied, treasonous and outrageous. We must seek justice for all the dead ones by killing him. Given the fact that the Gu Family has been a good ally of Jiang Chen all the while, I assumed that he is probably hiding in your family. As long as you hand him over to us, we will leave at once."

Said Desolate Wuleng. In his point of view, the reason they couldn't track Jiang Chen's trace was possibly because he was hiding in the Gu Family. He believed that Gu Laoqi had ways to conceal his Qi if he was here. Of course, these were all just his assumptions

“Jiang Chen isn't in here. You all should go back.”

Said Gu Xuantian.

“We don't believe you. Let's go in and have a search.”

An expert of the Huo Family said.

“That's outrageous! This is the Gu Family. It isn't a place for you to do as you please. When we said that Jiang Chen isn't in our family, that means Jiang Chen isn't here.”

An expert of Gu Palace snapped. This must be a joke. Wouldn't it be shameful for them if they allowed these outsiders to do whatever they wanted in their place?

“If Jiang Chen isn't here, please hand over his family members. This is a grudge between our families and him. I hope that Gu Family won't get involved in this.”

An expert of the Narang Palace said. They all used the Deduction Law during their search but still found no trace of Jiang Chen. It looks like the Gu Family wasn't lying. It was highly possible that

Jiang Chen wasn't here. Otherwise, they would've determined the approximate location of Jiang Chen's whereabouts even if they couldn't accurately locate his position.

Now that Jiang Chen wasn't here, they might as well go straight to the point and told them their real purpose of coming here.

“Haha! Desolate Wuleng, you all are truly a bunch of brazen old men for exploiting people's family. If you have the guts, go find Jiang Chen yourself for revenge. Considering your identities and statues, aren't you all putting your faces to shame by wanting to use a few mortals to threaten someone?”

Gu Laoqi laughed loudly after making fun of them. They were sent by Gu Firmament back here for only one purpose – to protect the family of Jiang Chen.

“Humph! Cut the crap. If you all refuse to hand them over, we will get them ourselves.”

An expert of the Huo Family let out a cold humph.

“Then we'll have to try and see. We didn't initiate this confrontation. If you all choose to strike here, it will be considered as an act of war amongst the eight major families. Can you all afford to bear such consequences?”

Some yelled back. It was a tit-for-tat reply.

“Exactly, the people of the six major families are so shabby that they want to use the family of their opponent to make threats. Such revolting pretense is truly beyond shamelessness.”

At this time, a voice sounded from a far distance. Three powerful Eighth Grade Great Saints emerged. With a casual move, their bodies exuded an overwhelming demon Qi that looked almost tangible, so powerful that numerous of people didn't dare stare directly at them.

“Dammit! The people of the Demon Palace is also involved in this.”

Desolate Wuleng couldn't help but swore. Today, it seemed like impossible to take Jiang Chen's family away. Putting aside the fact that their action would be unfavorable to their face, with so many Eighth Grade Great Saint experts of Gu Palace and Demon Palace here, they would never get what they wanted.

The six major families didn't expect that the experts of Gu Palace and Demon Palace to be here. They initially intended to come here and seized Jiang Chen's family away with force, but both Gu Palace and Demon Palace had already made preparations for their arrival.

*Qi stands for seven and Lao stands for old.

Chapter 986 - The Chaos in Western Domain

The situation intensified. To the experts of the six major palaces, personally demanding for Jiang Chen's family was already a very shameless practice on itself. If they struck at their opponents because of this shameless demand, they would truly put the faces of the six major palaces to shame.

What was more important was that there were so many Eighth Grade Great Saints guarding here. If a battle really started, they wouldn't be able to gain the upper hand and would probably leave a stink for ten thousand years. After all, Gu Family was hiding the family members of Jiang Chen not Jiang Chen himself.

There was one more important thing. Currently, the Law Enforcement Palace was no longer in Desolate Palace's control but in Gu Palace instead. Therefore, despite the fact that they were the experts of Desolate Palace, they wouldn't dare act indiscriminately.

“What should we do now?”

Asked an expert of Shi Palace.

“What else can we do? They have already made adequate preparations. Even if the fight was started, we didn't have a reasonable excuse. If we did it by force, we might not be able to get what we wanted and instead, gave them an excuse to attack us. Now that the Law Enforcement Palace is in the control of Gu Palace and Demon Palace, we should hurry back to Saint Origin Palace. I don't think that Jiang Chen can hide for so long.”

Said Desolate Wuleng. The rest also nodded in agreement. Today, their plan to use Jiang Chen's family to threaten him had failed, and Jiang Chen wasn't found yet. So, it was pointless for them to continue staying here. They might as well return to Saint Origin Palace and find out more about Jiang Chen's whereabouts.

“Gu Family, Demon Race, your efforts of defending Jiang Chen is going against the six major families. You two families won't have a good end.”

Before Desolate Wuleng left, he said ruthlessly.

“We don't need you to worry about it.”

Gu Laoqi waved his sleeve, motioned for Desolate Wuleng to scam.

In the next few days, Saint Origin Palace wasn't able to find its peace, especially in the six major palaces. They were utterly agitated. The big incident that happened in the Pure Land had already spread all over the entire Saint Origin Palace and Jiang Chen's name swept through every corner, like a whirlwind, causing innumerable clamours and shock.

“Who the hell is that Jiang Chen? Why haven't we heard of him before?”

“Damn! That bastard has actually killed so many of our people?

That's a tremendous shame. We have to find him and get rid of him."

"The six patriarch of the six families were killed. Nothing like this has ever happened. I can't believe that such an insane person has appeared in the Pure Land."

"I know that man. He has killed many experts of the six major families in the ancient battlefield. Then, he was killed by the joint attack of the six patriarchs, but no one thought that he was still alive. This man is a rare genius that hardly appear in ten thousand years. He will surely become the source of a great disaster if he isn't eliminated."

.....

Everyone was so immersed in their own discussions. None among the six major palaces weren't gnashing their teeth. It was truly detestable. Their hatred was higher than the sky and deeper than the ocean. The previous battle in the ancient battlefield that was insignificant to Saint Origin Palace had now caught their attention, making Jiang Chen a celebrity.

However, they still couldn't find Jiang Chen, giving them no chance to take their revenge. In these few days, the palace masters of the six major palaces personally conduct the search but found nothing about Jiang Chen, as though he didn't exist at all.

Of course, it would be a miracle if they were able to find him now, as Jiang Chen was currently inside the Ancestral Dragon

Pagoda, which completely isolated him from the outside world. Therefore, no one would be able to find him. Plus, he cultivated the dragon transformation skill and proficient in Great Soul Derivation Technique. If he made the effort to conceal himself, you wouldn't discover his presence, even if he was standing right in front of you.

A troublesome man called Gu Chen had appeared in Saint Origin Palace while another wild man named Jiang Chen had emerged in the Pure Land. A new wave arose just as the previous one had barely subsided. Saint Origin World had existed for so long and these two outstanding talents emerged out of nowhere all of a sudden. However, no one from the major six palaces was able to link the two together. Who would have thought that Jiang Chen and Gu Chen would be the exact same person?

During these days, Jiang Chen had been enclosed in the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda. The pagoda was a sacred treasure. There were still many wonderful uses of the pagoda waiting for him to discover, but given his current circumstance, it was very difficult for him to explore the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda. Cultivation was one thing while the levels of the pagoda was another. Compared to the maximum level of the pagoda, three levels is really too weak. Many of its functions couldn't be used yet, let alone explore their uses.

A few days later, war drums reverberated in the sky of Saint Origin Palace. This wasn't coming from Gu Palace. It was from the Law Enforcement Palace. At this critical juncture, the Law Enforcement Place would represent Saint Origin Palace and command the eight major palaces.

“What’s going on? I have never heard drums like this in Saint Origin Palace. However, drum beats usually indicates that a crisis is about to happen.”

He kept the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda and walked out of the courtyard. The second he appeared, Gu Liufeng and Gu Liuying were just outside the courtyard seemingly looking for him. Beside them was another young genius named Gu Shuangtan, the one who engaged in a tit-for-tat with Desolate Palace in the Refining Tower. He already had a terrifying cultivation– Sixth Grade Great Saint.

“Little Chen, you have come out from your seclusion.”

Seeing Jiang Chen walking out, Gu Liufeng quickly greeted,

“En, greet brother Gu.”

Jiang Chen clasped his fists at Gu Shuangtan.

“There is no need for formalities. We are family. Besides, Gu Chen, you are now a great meritorious disciple of Gu Palace.”

Said Gu Shuangtan with a smile. Despite his status, he still used a polite tone while speaking to Jiang Chen and wouldn’t dare be neglectful. He was very clear that although his cultivation base was stronger and higher than Jiang Chen’s, his innate talent wasn’t even half of Jiang Chen’s. It was only a matter of time for Jiang Chen catch up to him or even surpass him.

“Brother Gu is overly polite. By the way, what was that sound of the drum about?”

Asked Jiang Chen.

“That is the war drum of the Law Enforcement Palace. In Saint Origin Palace, any critical issue will be directed by the Law Enforcement Palace. I heard that it’s the chaos in Western Domain. The Great Lightning Tune Temple is sending a distress signal to us.”

Said Gu Shuangtan.

“Is it because of the rebellion of the Devil World?”

Jiang Chen looked startled to learn that there was an upheaval in Western Domain. It had to be the rebellion of the devils in the Devil World; if The Great Lightning Tune Temple was seeking help from Saint Origin Palace.

“You are right. The Devil World is the converging spot of the Devil Race. After years of recuperation, they are now making a comeback, wanting to dominate the Western Domain. As the Buddha Sect in Great Lightning Tune Temple was declining, it was no longer possible for them to defend the invasion of the devil armies. The eight major families of the Pure Land has joined the battle but due to the many experts of the six major families being killed by a person named Jiang Chen, their overall strength has dropped drastically. Those devils have become strong and

overbearing after their recuperation. Only Saint Origin Palace has the capability to suppress the devil army now. Therefore, the Law Enforcement Palace has sounded the war drum, probably to command us to remove the devil army in Western Domain. You know, although there are numerous geniuses in Saint Origin Palace, most of them had luxurious lives, only very little of them has experience life-and-death trial. So, this task is certainly a very good chance for them to experience the trial. The eight palaces hoped that their disciples would be able to participate in the war, to help remove the devils.”

Said Gu Shuangtan.

“So that’s what it is all about. The Devil Race is able to multiply very quickly. After so many years of recuperation, and given the fact that Buddha Sect was declining day after day, they naturally couldn’t resist the wild attacks of the Devil race. Plus, there is a powerful Ninth Grade Devil Saint in the Devil World. If Saint Origin Palace doesn’t interfere, not just Western Domain, the entire Saint Origin World will soon fall into the enemy’s hands.”

Said Jiang Chen. The rebellion of the Devil Race was within his predictions. He had entered the Devil World several times and could sense the growing strength of the Devil Race. In the history of Saint Origin World, human cultivators had been in innumerable wars with the Devil Race, but they were unable to thoroughly eliminate them.

If the weeds were not uprooted, they would grow again during spring. It was absolutely not an easy task to completely destroy the obstinate Devil Race.

“Little Chen, we have already prepared to kill the devils in Western Domain, would you like to come with us?”

Asked Gu Liufeng.

“Of course, how can I be excluded from such an event?”

Jiang Chen's Qi fluctuated. In fact, he was worrying how to further improve his cultivation but now, the devil race has just become his biggest prey. Not only did they exist in large numbers, their physiques and essence were also strong. These could undeniably improve his cultivation and help condense more levels in the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda.

The reason why Jiang Chen didn't begin a massacre in the Devil World was because there were a few truly powerful Devil Saints that existed in it. If he continued his massacre in that place, he would draw the attention of those formidable Devil Saints, which would be very unfavourable to him.

The current situation however was different. The devils were no longer in the Devil World. All of them had gone to invade the Western Domain and the experts of Saint Origin Palace were needed to take action. Naturally, those very powerful Devil Saints would be dealt with by those powerful Great Saints. The senior experts of Saint Origin Palace wouldn't allow the Devil Saints to massacre their geniuses.

This way, it had created a very favourable condition for Jiang

Chen. The battlefield of the devils would become his advantage. With the Edifying Light and Ancestral Dragon Pagoda, he was the absolute nemesis of the devils.

In other words, the chaos in Western Domain had created a golden opportunity for him. As such, he needed to grasp it properly.

“Alright, let’s head over to the Law Enforcement Palace to have a look. There should be a lot of people going to the trial in Western Domain this time.”

Said Gu Shuangtan.

Subsequently, a group of people flew towards the Law Enforcement Palace. By the time they arrived, there were already plenty of people gathered in the square. They were the Great Saint experts from the eight major palaces. The rebellion of the devils was a crisis and needed the participation of Saint Origin Palace. Whether or not they would be needed in the battlefield or not, they would know it once they arrived at the scene.

The instant Jiang Chen and the others appeared in the square, a pair of gaze fell upon his body, like a chilling sharp sword, making him feel extremely uncomfortable.

When he turned, he saw an Eighth Grade Great Saint elder from Desolate Palace camp glaring at him. This man was the one who wanted to exploit Jiang Chen’s family several days ago; he was Desolate Wuleng.

Chapter 987 - Doubts About the Identity

Jiang Chen frowned as the man's eyes made him feel very uncomfortable, however he was sure that he hadn't seen this man before. He hadn't seen any experts from Desolate Palace besides Desolate Emperor and a few elders in the Law Enforcement Palace.

“Little beast, so here you are!”

Desolate Wuleng's voice exploded abruptly followed by a palm as large as the sky that lunged towards Jiang Chen from above. This had certainly shocked everyone.

“Unbridled.”

A shout was heard from Gu Palace's camp. Then, an Eighth Grade Great Saint similarly struck out an attack, colliding with Desolate Wuleng's and setting off a stormy wave. From the beginning till the end of that strike, Jiang Chen's facial expression had been indifferent and his pace didn't even slow down in the slightest bit. It was the confidence that came from the depths of his heart, and not just a pretense.

The sounding of the war drum in the Law Enforcement Palace today was originally intended to send reinforcements to Western Domain. No one had ever expected that something like this would happen. Many pair of eyes shifted to Desolate Wuleng. Anger surfaced on the faces of Gu Palace's experts. It was too shameful when a high rank senior like Desolate Wuleng made a sneak-attack on their descendant.

In outsiders' view, Desolate Wuleng launched the strike at Jiang Chen mainly because he had been nursing a grudge against Jiang Chen regarding the matter of the Law Enforcement Palace. He detested Jiang Chen for killing the geniuses of Desolate Palace and making Desolate Emperor lose the seat of the Law Enforcement Palace master.

However, even if he hated Jiang Chen very much, you couldn't just ignore his status. It was no doubt shameful, a highly respectable Eighth Grade Great Saint elder, attacking a Third Grade Great Saint junior in the presence of so many people.

“Desolate Wuleng, are you mad?! Why did you attack the genius of Gu Palace abruptly?”

The elder of Gu Palace who defended Jiang Chen clamoured, Desolate Palace had crossed the line. Besides, Desolate Palace wasn't in control of the Law Enforcement Palace anymore. Even if they controlled the majority, they couldn't commit such an outrageous act.

“I can sense a familiar Qi from his body. He isn't Gu Chen, he is Jiang Chen. The one who killed the six patriarchs of the six major families.”

Said Desolate Wuleng loudly.

His words instantly aroused thousands of waves. Everyone was shocked as soon as Desolate Wuleng's voice dropped and turned

over to look at Jiang Chen, particularly the people of the six major palaces. Their expressions changed; they now carried a trace of killing intent. However, a lot of them still had doubts, even though both Gu Chen and Jiang Chen had 'Chen' at the back of their names, it didn't indicate that they were the same individual. Without proof, it was hard to convince them. Moreover, it was well known that Desolate Palace bore a deep grudge against Gu Chen. They wanted to eat him alive so bad. Therefore, it was inevitable that Desolate Wuleng would use such a way to frame up Gu Chen.

“Haha! This is really making me laugh. Desolate Wuleng, although your Desolate Palace hated Gu Chen very much, you should find a better excuse other than this. Gu Chen has been practicing in Gu Palace during these days and has never moved even half a step away from Gu Palace. Are you suggesting that every genius who has 'Chen' at the back of their name is Jiang Chen? I understand that you all are very upset after losing the seat in Law Enforcement Palace, but you still have to think of your own status and identity. I can enforce the law on you for attempting to assault our palace's genius and accused him of committing mass murder publicly.”

Gu Firmament laughed loudly. He didn't expect to see such a change. He naturally could see that it must be Jiang Chen who had left traces of his Qi in the battlefield and was discovered by Desolate Wuleng. Even though Gu Chen had a different appearance than Jiang Chen, his Qi remained the same. Therefore, it was logical that Desolate Wuleng could discern his camouflage.

However, Gu Firmament was now the palace master of Law Enforcement Palace and the overlord of Gu Palace. Naturally, he

couldn't expose Jiang Chen's identity, or else, the experts of the six palaces would all lunge at Jiang Chen. One should know that the things that Jiang Chen did in the Pure Land was enough to drive the six major palaces mad.

Luckily, there was an irreparable conflict between Jiang Chen and Desolate Palace. The incident in the Law Enforcement Palace had made Desolate Emperor lost his seat and his face; everyone knew about this. As such, when Desolate Wuleng claimed that Gu Chen was guilty in the absence of evidence, this could be viewed as his deliberate act to fabricate an excuse for revenge.

“Are you sure that you aren't mistaken?”

Desolate Emperor ignored Gu Firmament, and turned over to Desolate Wuleng.

Desolate Wuleng frowned. In fact, he wasn't so sure in his heart because the battle was long over by the moment he arrived. There was merely a faint trace of Jiang Chen's Qi left. Also, Jiang Chen and Gu Chen were both monstrous rank geniuses, it wasn't very surprising if both of them had a slight similarity in their Qi. Furthermore, when he saw Gu Chen's indifferent and resolute look, it made him even more uncertain in his claim.

One should know that as young as Jiang Chen and if Gu Chen was Jiang Chen, he would've acted very unnaturally once his cover was blown. However, this Gu Chen in front of him was very composed from the start until now. Such composure definitely wasn't fake.

There was one more thing, if Jiang Chen was really hiding in Saint Origin Palace. They would've been able to locate him during these past few days.

“Desolate Elder, I advise you and the six major palaces to conduct a thorough investigation with the elders in the Pure Land to conclude whether I am that Jiang Chen you mentioned. If you all are distorting the truth just to slander me, I'm not going to be polite to you all.”

Jiang Chen warned.

Quite many of the experts of the other five major palaces hasn't arrived yet, leaving mostly the experts of Desolate Palace here. They were now analyzing Gu Chen carefully. However, due to the fact that they had collected only minimal amount of Jiang Chen's Qi, they virtually couldn't sense anything from him at all.

As a matter of fact, Jiang Chen had secretly circulated the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda and began changing his Qi. So, they naturally couldn't discern the similarity in his Qi.

“I suspect that he is Jiang Chen and I have basis for that.”

Said Desolate Wuleng.

“Oh? I wonder what basis Desolate Elder has.”

Jiang Chen looked at him, intrigued.

“If I’m not mistaken, your current cultivation base should be Third Grade Great Saint while the Jiang Chen’s was also a Third Grade Great Saint. When you were at the Second Grade Great Saint, you were able to kill our Fourth Grade Great Saint genius. That Jiang Chen was able to kill our Seventh Grade Great Saint elder with his Third Grade Great Saint’s strength. There can’t be two heaven defying geniuses emerging under the heavens at exactly the same time. Besides, we have investigated your background. You have come to Gu Palace claiming that you are the adopted son of Gu Xuantian. However, Gu Family never had someone named Gu Chen until you appeared out of nowhere. It just so happened that Jiang Chen was also closely related to Gu Family. As such, I couldn’t help but suspect Gu Chen’s real identity.”

Said Desolate Wuleng. This happened after the incident in the Law Enforcement Palace, they didn’t forget to do a background check on Gu Chen.

It was undeniable that Desolate Wuleng’s word created some influences. Putting aside the fact that Gu Chen appeared out of nowhere, both Gu Chen and Jiang Chen were exceedingly heaven defying. The fact that these two figures appeared almost at the same time and were close to Gu Family, it prompted everyone into suspecting that these two were the same person.

“This is a joke. Desolate Wuleng. Is this what you called proof? It’s all baseless speculation. You are trying to vilify the genius of our palace. I will not let this matter slip past. During these days, Gu Chen has been in Gu Palace. There was no way that he could kill those six patriarchs. Now, I will invoke the authority of the

Law Enforcement Palace master to punish you for your slanderous act.”

Gu Firmament’s Qi shook. It seemed like he was about to strike Desolate Wuleng directly. As he was now the palace master of the Law Enforcement Palace, he had all the right to be authoritative. He knew in his heart that Jiang Chen and Gu Chen were and the same, but as long as Desolate Wuleng failed to produce any evidence, whatever he claimed would be treated as slanderous act and the person who committed this crime would be punished.

“Brother Gu, can you put this matter aside for me? Now that Western Domain is in chaos and a great enemy is ahead of us, we should never start a fight amongst ourselves. It’s imperative that we go to Western Domain immediately and rescue them now.”

Said Desolate Emperor. Only God knew how depressing and frustrating it was for him to blurt out such words; the position that Gu Firmament have right now was supposed to be his. If he was the palace master, he would’ve immediately captured Gu Chen and interrogate him through torture, however, the only thing that he could do now was to lower his head.

“Alright, I will give you face this time. I know that Desolate Palace’s aren’t convinced after losing the seat of palace master in the Law Enforcement Palace, but don’t frame my people because of that. Gu Palace isn’t for you to bully as you please.”

Gu Firmament darted a cold glance at Desolate Emperor, feeling indescribable exhilaration in his heart. This was a scene that he had dreamed of for so many times.

Desolate Wuleng seemed as if he still had something to say but he was stopped by Desolate Emperor's glare.

Gu Firmament glanced around the square. When he saw that most of the people were here, he said, "I believe you all have already heard about the chaos in Western Domain. The sound of the war drum represents war. In the history of Saint Origin World, we have fought countless of battles with the Devil Race. Today, they have regained their strength and war is just ahead of us. Western Domain has become the main battlefield. The high rank monks of the Great Lightning Tune Temple is gradually losing their strength to defend. This war is going to be a rare opportunity for the young ones. After this, all the spatial passageways of eight major palaces that were directly connected to the Pure Land will be opened."

Gu Firmament's voice echoed loudly across the air. As his voice faded, another war between the Saint Origin World and the Devil Race began.

Subsequently, all the experts and geniuses had returned to their palaces. Using the spatial passageway in their own palaces, they returned to the Pure Land, then headed to Western Domain. This time, the scale of war was huge. For so long that the Devil Race had recuperated in their world, they had become very ferocious and aggressive. On the other hand, Saint Origin Palace also had numerous geniuses and experts. Those young geniuses in particular couldn't wait to join in the war against the devils, they were severely lacking the experience of such trials.

As far as Jiang Chen was concerned, what he had to deal with in this war wasn't only the devils, but also the experts of the six major palaces. He knew very well that Desolate Palace had paid serious attention to him, and even suspected him.

Chapter 988 - Gaining Prestige for Gu Family

Each spatial passageway in the eight major palaces opened simultaneously. The first batch of gifted disciples immediately surged into it. The higher ups had already given the orders that whoever did well in this war, whoever had the most kills would be rewarded handsomely.

This excited the geniuses who had longed for a trial even more. They had the urge to rush into the Western Domain and eradicate the entire devil army.

Jiang Chen wasn't excluded from the group. He, Gu Shuangtan and the rest of Gu Palace's geniuses went into the spatial passageway in Gu Palace.

Desolate Palace!

“Are you sure that brat is Jiang Chen?”

Desolate Emperor sounded grim while his eyes stared at Desolate Wuleng unblinkingly.

“I'm not too sure about it, but I sensed a familiar Qi from him the instant he appeared. It was similar to the residual Qi left by Jiang Chen in the battlefield, but because it was merely a faint trace, I wouldn't dare confirm it.”

Desolate Wuleng shook his head.

“In any case, this brat is disastrous. Whether he is Jiang Chen or Gu Chen, we must find a way to get rid of him. Presently, the Law Enforcement Palace’s seat is occupied by Gu Firmament. What you did just now was too reckless, but an opportunity has presented itself in front of us, that brat has already gone to Western Domain.”

Desolate Emperor’s face was cold.

“Palace master, are you going to kill him yourself?”

Desolate Wuleng’s eyes sparkled.

“He’s just a puny brat and doesn’t require my interference. There has to be someone among the geniuses who can eliminate him. Well, I am joining the war this time to suppress the ‘super’ Devil Saints; Saint Origin Palace intends to provide a chance for the geniuses to experience a cruel trial in the war. I will be watching the movements of the ‘super’ Devil Saints and keep them out of the battlefield. At that time, the whole battlefield would be yours.”

Said Desolate Emperor.

“Rest assured, palace master. No matter what happens, we’ll not let that brat return alive this time.”

Desolate Wuleng ground his teeth. In his heart, both Jiang Chen

and Gu Chen were his enemies, and they must die. It was needless to say about Jiang Chen because the conflict between him and Desolate Family had become irreparable. Comparably, Gu Chen had dealt considerable damage to Desolate Palace not long after arriving at Saint Origin Palace. Not only had he killed a few geniuses of Desolate Palace, but also made Desolate Palace lose face. More importantly, the potential Gu Chen had was too great; he would surely become an enormous threat to Desolate Palace in the future. Regardless of which aspect they looked this matter up, it was necessary to get rid of him.

.....

In Pure Land, Gu Family.

A large batch of Saint Origin Palace's geniuses had arrived. Their arrival inflated the void with their Qi. They were greeted by the elders of Gu Family and directed them to Western Domain without stopping.

Jiang Chen didn't hurry to the battlefield. He went to see Gu Xuantian instead. As the patriarch and the leader of Gu Family, naturally, he was required to stay and guard for Gu Family.

“Patriarch, what's the status in Western Domain?”

Asked Jiang Chen.

“The Devil Race ran a riot and attacked the domain. The

circumstances is very intense. Many experts from the eight major families were sent to support them, but the Devil Race was still invading fiercely. Most of the regions in the domain had fallen into their hands within a short period of time. Despite having a Seventh Grade Great Saint from the Great Lightning Tune Temple guarding there and the special abilities and magical treasures of Buddha Sect that could suppress the devils, they were on the losing end. If it wasn't for the several Eighth Grade Great Saints that came from Gu Palace, the entire domain would've been devoured."

Gu Xuantian sighed, but according to the history of Saint Origin World, the war with the Devil Race would lead to severe outcome every time.

"I can already feel the situation in Western Domain. As far as I'm concerned, this is an excellent opportunity. I will now head to Western Domain and enter the battlefield. The world would surely become chaotic whenever the Devil Race rampages. Even the eight major families will find it difficult to survive through this ordeal. As such, I will entrust my family to you, patriarch."

Said Jiang Chen.

"This is the very foundation of the Gu Family and I won't allow anyone to come over and trample us. Han Yan and Yan Chenyu have already gone to Western Domain. The chaos caused by the devil race this time has brought in plenty of major powers including your enemies. In this trip to Western Domain, you will not only face the devil army but also the vengeance of your enemies. You've got to be careful. You have reached the point which is beyond my capability to help."

Gu Xuantian patted Jiang Chen's shoulder. Presently, Jiang Chen had grown beyond the limits of Gu Xuantian. His strength and wisdom would suffice to confront everything alone.

howl... *howl...*

Every corner in the vast Western Domain was occupied by the enemy. Angry howls of the devils could be heard everywhere. Boundless devil waves filled every spot of the domain. The war had already spread to a few million miles. The peaks of the mountain had collapsed and the land were crowded with devils, and lives were destroyed.

The nature of the devils was originally very ferocious. The exit of the Devil World had been fully opened and the Great Lightning Tune Temple was gradually losing their defenses. It only took two days for the devil army to dominate the entire Western Domain. Currently, corpses were lying all over the ground. Countless of human cultivators died tragically in the battlefield.

Killings were happening everywhere and powerful devils were seen in every place. The intervention of the eight major families didn't alleviate the intensity of the war, not until the emergence of Saint Origin Palace's experts.

There was a city at the edge of Western Domain. They weren't exempted from the invasion though. About a hundred miles above the city was packed with devils. Looking below, there was a man who looked thirty-years old or so, leading a large number of

cultivators to fight the devils with everything they've got.

“Argh...” “Argh...” “Argh...”

However, these cultivators' cultivation were just too weak. Lots of them were Combat King, some were Combat Soul, a dozen of Combat Emperors and only one Minor Saint expert, whereas the number of the devils were still increasing, and the ones that were coming were becoming more and more powerful. At the moment, three Third Grade Minor Saint devils appeared in the sky.

Despair was plastered on everyone's face. That middle-aged leader was the City Lord. He too had become desperate and lost his hope.

“City Lord, what shall we do? We're finished this time. The devils are too strong.”

Someone screamed.

“Don't be afraid, everyone. I have already sent a distressed signal to the Great Lightning Tune Temple.”

The City Lord replied loudly, comforting everyone.

“City Lord, stop dreaming. The current Great Lightning Tune Temple is no longer the previous Great Lightning Tune Temple. They can't even protect themselves, let alone save us. It's over.”

An old man roared as his eyes turned bloodshot. They had been waiting for the high-rank monks to come to their rescue, but unfortunately, none had come and their people were dying unceasingly.

The people who survived had already lost their hope for the monks to rescue them. The present Great Lightning Tune Temple was no longer the sacred Buddha Sect that could defend against the devils and save innocent lives, which was originally the purpose of their existence. Despite the fact that they were losing their defenses, it wasn't hard for them to send one or two high-rank monks to other cities and regions to rescue the people there.

While it was true that the Great Lightning Tune Temple was only guarding their temple, it was also true that they didn't intend to rescue the others. Even the experts of the eight major families had already entered directly into the main battlefield, at the center of Western Domain. None had paid any attention and care to these poor cultivators.

Jie... *Jie...*

The commander of the devil army was thirty meters large. Looking at the people below, he continuously let out a sinister laugh. He stuck out his red tongue, his cold eyes could shiver people's soul.

The devil army was ready to conduct a massacre. The people below them were just delicious prey. They had yearned for human

blood for far too long in the Devil World.

“It’s over.”

The people below felt so hopeless, even the City Lord no longer tried to comfort himself and the others. Today, they were all destined to die.

“Humph!”

At this second, a cold humph rang like a thunder from the sky. Immediately after that, a brilliant palm the size of ten miles radiated rays of golden light, instantly blowing away the overwhelming devil Qi from the sky.

Hong Long.....

The large palm carried an unknown weight and fell onto the army of devils.

“Argh.....” “Argh.....”

Numerous miserable screams were heard. The three Third Grade Great Saints had been pulverized into nothingness, without leaving any remains. The palm strike had slapped at least dozens of devils to death.

Crash.....

Subsequently, another ray of golden light radiated. It was as if this light could blow away the darkness. It enshrouded all the devils above the city and instantly, they were torn apart, leaving nothing behind.

The city that was filled with gloomy Qi speedily recovered its brightness as soon as all the devil Qi vanished. At least more than a thousand devils were killed at that moment.

The cultivators of the city were dumbfounded, standing rooted to where they were. They couldn't believe what they were seeing. The abrupt excitement that came after the crisis was beyond their imagination.

A youth in white clothes appeared in the sky. He was no stranger. He was no doubt Jiang Chen, but had the appearance of Gu Chen.

“Thank goodness that you have come to our aid. May I ask for your name?”

The City Lord was the first to regain his senses. He saluted deeply at Jiang Chen.

“I am Gu Chen of Gu Family. Why hasn't the high-rank monks of the Great Lightning Tune Temple come to rescue you all?”

Jiang Chen frowned. Judging from the seriousness and intensity of the battle here, Great Lightning Tune Temple should've send

some reinforcement to rescue the city.

“I’m afraid that the Great Lightning Tune Temple can’t even protect themselves.”

Sighed the City Lord.

“Alright. I know. The current Great Lightning Tune Temple is no longer the sacred Buddha Sect like before. This city is no doubt remote from the main battlefield, but this shouldn’t be a reason for them to overlook you all. Every other expert who went to the battlefield only did so for their own benefits, but we, the people of Gu Family has come to save lives. Today, I have saved you all and will continue to rescue the other cities. You all should flee to a safer place.”

Said Jiang Chen. The situation in the war with the Devil Race was in Gu Family’s favor. He was going to take this opportunity to gain prestige and gather support from the people and used it against Desolate Palace in the future. It was necessary for the people to know that the Gu Family is the lord of the Heaven and Earth.

Chapter 989 - One Man to Defend Against All

In order to make the best use of his time, he turned into a ray of light and vanished without any delay. No one in the city found out that the residual essence of the devils had vanished the instant Jiang Chen departed. As far as the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda was concerned, these were nourishments. Although the cultivation base of these devils were too low in comparison to Jiang Chen, there was an immense number of them. As such, he was going to make good use of his pagoda-absorber.

The cultivators who had been rescued bowed in succession to the direction where Jiang Chen left. They would remember his kindness for as long as they lived. Gu Family gained their hearts instantly despite them believing in Buddha and worshipping the Great Lightning Tune Temple.

Today, the one who saved them from the dire distress wasn't anyone from the Great Lightning Tune Temple but in fact the genius of Gu Family.

"Going to war with the Devil Race is a matter of the world. However, Gu Family is the only one who fought for the sake of the world." The city lord sighed.

"City Lord, what do we do now? Are we going to run for our lives?" Someone asked.

"If you want to run for your lives, do it yourself. I will never flee.

I have lost my home and those closest to me. If I can't kill devils while I am still alive, I'm no different to a walking corpse."

"Yeah! I won't run as well. Let's go to the other battlefield and kill some devils. Now, every place in the Western Domain has turned into a battlefield and devils are everywhere. We have to do our part when we are still alive."

.....

A thrill of excitement surged through them. Their eyes had turned blood red while looking at the ruined homes and the battered corpses. Even if they were still alive, they felt as if their heart was bleeding. The war was too cruel; the devils were born to eliminate the human race. Did they really want to run away after being rescued by Jiang Chen?

"Alright. We'll head towards the other battlefield to eliminate devils and to safeguard our home."

The city lord's Qi roared, as he led the remaining cultivators towards a certain direction.

Jiang Chen wasn't in a hurry to enter the main battlefield. He had to build a reputation for Gu Family first because he clearly knew that even though the war against the Devil Race was happening only in the Western Domain, it would influence the entire human race, which was an opportunity for Gu Family to shoot to fame.

Although the Western Domain was smallest amongst the eight major domains, its surrounding area was a few dozen million mile large. It was abounded with big and small cities. For the peripheral city like the one rescued by Jiang Chen previously, there were thousands of them.

In fact, these cities weren't the main battlefield but they were no doubt facing their doomsday. Some cultivators had fled the moment the devils attacked while others remained and engaged in an intense battle with the devils.

Without the reinforcement from Great Lighting Tune Temple and the help of the eight major families in Pure Land, they could only let the battle run its course. At this time, a young man in white clothes that looked like the Saviour stepped through the void flying across cities on the outskirts of Western Domain. Every city he passed was accompanied by innumerable wails and countless deaths.

The devils on the outskirts were too weak. To Jiang Chen, a casual blow of air from his mouth was enough to eradicate them and it was absolutely effortless. These gusts of winds had made him and Gu Family famous. His name, Gu Chen, began to spread rapidly in the Western Domain. Indirectly, Gu Family's reputation had surpassed Great Lightning Tune Temple's.

While Jiang Chen was massacring the devils, many Minor Saint geniuses of the eight major families had emerged. This time, they had entered the battlefields in the outskirts and helped the cities from being invaded.

At the beginning of the war, the devils' attacks were fierce and wild. Not only they were extremely numerous, but there were also a lot of powerful Devil Saints that constantly kept Great Lightning Tune Temple occupied. The six major families of Pure Land were still in distress after the event of their patriarchs and their Sixth Grade Great Saint elders being killed. Thus, in addition to the fact that the experts of Saint Origin Palace were present and with their low morale, they wouldn't dare to send their geniuses to the battlefield.

Now, as the experts of Saint Origin Palace were coming in succession, these geniuses of the eight major families joined the war. The Great War between Human Race and Devil Race had truly begun.

This was going to be a tragic war, but it wasn't a war without benefit. In the cultivation path, one had to go against the Heaven in order to move forward like sailing against the current. Take any famous figure in history for example, none of them had made past their way to what they were at that time without stepping on hills or mountains of white bones. Every one of them had been through a great deal of life-or-death ordeals before they managed to succeed.

Therefore, having war with the Devil Race was part of the process in the growth of Human Race and also an experience for the geniuses to gain maturity. Cultivation had always been cruel. In the world of cultivation, some were destined to rise whereas some would fall.

Jiang Chen was without a doubt the largest beneficiary of this

war for the current moment and in the future. After an hour of massacring in the Western Domain, more than 10, 000 devils had died in his hands.

With such immense number of devils, he didn't miss a single one of their essences. All were absorbed by the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda and the fourth level had begun to form gradually; an embryonic shape could be seen from the fourth level.

The ninety-nine levels Ancestral Dragon Pagoda held the same concept as Jiang Chen's dragon transformation skill. The further it reached, the harder it was to condense. Therefore, fully condensing the fourth floor would be much harder than condensing the third floor.

The best way to condense the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda was to absorb energy, energy that was immense and great in amount. Those devils that he killed previously were too low in level. Thus, the effect wasn't that great in condensing the pagoda.

Meanwhile, the battle status in Great Lightning Tune Temple was chaotic. Innumerable devils were besieged by Great Lightning Tune Temple. Besides the high-ranked monks of the temple, there were also experts from Saint Origin Palace.

At this moment, the experts who were guarding Great Lightning Tune Temple right now were Great Saints of Gu Family, including the several Eighth Grade Great Saints that fought against the Eighth Grade Devil Saints inextricably, neither of them were gaining the upper hand.

Sure enough, the present Great Lightning Tune Temple was no longer the Great Lightning Tune Temple that everyone knew. It was declining at a rapid rate. In the last thousand years, they had only produced one Ancestor Greenlotus. Compared to such an enormous battlefield, they were undeniably vulnerable. Not even an Eighth Grade Great Saint could be found across the entire Great Lightning Tune Temple.

Greenlotus Mountain!

It wasn't far from Great Lightning Tune Temple and was also one of the main battlefields. All the peaks of them mountains had been smashed and large pits were everywhere. Tens of thousands of black-coloured devils were swooping towards the Greenlotus Mountain.

At the present moment, outside Greenlotus Mountain stood a young man with white hair. His body was emanating devil waves which was more terrifying than those devils. His hands were covered with devil's blood – the blood of his enemy. Under his feet was devil corpses that could be piled up into a hill.

This youth was none other than Han Yan. To him, such battle was simply something he dreamt of. Given his Ancient Divine Devil physique, he could absorb all kinds of devil essences and souls to enhance his cultivation.

In other words, his means was almost the same as Jiang Chen when it came to such a battlefield. They were the greatest enemy

of devils.

“Little friend, be careful. It isn’t easy to deal with that formidable Fifth Grade Devil Saint.”

Below, in front of the gate of Greenlotus Mountain was an old monk, covered with blood, sitting cross-legged. He stared at the 300 meter tall Devil Saint and reminded Han Yan with concerning tone. The old monk was Great Master Ran Feng who was only a Second Grade Great Saint. He had been seriously wounded from his previous fights. If Han Yan hadn’t appeared in time, he would have been killed by the devils’ frenzied attacks.

The devils always had a deep hatred for monks of Buddha Sect. Therefore, their attacks against them would be extremely fierce. The devil leader standing opposite Han Yan right now was a powerful Fifth Grade Great Saint.

“Rest assured, great master. I won’t let these devils disrupt Tyrant’s cultivation with peace,” replied Han Yan.

He understood that Tyrant was now going through the most critical moment in his seclusion that it should never be disturbed.

That day after Jiang Chen’s departure, it took Tyrant roughly ten minutes to break through into Great Saint realm and initiated the Nine Major Tribulation. But he didn’t come out from seclusion after that. The power in the Sarira left by Ancestor Greenlotus was too great. First Grade Great Saint was definitely not the only advancement he would obtain.

Observing Tyrant's progression made Great Master Ran Feng feel very delighted. That day when the Devil Race began its attack, Tyrant's cultivation had broken through Third Grade Great Saint and it didn't stop advancing even after that. According to Great Master Ran Feng's estimation, Tyrant would at least reach the peak of Fifth Grade Great Saint after his seclusion, or he would even reach the sixth grade of Great Saint realm.

After all, the Sarira that had integrated with the Immortal Soul was undeniably terrifying. Tyrant had inherited the heritage left by Ancestor Greenlotus in the past, which made him the inheritor of Ancestor Greenlotus. So, refining the Sarira had naturally become easier.

At the present moment in Greenlotus Mountain. There was a trace of indistinct Qi that grew strong and weak at random times. That was the Qi of Tyrant, indicating that he was reaching the final step in his seclusion. Without a doubt, he would amaze everyone once he succeeded.

As this was the most crucial step of the process, the last thing he needed was to be disturbed. Otherwise, he would suffer an inestimable loss.

Great Master Ran Feng initially had lost hope due to the devils' invasion but Han Yan's timely appearance had given him hope again.

"The pure Ancient Divine Devil physique. I hadn't imagined that

it existed in the Human Race. But unfortunately, you are still too weak. After killing you today, I will devour your Ancient Divine Devil Bloodline. Then, my cultivation base will advance by leaps and bounds and I will become invincible. Kaka..." The Fifth Grade Devil Saint laughed maniacally.

He felt surprised and at the same time, happy when he discovered that the Ancient Divine Devil Bloodline was in the body of a human. This was his chance. If he could consume a human with Ancient Divine Devil Bloodline, the benefits he could obtain would be boundless.

Chapter 990 - The Saint Light of Buddha Sect

“You want to devour me? I’m afraid you don’t have the teeth for that.” Han Yan said, sneering.

Although he was only a peak Fourth Grade Great Saint, an ordinary Fifth Grade Great Saint was no match for him. That time, in the Pure Land, a lot of Fifth Grade Great Saints from the six major families had been killed by him. Furthermore, his current cultivation had already advanced unlike before.

Then again, the powerful Ancient Divine Devil physique represented the king that was above thousands of devils. Putting aside the possibility of whether he could command them, his Qi alone was enough to make them feel terrified. Even this Fifth Grade Great Saint devil felt stifled before Han Yan.

Howl...

The devil didn’t want to waste any more time. In this war against Saint Origin World, they were competing of who could make the biggest contribution to their race. If he could kill this Ancient Divine Devil human, not only would he acquire great benefits, but also be rewarded generously by the higher echelons.

The Fifth Grade Great Saint devil moved, opening his giant black mouth that looked like a huge black hole, and pounced on Han Yan frenziedly. The stormy gust of stench he released was revolting. Those sharp tusks inside didn’t seem inferior to any average Great

Saint Weapon.

Great Master Ran Feng gazed at this powerful devil without blinking, his heart was full of worries, not knowing whether Han Yan could resist it.

However, Han Yan's performance relieved his worried mind. He couldn't help but gasp in admiration that there were too many monstrous geniuses in this world, and the ones befriended by Jiang Chen were all heaven defying.

“Humph!”

After hearing a cold humph, Han Yan's pupils suddenly turned pure black and he shouted, “9,000 Meter White Hair.”

Whizz *Whizz* *Whizz*

Each strand of his white hair had turned into a sharp sword, covering the sky, like a white ocean, indestructible. In just a few blinks of an eye, the white swords fully encompassed the devil and pierced through its giant mouth.

“Argh...”

The devil screamed in pain. He had not imagined that this human could be so overbearing, his hair alone was unbearable. Now, Han Yan's white hair had formed a domain, totally trapping the devil. 9,000 Meter White Hair was a powerful and versatile

combat ability which Han Yan had just awakened.

“A poor little Fifth Grade Devil Saint attempting to fight against me? Die!”

Han Yan's strikes were ruthless. The sharp white hair shot forth all of a sudden, shredding the 300 meter tall Devil Saint. The blood of the devil drifted in the sky. Han Yan snatched the devil soul from the remains and swallowed it straightaway.

“Haha! Sure enough, this is nourishing.” Han Yan said and laughed.

Gusts of devil waves rushed out of his body, masking the void around. The devils began to retreat when they felt a strong pressure from the oppressive Qi.

“Die, all of you! Help me break through to the Fifth Grade Great Saint.”

Han Yan went frenzied. He unleashed a sea of devil Qi, encompassing thousands of devils. Among these devils, there were a dozen Devil Saints, a Fourth Grade Devil Saint and plenty of Minor Saints. After consuming the devil soul of the Fifth Grade Great Saint, his cultivation had already reached the peak of Fourth Grade Great Saint, only a step away from the Fifth Grade Great Saint. If he could refine all the devil souls of these devils, it wouldn't be a problem for him to advance to Fifth Grade Great Saint.

howl *howl*

The devils that was in the zone of the devil Qi realized that they could do nothing about their situation after a few struggles. At this moment, Han Yan had turned into a peerless devil. The sea of devil Qi turned into a terrifying energy, ripping off groups of devils. Not even Devil Saints could escape such fate.

Han Yan looked as if he had turned into a real Ancient Devil—the ferocious Divine Devil. The Heaven and Earth changed color. All the devils were in terror. Unceasing wails could be heard, while all the devil souls flew towards Han Yan's hand, and was then refined.

Pa *Pa* *Pa*

Han Yan's Qi was still rising non-stop. Within a few minutes or so, he refined all the devil souls and successfully broke through to the Fifth Grade Great Saint. Inside his body was a black ocean. It was the Devil Sea that could absorb anything.

Ever since successfully refining the Ancient Devil, his bloodline was fully activated, revealing the horrifyingness of his ability. It might not be obvious in a fight against human cultivators, but against devils, it could be seen clearly.

Because of his special bloodline and physique, he was able to endlessly absorb devil souls. Moreover, this absorption was different from Jiang Chen's, which depended on dragon transformation skill and over absorption would easily lead to instability of the foundation. As Jiang Chen was using the

Ancestral Dragon Pagoda in the absorption, the benefits he got naturally became lesser.

Han Yan, on the other hand, wouldn't have to worry about over absorption. Instead, the source of devil essence in devil souls would strengthen his foundation.

In other words, this battle had provided Han Yan the greatest and the best opportunity. During his massacre, he continued to grow stronger to a horrifying extent.

Crash...

The devils that surrounded the Greenlotus Mountain was eradicated by Han Yan. All of a sudden, a ray of brilliant light shot up to the sky at the center of Greenlotus Mountain. One could clearly see the Sanskrit symbols in this brilliance. It looked incomparably divine and full of Buddha essence.

The light had attracted Han Yan and Great Master Ran Feng's attention. Their eyes were full of surprise, particularly Great Master Ran Feng's. No one knew better than him what the luminosity and the symbols meant.

"Haha! Great. This is great. This is the Saint Light of Buddha Sect. For nearly 1,000 years, he is only the second person to comprehend the Saint Light. The first is my master and the second is my apprentice. Hahahaha!" Great Master Ran Feng laughed without restraint.

He was filled with joy and pride. The Saint Light of Buddha Sect was the embodiment of Buddha. Ever since the decline of Buddha Sect, it had only produced one Gifted One—Ancestor Greenlotus. After grasping the Saint Light, he became the master of all. Today, the second person who comprehended the Saint Light appeared. Among these two people, one was Great Master Ran Feng's master and the other was his disciple. Thus, there was no way that he wouldn't be proud of them.

“What the heck?! Judging by Tyrant's Qi, he must have already reached the Fifth Grade Great Saint,” said Han Yan.

“That right. That's the effect of Ancestor's Sarira. In fact, Fifth Grade Great Saint was supposed to be his limit. I didn't expect this kid to comprehend the Saint Light of Buddha Sect. Depending solely on this Saint Light would allow him to advance to the Sixth Grade Great Saint. It is no longer impossible for him to surpass Ancestor Greenlotus in the future.” Great Master Ran Feng said with a face full of relief.

“Damn!”

Han Yan rolled his eyes, admitting that there were in fact plenty of ‘abnormals’ in this world, but seeing Tyrant's current achievement made him feel incomparably happy. As the world was approaching chaos, Jiang Chen mentioned that he and Tyrant would become his left and right hands. It was true, considering the fact that his Ancient Divine Devil Bloodline had been fully activated and started to reveal a portion of his incredible might, and also Tyrant's marvelous advancement.

howl

Just then, a devil's howl rang. A muster of devils charged forward once more. This time, the number of devils weren't as many as before. Even though it seemed that there were only about a hundred of them, the Qi exuded by these devils were more powerful than the previous devils. The chief among them was a middle-aged man with a cultivation of a Seventh Grade Devil Saint. There were three Sixth Grade Devil Saints beside him.

“Not good. It must be the massacre just now and the Saint Light that attracted these powerful devils. This Seventh Grade Devil Saint isn't going to be easy to deal with.”

Great Master Ran Feng's facial expression changed.

Even Han Yan frowned. Although he had just advanced to Fifth Grade Great Saint and killing Sixth Grade Devil Saints wouldn't be a problem, he was still no match to a Seventh Grade Devil Saint. Now that Tyrant was at his most critical moment, he must hold the attacks of these devils. No matter what happened, he couldn't let Tyrant receive any harm.

Hong...

Billowy devil waves surged out of Han Yan's body. His face didn't show any signs of fear even when he was about to face these fierce devils.

“Kill!”

The chief gave the command to kill with one word.

Howl!

The three Sixth Grade Devil Saints dashed towards Han Yan.

“Humph!”

Han Yan let out a cold humph, striking out a punch that carried an overwhelming Qi, forming a black barrier. The three Sixth Grade Devil Saints were pushed by Han Yan’s punch. One of them spurted out blood.

“What?!”

They couldn’t help exclaiming in astonishment. Their gaze brimmed with disbelief. Their cultivation was higher than Han Yan and their physique should’ve given them the upper hand while battling a human cultivator. They hadn’t thought that their joint strike would be deflected by a mere Fifth Grade Great Saint human.

“I didn’t expect that the Ancient Divine Devil Bloodline would exist in a human’s body. No wonder you are so strong. However, you surely will die under my attacks.”

The Seventh Grade Great Saint discerned Han Yan's true ability. He made a step forth; an aggressive wave charged at Han Yan, like a sharp sword.

Crash...

Han Yan moved, striking out a huge palm—that looked like a ferocious-looking black devil palm covered with black scales—collided with the Seventh Grade Devil Saint's attack head on.

Hong Long...

Violent waves rolled. Han Yan was pushed back several paces before regaining his balance. Sure enough, the Seventh Grade Devil Saint wasn't an easy opponent.

“Haha! You all, go and attack that Buddha Light. I will handle this brat.”

The devil chief laughed as he gazed at the ray of Saint Light above Greenlotus Mountain.

“Roger!”

Over 100 devils rushed towards the Saint Light. Han Yan wanted to stop them but the devil chief kept him busy. Below, Great Master Ran Feng looked concerned. Given his present state, he wouldn't be of any help at all and would die immediately if he tried to stop this group of devils.

“I didn’t expect that another genius would be born in Buddha Sect. Anyway, this genius won’t fall.”

A wave of devils seethed like the sea, as it charged towards the Buddha Light.

Chapter 991 - Desolate Changfeng

Han Yan and Great Master Ran Feng both felt very anxious at this critical juncture but neither of them could provide any assistance. They had done all they could to buy time for Tyrant. They were now occupied engaged with the devil army. Although they were still capable of protecting themselves, they were too occupied to prevent the muster of devils from attacking Tyrant.

The current situation now solely depended on Tyrant's own fate...

The devils attacked. Their attacks were immense and majestic like a vast ocean, wrapping the golden Buddha Light in a blink. That was the Saint Light of Buddha Sect. Tyrant was currently in the most critical moment of breaking through. If he was forcefully interrupted, the loss he would suffer would be inestimably tremendous.

All of a sudden, the Saint Light exploded.

Hong Long!

Boundless golden brilliance filled the sky above Greenlotus Mountain. Such furious energy consisted of the purest Qi of Buddha Sect, which was the greatest foe of Devil Race. The impact of the explosion was so powerful that over a hundred of the devils' attacks were instantly pulverized, or perhaps purified. All the devil waves above the sky dispersed, what was left after that was the holy Buddha Light that was so dazzling, and watching it directly

would temporary blind you.

“Argh...”

Innumerable screams were heard from the devils. Over a hundred of them were forced backwards by the violent surge of Buddha Light. Some Devil Emperors and Minor Devil Saints were pulverized on the spot, they couldn't bear the great power and turned into a mist of blood.

“He succeeded!”

Great Master Ran Feng's eyes brimmed with joy, relief and also pride. His disciple had finally broken through the last step in the most critical juncture. Not only had he fully understood the Saint Light of Buddha Sect, but also advanced to the Sixth Grade Great Saint.

“Amitabha.”

A voice sounded from the interior of Greenlotus Mountain. The voice wasn't loud but everyone heard it clearly. It had the sense of Buddha Sect's high-ranked monk that could shiver the soul of all Buddha Sect's experts.

That Seventh Grade Devil Saint stopped attacking and lifted his head. He saw a young monk in robe flying slowly above the sky while putting his palms together. There was a string of golden beads engraved with abstruse Sanskrit hanging from his neck.

The young monk seemed around 20 years old but he exuded the impression of a high-ranked monk. On his body, golden light light lingered that was also marked with the Sanskrit. That wasn't any normal light but the Saint Light of Buddha Sect.

“Golden Arhat. Haha...”

Great Master Ran Feng couldn't help but laugh once more after seeing the unexpected changes in Tyrant.

What he had not expected was that Tyrant could condense the Golden Arhat. This was the supreme technique of Arhat in Buddha Sect and also the most advanced in existence. Even though the Golden Arhat Tyrant condensed was still in embryonic form, such potential was one of its kind in a thousand years in Buddha Sect. Even Ancestor Greenlotus had not condensed the Golden Arhat while he was still young. In other words, Tyrant had the potential to achieve the true Buddhahood.

“Argh! What a strong Saint Light. What the hell is this monk? It's terrifying.”

“This Saint Light is the natural enemy of our race. I can sense an inexplicable fear when I'm standing before him. This man is going to be the greatest enemy of Devil Race.”

“The Saint Light of Buddha Sect? Such thing hasn't appeared for a long time. Is it because the Heaven is putting an end to our race?”

“Calm down everyone. Although this young monk has comprehended the Saint Light of Buddha Sect, his cultivation base isn’t strong. He’s just a Sixth Grade Great Saint. We have recuperated for so long and handling a Sixth Grade Great Saint won’t be a problem.”

.....

All the devils on the scene became nervous. Even those powerful Sixth Grade Devil Saint were showing fear in their faces. That was the fear that originated from their soul. The origin of their devil soul started to tremble.

“Tai!(呔)”

Tyrant was full of confidence the moment he got out from his seclusion. A character (呔) was produced from his mouth. Countless rays of Saint Light spread out like swords, hitting against the muster of devils.

“Argh...” “Argh...” “Argh...”

Numerous wails sounded. The Saint Light then formed a vast domain that was even scarier than Han Yan’s 9000 Meter White Hair. In the blink of an eye, over hundreds of devils died under the Saint Light, including those powerful Sixth Grade Devil Saints that didn’t even have the strength to resist.

“Not good.”

When the Seventh Grade Devil Saint saw what happened, he turned and fled without saying another word. He knew his abilities very well. Although he was a level higher than Tyrant, fighting against a Sixth Grade Great Saint monk that had comprehended the Saint Light and condensed the early-stage Golden Arhat was no different from seeking death.

“Edifying Light.”

Tyrant would never give him a chance to escape. Very swiftly, he waved and struck out the Edifying Light. Under the absolute suppression and restraint of the light, the Seventh Grade Devil Saint failed to resist and was edified immediately.

“Master.”

The Seventh Grade Devil Saint knelt before Tyrant with incomparable politeness and sincerity.

Han Yan standing at one side widened his eyes. Although he had witnessed the power of Edifying Light and had seen Jiang Chen edify quite many devils before, he couldn't help admiring Tyrant so much he would prostrate before him when he saw how easily Tyrant could eradicate the devils and subdue the devil chief.

“Damn you monk! Isn't your ability too powerful?”

Han Yan rolled his eyes.

“Hehe! I have to thank you for that, Ah Yan. If you didn’t help me buy some time, my seclusion would’ve been forcibly interrupted and my master’s life would’ve been in danger.” Tyrant smiled and said.

His gratitude for Han Yan was beyond his ability to express. Although he was in seclusion during the battles, he was aware of everything that happened outside. To put it bluntly, if it hadn’t been for Han Yan today, he wouldn’t have achieved what he had today and Great Master Ran Feng’s life would be endangered.

“There’s no need to mention about it.”

Han Yan patted Tyrant’s shoulder. Brothers would never be calculative about deeds.

“My disciple, little friend Han Yan, this war started by Devil Race is a great opportunity for the both of you. One of you is the gifted one in Buddha Sect and the other possesses the Ancient Divine Devil Bloodline. You two will progress to a very terrifying extent throughout the war. This is an opportunity you can’t miss,” said Great Master Ran Feng.

“Master, you’re right. We’re heading into the main battlefield. We’ll kill stronger devils to improve ourselves,” replied Tyrant.

“There’s no need for that. Greenlotus Mountain is a main

battlefield by itself. The battle waves here must have already spread out. There will be more mighty devils coming here. Besides, Greenlotus Mountain was left by Ancestor Greenlotus. If you two left, this place would be turned into ruins and this is something which I don't wish to see." Great Master Ran Feng said.

"Great Master is right. Why don't we guard here? Firstly, we can safeguard Greenlotus Mountain from being destroyed. Secondly, we will get to kill numerous devils to improve ourselves. We can get the best of both worlds." Han Yan said.

"Alright. Then, we'll stay. With you fighting alongside with me, I'm sure I can edify even an Eighth Grade Devil Saint." Tyrant said confidently.

.....

Battlefields could be found everywhere in the vast Western Domain, but an increasing number of human experts were joining the war. Their participation had started to alleviate the immense pressure from the devils' attack. The situations ranging from the outskirts to the center of the domain were changing. Many devil army began to retreat, or so to say, their attack were suppressed.

In one day's time, plenty battles that had happened in the outskirts had stopped. No one would know how many devils died in the process. The name of Gu Chen had become famous throughout the Western Domain. In the meantime, Gu Family also amassed great fame and was known as the clan that fought for the world. Their reputation had already surpassed Great Lightning Tune Temple and had unknowingly exceeded the reputation of the

seven major families.

All of these were due to Jiang Chen's contributions. The news of the rise of the prestige of Gu Family and Gu Chen's actions naturally had reached the ears of the higher ups in Gu Palace. They were praising him in their hearts. Gu Chen had been contributing a lot to Gu Palace ever since he joined.

It was currently evening. Within the range of a thousand miles among the destroyed mountains that didn't have even a single devil, and deep in the mountains inside a miniature spatial zone was a white-clothed youth sitting cross-legged and beside him was a big yellow dog.

There was only one such team throughout the entire Saint Origin World: Jiang Chen and Big Yellow. They had reunited after meeting each other in the previous battles. Jiang Chen had gained enormous benefits from a day of battling fiercely. He had edified two Seventh Grade Devil Saints and nearly half of the fourth level of the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda had been condensed. Currently, he was working on breaking through into the Fourth Grade Great Saint.

As for Big Yellow, he had consumed plentiful devil souls and had already reached the Fourth Grade of Great Saint realm.

The war in the Great Lightning Tune Temple was still going on intensely. All experts of the eight major palaces had come to their aid. After so many years of recuperation, the Devil Race had grown very strong. The emergence of 'super' Devil Saints had also brought in the arrival of peerless experts like Gu Firmament and

Desolate Emperor.

Meanwhile, in another miniature spatial zone was two silhouettes standing opposite each other. One was an elder and the other was a young man. The elder had a very strong cultivation base. He was no doubt the Eighth Grade Great Saint elder of Desolate Palace, Desolate Wuleng, while the young man was a young genius of Desolate Palace, Desolate Changfeng, who was a peak Sixth Grade Great Saint. During the time in the Refining Tower, he was the one who wanted to get rid of Jiang Chen.

“Changfeng. I have already found the location of Gu Chen. He is in seclusion in a miniature spatial zone right now. I want you to go over there and kill him, but I don’t know whether you have the confidence to do so,” said Desolate Wuleng.

“Killing a puny Gu Chen is a piece of cake to me.” Desolate Changfeng sneered and said with confidence.

“Don’t underestimate that man. One of our Seventh Grade Great Saints had once died in his hands.” Desolate Wuleng reminded.

Chapter 992 - Calculation

“Elder, the one who killed our Seventh Grade Great Saint expert was Jiang Chen not Gu Chen.”

Desolate Changfeng doubted.

“Don’t be careless. If I’m not mistaken, Gu Chen is Jiang Chen. There are all kinds of signs showing that he is the same person we are looking for. Your assault on him this time is a good chance to test this theory. If Gu Chen is really Jiang Chen, the six major palaces will surely go after him and kill him and Gu Palace will be out of ways to protect him.”

Desolate Wuleng had a cold smile on his face. He was very confident in his speculation. Putting aside the fact that Gu Chen’s identity already aroused suspicion, he began to doubt the connection between Gu Chen and Jiang Chen when he sensed the familiar Qi from his body. One should know that the perception of an Eighth Grade Great Saint was undeniably sharp.

“Humph! In that case, luck’s by my side. I have been wanting to meet that Jiang Chen in person. Although he could kill our Seventh Grade Great Saint, I don’t fear him at all. With my present strength, I can kill any Seventh Grade Great Saint with ease. I, Desolate Changfeng believe that I can easily get rid of a Third Grade Great Saint.”

Desolate Changfeng let out a cold humph, emitting the unique pride of a genius. In general, every genius had their own pride,

especially the geniuses of Desolate Palace. This explained why Desolate Changfeng was so confident. It would be effortless for him to kill any Seventh Grade Great Saint with his strength alone.

To Desolate Family, either it was Gu Chen or Jiang Chen, both of them were their enemies and a must-kill target.

“Go now. I will secretly record the battle between you and Gu Chen. I heard that Jiang Chen has a transformation technique that can enhance his combat strength by tenfold. Considering his current cultivation base and if he really is Jiang Chen, he will certainly use that transformation technique in battle. If he isn’t Jiang Chen, he won’t be a match for you and will surely be killed by you.”

Desolate Wuleng had a sneer that seemed as if everything was under his control. He couldn’t deal Gu Chen personally as that would arouse the attention of Gu Palace. However, Desolate Changfeng could because he was a young genius of Desolate Palace and the geniuses of Saint Origin Palace were the main reinforcement in the main battlefield. As such, using Desolate Changfeng to kill Gu Chen wouldn’t draw any unnecessary attention.

He had decided that if Gu Chen wasn’t Jiang Chen, Gu Chen would definitely be killed by Desolate Changfeng and thus, getting rid of a great enemy of Desolate Palace. If Gu Chen was Jiang Chen, even if Desolate Changfeng couldn’t kill Jiang Chen, he could still record their battle secretly. At that time, when the evidence gets shown to the public, Jiang Chen would immediately become the common target of all. All six major palaces would immediately go

after him. Even with the help of Gu Palace and Demon Palace, Jiang Chen would still die for sure.

“Okay.”

Desolate Changfeng flashed and vanished in a blink. The next moment, he appeared outside the miniature spatial zone of Jiang Chen.

“Humph! Gu Chen, if it wasn’t for elder’s keen perception, I wouldn’t have found your concealed spatial zone.”

Desolate Changfeng humphed coldly, circulated the spatial energy and broke into the miniature spatial zone.

The instant Desolate Changfeng intruded, Jiang Chen who was in seclusion, attempting to break through the Fourth Grade Great Saint opened his eyes abruptly. Strong fury shot out of his eyes. He had reached the boundary of Fourth Grade Great Saint. Only one more step and he would have had a complete breakthrough.

It was imaginable how angry he was right now when he was interrupted at such a time. Only fifty more dragon marks to achieve the break through. If he refined another higher grade devil soul, he would instantly break through.

Ever since he entered the Western Domain, all the dragon marks were condensed by the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda. So, the refinement didn’t affect his foundation at all. However, such

advancement took a lot of energy and time.

If he was given less than half a day's time, he would surely make the break through, but such an excellent moment was ruined by Desolate Changfeng.

“Gu Chen, so you are hiding here? You gave me a hard time finding you.”

Desolate Changfeng gazed at Jiang Chen, and immediately, unleashed his killing intent.

“Desolate Changfeng, you shouldn't have come.”

Jiang Chen shook his head. He didn't feel surprised to see Desolate Changfeng here. He had already anticipated that Desolate Palace was going to take advantage of the chaos in the war to make an attempt on taking his life.

“Little Chen, this bastard isn't easy to deal with. If you don't transform, I'm afraid you can't beat him.”

Said Big Yellow worriedly. Although he was a Fourth Grade Great Saint and could get rid of any ordinary Sixth Grade Great Saint, Desolate Changfeng was beyond his capability to handle. Even Jiang Chen would be required to transform to fight this guy. After all, he hadn't yet made the advanced to Fourth Grade Great Saint yet.

“Then ,I will transform. This man will die today. However, I sensed that someone is spying on us here. If I’m not mistaken, it must be the expert of Desolate Palace trying to record the scenes of our fight. That Desolate Wuleng has already suspected my identity. Once he obtains the evidence of my true identity, the six major families will surely come after me on an attempt to eliminate me.”

Jiang Chen’s eyes sparkled. Given his shrewdness, he could naturally perceive that someone was watching him.

“What now?”

Asked Big Yellow. Of course he knew that Gu Chen was a very important identity due to Jiang Chen not being powerful enough yet. In any case, the identity of Gu Chen had only offended Desolate Palace and not the other five, but if his cover was blown, the whole scenario would change.

“It doesn’t matter. I will cast the Five Elemental Power Spheres later. This miniature spatial zone is created by me. So combining my Five Elemental Power Spheres and the spatial zone, is enough to block the spying eyes from outside. You don’t have to join in the fight. Deploy a grand formation using this spatial zone as the foundation, integrate it with my power sphere and this will wholly cut off the link between the outside world and this spatial zone. Then, they will see nothing from the outside. Since Desolate Palace has an abundance geniuses, I would like to see whether they have enough geniuses to satisfy my desire to kill.”

A cold smirk was seen at the corner of his mouth. Desolate Wuleng and Desolate Changfeng were destined to fall into Jiang

Chen's trap even if they tried to plot against him. In this world, there was no one that could secretly plot against him. If Desolate Changfeng was here to kill him, he was fated to meet only one outcome – being killed by Jiang Chen.

“Roger.”

Big Yellow nodded. He was well-versed in the Formation Holy Book which has all kinds of formation, just at his fingertips. There was no grand formation that he hadn't seen before. It was conceivable what effect it would bring if his grand formation was integrated with Jiang Chen's power.

Big Yellow vanished all of a sudden. He turned into a light that constantly penetrated the spatial zone. Desolate Changfeng completely ignored the his existence. In his eyes, he only had one target – Gu Chen.

Jiang Chen slowly stood up from the ground and came near Desolate Changfeng. “Desolate Changfeng, are you that confident in killing me?”

“Haha! Gu Chen, my cultivation is exactly three levels higher than yours. If I don't have such confidence in killing you, Then, I have been living my life in vain.”

Desolate Changfeng laughed loudly.

“It's no use talking too much. Bring it on.”

As he said that, he unleashed his power sphere – Five Elemental Power Spheres –integrating with the spatial zone. Desolate Changfeng frowned. Sensing the changes in the air current produced a slight uneasiness in his heart.

However, he threw that feeling out of his mind immediately. Given his strength, there was nothing that he needed to worry about while fighting a mere Third Grade Great Saint.

In another spatial zone, Desolate Wuleng was holding a rock crystal in his hand. Inside the rock crystal was the scene of Jiang Chen and Desolate Changfeng. Although the projected scene wasn't very clear, anyone with a good eyesight could see the situation clearly.

However, as soon as Jiang Chen moved, the scene in the rock crystal instantly vanished and turned into a blur.

“What’s going on?”

Desolate Wuleng’s facial expression changed. He hurriedly exerted energy into the rock crystal. Unfortunately, he still couldn’t see the situation inside the spatial zone no matter how hard he tried.

“Someone has deployed a grand formation to block my view. Could it be that the expert of Gu Palace has found out about this?”

Desolate Wuleng was baffled, thinking that it must be the doing of Gu Palace's experts. However, he wouldn't have thought that it was Jiang Chen and Big Yellow who did this.

The picture in the rock crystal was gone, the original plan was ruined and Desolate Weleng couldn't interfere in the fight. Now, he could only place his hopes on Desolate Changfeng. In fact, he was incomparably confident in Desolate Changfeng as he was a supreme genius brought up by Desolate Palace. With a peak Sixth Grade Great Saint cultivation base, not even an ordinary Seventh Grade Great Saint was his opponent. Even if Gu Chen was the Jiang Chen that could transform, he believed that Desolate Changfeng would still be able to handle him. Even if he couldn't defeat Jiang Chen, he wouldn't have a problem escaping. As long as he could escape, Gu Chen's true identity would be revealed.

In the miniature spatial zone, Desolate Changfeng was the first to act. He struck with a red-gold knuckle that carried an incredible force, smashing against Jiang Chen fiercely.

Pa!

It just happened that Jiang Chen wanted to test his combat strength. He was now at the peak of the Third Grade Great Saint, which was a lot more powerful when he killed the Seventh Grade Great Saint of Desolate Palace back then.

Bang!

Two knuckles connected, grinding out a sea of fire. Under the

great force of the impact, Jiang Chen was sent flying roughly forty meters away. His body trembled; it was obvious that he wasn't the opponent of Desolate Changfeng.

“Clearly, an extraordinary genius. You can't be compared to any ordinary Sixth Grade Great Saint.”

Jiang Chen flung his tingling arm for a few times, started to pay attention to Desolate Changfeng.

“Gu Chen, you are worthy of being called a rare genius for blocking one strike of mine. Unfortunately, the gap between you and me is just too big. You are certainly no match for me. I suggest you to stop struggling, it will only make you die uglier.”

Desolate Changfeng has just gained the upper hand. His confidence started to erupt from the inside.

Chapter 993 - In a State of Chaos and Darkness

After confirming the strength of his adversary, he felt completely relieved. Though the fact that Gu Chen, a Third Grade Great Saint, could bear his strike surprised, impressed and even shocked him, in any case, the gap between the two of them was very obvious. He couldn't help thinking that he could kill his opponent effortlessly.

“Gu Chen, die now. No one can save you today.”

Desolate Changfeng's Qi soared to the sky. He waved his hand and struck out another punch. This red-golden punch seemed like a mountain and was more powerful than the previous fist. It was enough to almost kill an ordinary Sixth Grade Great Saint.

“It's too early to determine who will die.”

Jiang Chen's body flashed. Powerful blood Qi erupted all of a sudden. His body instantly transformed into a half-dragon. He became tenfold stronger. An indestructible blood-red dragon claw collided with Desolate Changfeng's attack.

Hong Long...

The spatial zone began to tremble and countless cracks appeared in the void. The transformed Jiang Chen's combat strength had reached a terrifying extent. The red-golden fist was straightaway pulverised by the dragon claw and turned into innumerable golden

light rays before it faded.

“Desolate Changfeng, are you still confident that you can kill me right now?”

Jiang Chen’s voice rolled like thunder. His Qi skyrocketed to the extreme. Not only was it not any weaker than Desolate Changfeng, it had also given Desolate Changfeng slight pressure.

“Transformation technique? You are that Jiang Chen?”

Desolate Changfeng’s facial expression changed dramatically. He didn’t imagine that Desolate Wuleng had made the right guess. The Gu Chen of Gu Palace was actually Jiang Chen of the Pure Land.

“Yes, that’s me.”

Jiang Chen had nothing more to hide. Across the entire Heaven and Earth, the only one who possessed a dragon transformation technique was him. When he decided to show Desolate Changfeng his dragon transformation technique, it only meant that he would not let Desolate Changfeng leave here alive.

“It seems like elder is right. Your identity is indeed doubtful. Jiang Chen, you have killed the patriarch of our family, and also many of our experts and geniuses. This has created a hatred that’s even higher than the sky and deeper than the ocean. Today, I must kill you to avenge the death of those you killed and restore the

dignity of our family,” said Desolate Changfeng harshly, however his face began to turn solemn, not underestimating Jiang Chen anymore. Although he was a peak Sixth Grade Great Saint, Jiang Chen didn’t seem any weaker. Not long ago, this man killed the patriarch of Desolate Family and a Seventh Grade Great Saint elder of Desolate Palace.

While he started taking Jiang Chen seriously, he also felt a trace of envy in his heart. In fact, it wasn’t just a trace but he was really envious of Jiang Chen. They were both geniuses but compared to Jiang Chen, he immediately felt that they were both in two different levels. While he was still a Third Grade Great Saint, though his full-fledged attack could eliminate a Fourth Grade Great Saint, he would die for sure if he confronted a Fifth Grade Great Saint. On the contrary, Jiang Chen who was merely a Third Grade Great Saint could eliminate a Seventh Grade Great Saint. He couldn’t blame the fact that Jiang Chen had the help of the transformation technique because that was a part of his ability. So, he could only blame his own incompetence.

“You talk too much.”

Jiang Chen was too lazy to reply to Desolate Changfeng’s nonsense because he was sure that he could not allow Desolate Changfeng to continue living. He took the initiative to strike. His movement was extremely fast. Striking out the True Dragon Palm, a blood-red dragon claw huge enough to make up a giant barrier that could cover the sky came slamming against Desolate Changfeng.

“Heaven Splitting Divine Claw!” Desolate Changfeng shouted.

His dark hair fluttered. He showed no quarters to Jiang Chen by casting his strongest combat technique—Heaven Splitting Divine Claw.

Desolate Family was really proud of this skill. When Desolate Yuntian, who was also a Sixth Grade Great Saint, casted this skill it was even more powerful than that of Desolate Changfeng, it was as though they were on two different levels.

Hong Long...

The two powerful attacks collided with each other. The excess waves from the collision swept through the entire miniature spatial zone, cutting the void to pieces. But because this spatial zone was personally deployed by Jiang Chen, it was incomparably stable. Adding the fact that the Five Elemental Power Spheres and Big Yellow's formation were perfectly integrated, this spatial barrier would never break even if Jiang Chen and Desolate Changfeng were having a full-fledged battle here.

Hong Long...

The two men used all kinds of incredible skills, turning the sky dark. Although Desolate Changfeng couldn't kill Jiang Chen, it wasn't an easy task for Jiang Chen to kill him as well. While it was true that the half-dragon form Jiang Chen could kill any ordinary Seventh Grade Great Saint, it was also true that Desolate Changfeng possessed the same strength, he was a first class genius of Desolate Palace after all.

Currently, in another miniature spatial zone, Desolate Wuleng focused all of his concentration on the battle. However, he could only sense the combat waves coming from the inside.

“Chang Feng, I hope you won’t disappoint me.”

Desolate Wuleng took a deep breath. By now, he could only place his hope on Desolate Changfeng, it was highly possible that their battle had already aroused the attention of Gu Palace. The people of Gu Palace should have also been watching Jiang Chen to ensure his safety. So, if he intervened, someone from Gu Palace would step in as well.

The good thing was that he was very confident in Desolate Changfeng’s strength. As a first class genius of Desolate Palace, Gu Chen shouldn’t be a problem to him. Even if Gu Chen really was Jiang Chen, the gap between them wouldn’t be very wide. Anyway, as long as Desolate Changfeng returned, the identity of Jiang Chen would be revealed.

If Gu Chen really was Jiang Chen, he would announce it to the public, immediately turning Jiang Chen into a public enemy. If Gu Chen wasn’t Jiang Chen, he would be killed by Desolate Changfeng and one great threat of Desolate Palace would be eliminated.

.....

“Five Elemental Combat Dragon Seal.”

On the battlefield, the two of them had already fought for over a hundred rounds but there was no clear winner yet. At this time, Jiang Chen struck out his Five Elemental Combat Dragon Seal all of a sudden. Fifteen stout dragons rushed out simultaneously. Combining with the Five Elemental Power Spheres, the attack consisted of five different elemental attacks that affected the surroundings of the battlefield. With five different attacks merging together, it suffocated Desolate Changfeng.

“Damn! What kind of attack is this? How could there be an attack with five different attributes?” Desolate Changfeng couldn’t help swearing.

The longer he fought Jiang Chen, the more frightened he got. The tricks that Jiang Chen had was endless. He was extremely surprised by the Five Elemental Combat Dragon Seal and was clueless of how to defend it.

Swoosh!

However, Desolate Changfeng wasn’t an ordinary person after all. With a turn of his palm, a thirty meter long staff materialized. It was an incomparably thick staff. After channelling large amount of energy into the staff, it turned into a heavenly pillar covered with spikes that gave people an eerie feeling.

“Whirlwind Divine Staff!”

Desolate Changfeng struck with his staff. Along with a powerful

staff skill, countless shadows of the staff was produced. It emitted a great brilliance and collided with the 15 combat dragons of Jiang Chen.

Roar *Roar* *Roar*

Bang *Bang* *Bang*

The frenzied dragons roared furiously; the atmosphere was in total chaos. The chaotic battlefield was obscured by the seven-colored light of energy. This was an energy that could destroy the Heaven and Earth. The intense battle between the two of them had created an unusual phenomenon. If this battle happened outside the spatial zone, there was no doubt that the Heaven and Earth would be ruined, every mountain in a thousand mile radius would be crushed into powder.

Hu...

Where the Whirlwind Divine Staff passed was left with nothing. The long staff that Desolate Changfeng held could pulverize even the Five Elemental Combat Dragon Seal, however, he didn't seem fine either. The violent attacks just now made him retreat a dozen paces.

“How the hell is this bastard so strong?”

Desolate Changfeng felt very annoyed. From the beginning of the battle until now, even though he hadn't lost in any round, his

desire to kill Jiang Chen only intensified.

“Desolate Changfeng, can’t you see, you’re no match for me. If you choose to leave now, perhaps you may still have a chance,” said Jiang Chen to Desolate Changfeng.

In truth, he was more afraid than anyone if Desolate Changfeng escaped. After all, with Desolate Changfeng’s strength, it was enough for him to escape if he really wanted to.

However, he believed that Desolate Changfeng wouldn’t escape. One should know that a peerless genius like Desolate Changfeng no doubt wanted face and dignity the most. His pride would never allow him to flee.

“Leave? This is really a joke. Jiang Chen, although your strength has surprised me, I’m still capable of killing you.”

Desolate Changfeng showed a face of ruthlessness just as Jiang Chen expected. His pride wouldn’t allow him to escape. Plus, he must have thought that the fight between him and Jiang Chen was still recorded by Desolate Wuleng.

Moreover, he thought that the higher ups were paying attention to this battle that’s why he was motivated to perform his best. If he could kill Jiang Chen, his status in Desolate Palace would skyrocket to another level, and that meant he would obtain great rewards.

More importantly, Desolate Changfeng still had a powerful

trump card that he had yet to use. This trump card was enough for him to turn a critical situation around.

“Bring it on then.”

Jiang Chen attacked once more. The Heavenly Saint Sword appeared in his hand. Even though it hadn't returned to its peak yet, its scariness was beyond anyone's imagination. Compared to Desolate Changfeng's Whirlwind Divine Staff, it was certainly no match to his sword.

Howl...

The Heavenly Saint Sword turned into a blood-red dragon, producing a shrill howl, leaving a long stretch of rainbow in the void. Then, in the blink of an eye, it appeared before Desolate Changfeng.

Desolate Changfeng seemed fearless. He brandished the Whirlwind Divine Staff; the heavenly pillar like staff was swung forward, meeting the Heavenly Saint Sword.

Chapter 994 - The Immortal Yang Pill

Hong Long.....

Fire filled the air in an instant. This kind of collision was enough to destroy everything. The battle between these two peerless experts could be described as the destruction of Heaven and Earth. The Whirlwind Divine Staff was after all weaker in comparison to the Heavenly Saint Sword. In such a fierce bombardment, Desolate Changfeng was sent 300 meters away.

“No more delays. The longer this battle continues, the more disadvantageous it is to me. Devils, come out.”

Jiang Chen’s killing intent soared to the sky. Knowing that it wasn’t easy to kill Desolate Changfeng, he immediately released the two Seventh Grade Devil Saints he had subdued earlier.

Howl! *Howl!*

The devils’ howls resounded throughout the whole miniature spatial zone. Two powerful devils came out in their original form. Each of them was 300 meters tall, and were incomparably creepy. Devil waves were billowing to the sky, and their howls were incessant. Dense and cold devil Qi had filled the entire spatial zone.

“Seventh Grade Devil Saint?”

Desolate Changfeng’s facial expression changed. It had not

crossed his mind that two powerful Seventh Grade Devil Saints would suddenly appear in the middle of their fight, and it seemed like they were standing on Jiang Chen's side.

“You two, kill him.” Without wasting any more time, he gave the two Devil Saints the order to attack.

“Yes, Master.”

The two Devil Saints didn't dare disobey his command. After their reply, both of them lunged in two different directions – the left and the right – towards Desolate Changfeng. Naturally, they weren't enough to eliminate Desolate Changfeng, but these two Seventh Grade Devil Saints could absolutely play a vital role in this battle, and instantaneously change the situation of the battle.

“Jiang Chen, you're colluding with the Devil Race!” Desolate Changfeng said, raging.

“Humph!”

Jiang Chen let out a cold humph. The Heavenly Saint Sword turned into a ray of light, rushing forward and slashed Desolate Changfeng. In his eyes, Desolate Changfeng was already a dead man. He found no reason to explain the matter of the devils to a dead man.

“Son of a b*tch!” Desolate Changfeng was infuriated. He brandished the Whirlwind Divine Staff with all his strength.

It was now a one versus three battle.

Hong Long...

The battle intensified. The whole battlefield had already been annihilated. Desolate Wuleng had been paying close attention to what was going on here. He could feel that the combat waves were getting more and more intense and enormous, his worries were also getting heavier.

“That Gu Chen must be Jiang Chen. Otherwise, he wouldn’t have lasted for so long if he only had the strength of Gu Chen.”

Desolate Wuleng partially concluded. Presently, he no longer hoped for Desolate Changfeng to kill Jiang Chen. He only hoped for Desolate Changfeng to withdraw from the battle quickly, and then announce Gu Chen’s true identity to the whole world.

On the battlefield, under the bombardment of Jiang Chen and the two Devil Saints, Desolate Changfeng finally lost his stance. Every time he retreated, his Qi became weaker. Blood spilled out from his mouth; his combat strength was severely consumed, and his face had already turned extremely unpleasant.

Jiang Chen and the two Seventh Grade Devil Saints were like three pronged attacks, besieging Desolate Changfeng. Given Changfeng’s present state, he was no longer capable of escaping from Jiang Chen’s grip. And with the cooperation of the Five Elemental Power Spheres and Big Yellow’s formation, Jiang Chen

had absolute assurance that Desolate Changfeng wouldn't be able to leave this place.

“Damn! Jiang Chen, how did you make these devils listen to your orders?!”

Desolate Changfeng felt very frustrated. He knew that devils were ferocious and a domineering race, and would never listen to a human's command. The devils and the humans were both the enemy of each other. Besides, these two devils in front of him were powerful Seventh Grade Devil Saints which were considered high and supreme in the Devil Race. If he had not seen this with his own eyes, he certainly wouldn't believe it even if he was threatened to death.

“I naturally have the means of doing so. Desolate Changfeng, you must die today. Given your current state, you won't last long,” said Jiang Chen confidently.

“Jiang Chen, do you think you have won this battle? Ridiculous. Let me tell you this, I, Desolate Changfeng, haven't used my most powerful trump card yet. Take a good look at what this is.” Desolate Changfeng sounded fearless.

He turned his palm, and immediately, a pill that illuminated a milky white radiance appeared. It was translucent, and the fragrance emitted from it was refreshing.

Jiang Chen frowned because even he hadn't seen such a pill before, however he could sense a trace of Immortal from it.

This was an Immortal Pill. No, perhaps the pill was infused with Immortal Qi, its preciousness and effect was beyond anyone's imagination.

“Jiang Chen, this is the Immortal Yang Pill, this is the reward I received last time but I wasn't willing to consume it. Even though this isn't a true Immortal Pill, I'm sure that you can imagine its benefits. With my current cultivation base, I will immediately break through into the Seventh Grade Great Saint after swallowing this pill. By then, you will have to die.” Desolate Changfeng said and laughed.

This Immortal Yang Pill was his greatest trump card and also his last resort.

Jiang Chen's eyes revealed two rays of cold chilling light. It was beyond his expectation that Desolate Changfeng had such a powerful pill. Furthermore, what Desolate Changfeng said was right. Advancing from the Sixth Grade Great Saint to the Seventh Grade Great Saint was certainly not an easy thing, however, this Immortal Yang Pill was enough to fill the gap. After all, Desolate Changfeng had reached the peak of his current grade. With the help of the pill, it wouldn't be difficult for him to advance to the Seventh Grade Great Saint.

Also, if Desolate Changfeng really advanced, Jiang Chen would be no match for him. The two powerful Seventh Grade Devil Saints would instantly be killed by Desolate Changfeng. By then, Jiang Chen would be the one to flee and expose his true identity. At any rate, the identity of Gu Chen was still very useful and important to

him.

“Haha! Jiang Chen, are you afraid now?”

Desolate Changfeng laughed. He had focused all of his attention on Jiang Chen and the two Seventh Grade Great Saints. As long as either of his opponents made a move, he would immediately swallow the Immortal Yang Pill and snatch a victory out of defeat.

“I bet that you can’t consume this pill.”

Jiang Chen grinned all of a sudden and said with a gentle and confident tone. Desolate Changfeng was indeed very smart, however, there was also a moment when a smart person would slip. Just like now. Desolate Changfeng had put all of his concentration on Jiang Chen and the other two devils, totally ignoring another terrifying existence in this spatial zone—Big Yellow.

“Nonsense.”

Desolate Changfeng scoffed at Jiang Chen’s words.

However, as soon as his voice faded, a golden light suddenly flashed past his face. Due to the golden light travelling too fast and all of his concentration being put elsewhere, he didn’t even have the chance to react. The next moment, he was shocked to find that the pill in his hand vanished.

“What?!” Desolate Changfeng exclaimed.

When he raised his head, he found that the pill had already fallen in Jiang Chen’s hands. Beside Jiang Chen was a big yellow dog baring its teeth.

“Desolate Changfeng, I said that you can’t consume this pill, was I right? I haven’t taken a pill infused with Immortal Qi before. I wonder how it will taste like,” said Jiang Chen. Then, he swallowed the Immortal Yang Pill immediately before Desolate Changfeng.

Puff...

A mouthful of blood was forced out of Desolate Changfeng’s mouth. He stumbled under his feet, and almost flopped down on the ground. He was so angry that he felt he was about to die.

“Jiang Chen...”

Desolate Changfeng’s eyes blazed. His emotion at this moment had gone wild. That was his trump card. That was the precious pill that he wasn’t willing to consume. Today, he originally planned to swallow it and break through his current cultivation base and kill Jiang Chen, unfortunately, he had overlooked that dog’s existence.

Now, it seemed like everything turned out ‘sour’. His pill was swallowed by his enemy before him. The overwhelming emotion that he was feeling right now was harsher than death.

Bang...

A powerful wave burst out of Jiang Chen's body. Not only did he swallow the Immortal Yang Pill in front of Desolate Changfeng, but also advanced to the next grade.

“Well, sure enough, this Immortal Yang Pill is really good. It helped me condensed over a thousand dragon marks making a total of 87 000, only a thousand more to reach the Fifth Grade Great Saint. My cultivation has already reached the peak of Fourth Grade Great Saint. Haha! Big Yellow, well done!”

Jiang Chen shouted delightfully. His initial goal was to kill Desolate Changfeng, however he didn't expect to receive a profit.

“Kaka! This idiot is certainly pissed off pretty bad.”

Big Yellow let out his signature laugh. His words caused Desolate Changfeng to cough up more blood.

“Jiang Chen, return the Immortal Yang Pill to me!”

Desolate Changfeng clamored.

“Desolate Changfeng, I would like to thank you for giving me this pill today. If it wasn't for it, I wouldn't be able to advance to the Fourth Grade Great Saint.”

Jiang Chen's words of gratitude made Desolate Changfeng spew out blood again.

"Desolate Changfeng, you can go and die now."

He made a step forward. The strong dragon claw materialized out of nowhere and grasped Desolate Changfeng firmly.

"No..."

Desolate Changfeng could already feel the Qi of death. He struggled violently but it was no use. The gap between them had just been pulled further. The present Desolate Changfeng was no longer at the same level as Jiang Chen. Killing him right now was as easy as slaughtering a chicken for Jiang Chen.

"Die now."

Jiang Chen struck ruthlessly. The moment the dragon claw exerted an abrupt force, a shrill wail was heard from Desolate Changfeng before his entire body exploded. Then, Jiang Chen returned to his original form and kept the two Seventh Grade Devil Saints into the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda.

"Let's go."

Without delaying any further, he and Big Yellow came out of the

miniature spatial zone.

On the other side, the jade slip of Desolate Changfeng that was on Desolate Wuleng's body broke all of a sudden; his facial expression changed dramatically.

“Son of a b*tch!”

Desolate Wuleng cursed. With a flash, he vanished, carrying tremendous anger within him.

Chapter 995 - The Genius of Devil Race

Desolate Changfeng's death made Desolate Wuleng feel as if his heart was bleeding. Nurturing a genius like Desolate Changfeng required astronomical amount of resources and effort. Plus, he had high hopes that Desolate Changfeng had the potential of being a secret killing weapon of the Desolate Palace. Today, his miscalculations had caused Desolate Palace lose one peerless genius, and such a loss was far too great.

More importantly, Desolate Changfeng's death didn't even provide them with the evidence that Gu Chen's true identity was Jiang Chen.

Just as Jiang Chen and Big Yellow left the miniature spatial zone and headed towards the internal region of the Western Domain, a huge stormy energy appeared in the void, and all of a sudden, it instantly sealed the entire area off. Then, a giant palm as enormous as the sky came smashing down on them.

“The experts of Desolate Palace does have a timely response.”

A smirk appeared at the corner of Jiang Chen's mouth. There wasn't any tension in his face while facing against such powerful attack. He didn't even attempt to run or defend because he knew for a fact that someone would defend him. It's not just the expert of Desolate Palace that watched the battle, but also an expert of Gu Palace. It showed how important he was for Gu Palace. Gu Firmament wouldn't allow any tragic accident to happen on him.

Hong Long...

A loud noise sounded from the other direction. As Jiang Chen expected, the expert of Gu Palace appeared immediately after launching an aerial attack. A similar giant hand emerged in the sky and collided with the giant strike of Desolate Palace's expert. The scary huge wave produced from the collision ripped the void apart instantly. Subsequently, two figures showed up in front of Jiang Chen simultaneously. One of them was Desolate Wuleng while the other was an Eighth Grade Great Saint expert of Gu Palace. Jiang Chen was not surprised, as both of their emergence were within his calculations.

“Desolate Wuleng, we are now facing a great enemy before us. We should put all of our energy to defeat the Devil Race. So why did you, an elder of Desolate Palace, secretly attack a young genius of Gu Palace? Is it because you don't know what shame is?” The elder of Gu Palace bellowed at Desolate Wuleng.

“Gu Zheng, this son of a b*tch has just killed Desolate Changfeng. He has just killed a genius of Desolate Palace. Now I dare him to confirm that he is Jiang Chen. Why is Gu Palace covering his identity?”

Desolate Wuleng's eyes turned blood red, looking as if he was going to shred Jiang Chen to pieces with his bare hands.

Jiang Chen sneered, totally ignoring Desolate Wuleng's accusation. Putting aside the fact that he had the support of an Eighth Grade Great Saint beside him, he didn't fear Desolate Wuleng at all. With his current strength, Desolate Wuleng would

die for sure if they fought. After absorbing an Immortal Yang Pill, his cultivation base had reached the peak of Fourth Grade Great Saint. It wouldn't be difficult for him to kill Desolate Wuleng after transforming.

“Haha! What a joke! Desolate Changfeng had come to kill me but was killed by me instead. The only explanation for this is his own incompetence. Unless you are suggesting that only he is allowed to kill me and I'm not allowed to kill him. In that case, where are justice and reason? That was a battle between the geniuses and your abrupt interference showed how shameless you are!” said Jiang Chen, laughing.

“Desolate Wuleng, I know you've secretly tracked and located Gu Chen's coordinates, and then sent Desolate Changfeng to assassinate him. But too bad, Desolate Changfeng was killed instead. As a matter of fact, Desolate Palace should be guilty for initiating the battle. But because that was a battle between the two young geniuses, let's not interfere in it.” Gu Zheng said with a smile.

He now felt more and more satisfied with Jiang Chen. Having such a powerful genius, they would definitely reap boundless benefits.

“Let's put aside Desolate Changfeng's death. I now suspect that he is Jiang Chen. If it wasn't for his transformation technique, he wouldn't be able to kill Desolate Changfeng. Jiang Chen has killed countless of elders, geniuses and even our patriarch. Not even Gu Palace can protect him from those crimes,” said Desolate Wuleng grimly.

“What evidence do you have?” Gu Chen said, his face turned cold.

“Your cultivation base is the evidence. However heaven defying you could be, it was impossible for you to kill Desolate Changfeng with the strength of Third Grade Great Saint, unless you could intentionally enhance your combat strength by many folds,” said Desolate Wuleng.

“Old man, open your eyes and take a good look at my cultivation base to see whether I am a Third Grade Great Saint or not.”

Gu Chen’s Qi shook.

Feeling the Qi Jiang Chen exuded, Desolate Wuleng gaped at him, stunned. He couldn’t believe his own eyes. Just now, he was very occupied by his anger, and completely overlooked Jiang Chen’s cultivation base. Presently, Jiang Chen was no longer a Third Grade Great Saint but a peak Fourth Grade Great Saint.

“No, that’s impossible. When did you advance?!”

Desolate Wuleng almost coughed out a mouthful of blood. Now it seemed that it was because of his own miscalculation that had led to the tragic death of Desolate Changfeng. But then, Gu Chen had just advanced to Third Grade Great Saint. It was simply impossible for him to advance to Fourth Grade Great Saint despite the fact that he was a peerless genius.

It was conceivable why Desolate Wuleng did not know that Jiang Chen had made an advancement because it had just happened only a while ago.

“Haha! Desolate Wuleng, do you see it clearly now? Gu Chen is an unprecedented genius. In my opinion, Gu Chen could kill Desolate Changfeng with ease even though he was only a Fourth Grade Great Saint.”

Gu Zheng laughed aloud. His eyes narrowed into slit and were filled with admiration for Jiang Chen. He couldn't help but feel delighted about Jiang Chen's excellent performance. For all the years he had lived, he had never seen a genius like Jiang Chen. He had never seen any genius who could advance so quickly.

“Little Chen, now that there's no one around, why don't we seal this place? Then, along with Gu Zheng, we will eliminate this Desolate old man.” Big Yellow whispered to Jiang Chen via divine sense.

“No, this old man is incomparably cunning. With his power, I am not certain that I can kill him instantly. It will be bad if he escapes. My identity can't be exposed yet. We'll let him live for a few more days.”

Jiang Chen shook his head. He had greater desire than Big Yellow to kill Desolate Wuleng now but he would not act without absolute certainty. Furthermore, Desolate Palace had begun to suspect his identity. What he needed to do now was to take advantage of this

Great War against the Devil Race to further improve his cultivation.

“Desolate Wuleng, I know that Desolate Palace has been wanting to kill me, too bad your genius is destined to die under my hands. But, if your people are fearless towards death, send as much of them as you want to kill me.”

Jiang Chen left him with those words, and departed with Big Yellow.

Gu Zheng laughed, and left as well, leaving the glum-faced Desolate Wuleng standing there.

“This man’s growth is far too fast.. Whether he may be Gu Chen or Jiang Chen, he must be eliminated as soon as possible. Otherwise, he will be a serious problem in the future.”

Desolate Wuleng gritted his teeth. The loss he suffered was too much and he was partly responsible for it. In his heart, Gu Chen was Jiang Chen. He believed that such monstrous geniuses wouldn’t appear at the same time and would also be similarly close to Gu Family.

Jiang Chen’s rate of growth had reached a frightening extent. If he wasn’t gotten rid of as quickly as possible, he would definitely bring endless trouble to his enemies.

Over the next few days, Jiang Chen and Big Yellow continued

their massacre in every battlefield they went, killing an immense number of devils. Jiang Chen had also edified a powerful Eighth Grade Devil Saint, and kept it as one of his trump cards. They didn't go to Greenlotus Mountain to reunite with Han Yan. Considering the identity of Gu Chen he was representing, getting too close to Han Yan would raise suspicions.

Once his identity was exposed, it wouldn't only be Desolate Palace that would deal with him but also the other five palaces. By then, he would be in a very dangerous situation.

The sky above Western Domain had turned murky. The devils were many fold stronger after a long period of recuperation in the Devil World. Although this war was only between the Devil Race and the Western Domain, it had turned into a war against the entire Saint Origin World after the intervention of Saint Origin Palace.

Considering how strong the experts of Saint Origin Palace were, the Devil Race was losing ground gradually after a few days' time. Taking Great Lightning Tune Temple as their boundary, the devils had all retreated to the middle zone between Great Lightning Tune Temple and the Devil World while all the superiors of Saint Origin Palace had converged on Great Lightning Tune Temple.

Days of tangled warfare had wrecked the Western Domain. After the devil army withdrew from Great Lightning Tune Temple, they had momentarily stopped attacking, giving a brief truce between the two sides.

Inside the Great Lightning Tune Temple, Gu Firmament sat at

the seat of honor while Desolate Emperor, Heavenly Peng King and the other five palace masters sat below together with the other high-rank monks of Great Lightning Tune Temple to discuss strategies about their next move in the war. This time, instead of forcing the Devil Race back into the Devil World, they wanted to annihilate the devils once and for all.

At this moment, a young monk came in and said, “A genius of Devil Race named Sang Ba is challenging the geniuses of Human Race.”

“What’s his cultivation base?” asked Gu Firmament.

“Peak Sixth Grade Devil Saint,” replied the young monk.

“Humph! Is he trying to sneer at our talents?”

A genius of Narang Palace let out a cold humph. In the main hall, all the geniuses’ faces instantly brimmed with fury.

“Whoever can kill Sang Ba to fortify the grandeur of Human Race, I will reward him generously with an Immortal Pill.”

Gu Firmament’s eyes swept across the young audience. There was no doubt that Law Enforcement Palace had such pill, but it was akin to the Immortal Yang Pill that Desolate Changfeng had—a pill that was infused with Immortal Qi—it wasn’t the true Immortal Pill. Nevertheless, this sufficed to exhilarate them. One should know that many geniuses were on par with Sang Ba; their

cultivation base was also at the peak of Sixth Grade Great Saint. If they could obtain an Immortal Pill, they had high hopes of advancing to the next grade.

Even in the Saint Origin Palace, it was extremely hard to find an Immortal Pill. Only Law Enforcement Palace could grant this pill to the one who was worthy of such reward. As such, the geniuses couldn't wait to get into the battle when Gu Firmament had announced to reward such pill to the one who could succeed.

“I'm going to destroy that Sang Ba to fortify the grandeur of our race. The Immortal Pill is certainly mine.”

A youth dressed in white stood up abruptly and strode out of the hall. He had an unparalleled Qi and overwhelming pride, as if the devil genius had already been slaughtered by his sabre.

Hong Long...

Not long after Narang Yu went out, a fierce wave of combat was sent in from outside.

Chapter 996 - The Great Devil Curse

The vibration that came from the outside showed that Narang Yu was engaged in an intense battle with the devil genius – Sang Ba. However, the fierce battle ended in just a few minutes and the sky outside returned to its original calmness.

“Ha-ha! Narang Yu must have already killed Sang Ba. Brother Gu, has the Law Enforcement Palace prepared the Immortal Pill?”

The palace master of Narang Palace, Narang Yunhe laughed pleasantly. His confidence in Narang Yu was high. In his opinion, there was no way that a mere genius from the Devil Race was Narang Yu’s match. By killing the genius of the Devil Race, Narang Yu would not only make a meritorious contribution but would also be rewarded by an Immortal Pill, and also outshine the other geniuses and thus, bring fame to Narang Family.

“Of course, the Immortal Pill is ready. As long as Narang Yu kills Sang Ba, the Immortal Pill will be his.”

Said Gu Firmament with a nod.

“It’s a pity that the pill is snatched by Narang Yu. I wonder if there are any other geniuses from the Devil Race that wants to challenge us. If there is, I will surely grab the opportunity without hesitation.”

“Narang Yu has such a damn good luck for getting that Immortal Pill so easily. If he can advance to the Seventh Grade Great Saint in

this short period of time, he's going to surpass every one of us. What a pity."

"Don't get overly excited. No one knows what the outcome is yet. Narang Yu may have been killed by that devil genius."

.....

Unsettling feeling rippled through the group of geniuses. Many felt annoyed, annoyed that they had lost a great opportunity to be famous. They should've stood out before Narang Yu who not only gained fame but also an Immortal Pill.

The faces of the higher ups of Narang Palace were filled with joy. The truth was that they had just arrived in Saint Origin World to participate in the war but without even thinking about getting an Immortal Pill, the fact that the genius of their palace killed a genius from the Devil Race really boosted the moral and fame of their palace.

Just then, another young monk went in hastily, with a look of fear on his face.

"Not good, not good. Narang Yu was killed."

The young monk said eagerly. He had witnessed the entire process of Narang Yu being killed, thinking about it made him shiver.

“What are you talking about?”

Narang Yunhe suddenly stood up from his seat. The faces of the Narang Palace’s higher ups changed in an instant, while some of their smiling faces froze. This news was simply a slap to their face. Just now, they all assured that Narang Yu had already killed Sang Ba, Narang Yunhe even demanded Gu Firmament to show the Immortal Pill. Neither of them imagined that it would end up like this.

“Narang Yu was killed by Sang Ba!”

The young monk repeated what he just said but this time, it was louder.

“Impossible. It’s absolutely impossible. Yu Er is a first class genius of Narang Palace with a peak Sixth Grade Great Saint cultivation base. Even ordinary Seventh Grade Great Saint will be his prey. How did he die so quickly under the hands of a Sixth Grade Devil Saint?”

A middle-aged man from Narang Palace was overwhelmed by his emotion and could hardly believe it was true. He was no doubt, the father of Narang Yu. To him, his son was his greatest pride and asset. So, how could he possibly accept the fact that his son was killed?

“It was true. That Sang Ba was very terrifying. I have no idea what kind of devil cultivation he’s practicing. He has eaten Narang Yu entirely, leaving nothing behind, not even his bones or

anything!”

The young monk saw the cruel scene, Narang Yu was devoured in front of his own eyes.

Clamor.....

At this instant, a clamor from the crowd resounded throughout the hall. Everyone’s face changed, not just the faces of the people from Narang Palace but also the faces of the other seven palaces. It wasn’t in their favor that such a dazzling genius appeared in the Devil Race. Although the eight palaces didn’t quite get along with each other and had constant competition with one another, they couldn’t deny the capability of Narang Yu. They were sure that this young man could be regarded as the leader of the young generation. However, thinking that not even Narang Yu was an opponent of Sang Ba, they couldn’t help but imagine how terrifying Sang Ba was.

“What should we do now?”

An abbot of the Great Lightning Tune Temple frowned.

“People, in war, morale is the key to victory. A genius from our race was killed by the genius of the Devil Race, this has greatly dampened our morale. In this war with the Devil Race, we are also battling with morale. If we continue to let our morale fall, it is going to hurt us. Moreover, if there is no genius in Saint Origin Palace that can fight Sang Ba, Saint Origin Palace will certainly become the laughing stock of the whole world. Not only will the

Devil Race mock us, even the people of Saint Origin World will look down on us, feeling that Saint Origin Palace only has unearned reputation. So, who's going to volunteer to defeat the genius of the Devil Race next?"

Gu Firmament's tone became solemn. Most of them knew that the battle against Sang Ba wasn't just a battle between geniuses. It involved the reputation of Saint Origin Palace and the direction of this war.

All the geniuses were silent for a moment, contemplating and measuring their own abilities. However, no one felt that they were any better than Narang Yu, which meant that they would die instantly. Neither of them was willing to risk their lives.

"Is there really no one from the young geniuses that can kill that Sang Ba? What if the Law Enforcement Palace offered two Immortal Pills as a reward."

Gu Firmament's Qi fluctuated. The number of Immortal Pills was limited in the Law Enforcement Palace, offering two Immortal Pills was something that had never occurred before in the history of Saint Origin Palace.

"I would like to meet him."

A young man stood up. He was no stranger. He was the genius of Gu Palace, Gu Shuangtan. Immediately after he stood up, he walked towards the exit of the main hall. Everyone could see the determination on his face. The people of Gu Palace looked at him

with respect. In truth, despite giving two Immortal Pills as a reward, people knew it in their hearts that the pills weren't worth as much as their lives. One should know that Sang Ba could even kill Narang Yu, so Gu Shuangtan wouldn't have any advantages over the devil genius and might get himself killed instead.

Gu Shuangtan was doing this for the sake of Gu Palace's dignity as Gu Firmament was the one sitting on the seat of honor right now. If Gu Palace didn't take the initiative to solve this matter, who would?

“Let's go. I would like to see how strong this so-called genius of the Devil Race is.”

Gu Firmament rose from his seat. The others left the main hall in succession. In the blink of an eye, all of them had gone to the void a hundred miles away from the Great Lightning Tune Temple. This place was already engulfed by the flames of battle. The atmosphere was chaotic, filled with smoke and rustling wind.

At this moment, there stood a young man in black robe. This man had a sturdy and hefty physique and the height of over two meters. His face was covered with devil marks. His lips were black-purple and his pair of eyes were as frightening as a venomous serpent.

“This man is Sang Ba.”

The young monk from the Great Lightning Tune Temple said.

Everyone focused their attention on Sang Ba. Looking at his appearance, he was merely a peak Sixth Grade Great Saint and didn't seem different from Narang Yu, however, his ability to kill and consume the entirety of Narang Yu proved his power.

Gu Shuangtan was armed with a sword. With a flash, he came before Sang Ba.

“*Jie* *Jie*, another one has come to die. Your human race is degenerating. No one else amongst the young generation is fit to fight me. If you kowtow before me, I will spare your life.”

Sang Ba looked at Gu Shuangtan and said gruesomely.

“Cut the crap, let's fight!”

Gu Shuangtan showed his fearless-towards-death posture like before. It was impossible for him to kowtow before a devil genius. If he did so, he would throw away the dignity of the Human Race.

Howl!

Gu Shuangtan struck first. The long sword in his hand turned into a heavenly river and reached Sang Ba in a blink.

“Humph!”

Sang Ba gave out a cold humph. With a wave of his hands,

endless devil waves came gushing out, turning into a black devil wheel. The giant devil wheel collided with Gu Shuangtan's sword and produced a great spark.

“Hulu Ye Basa.....”

Subsequently, Sang Ba uttered a long line of devil curse that was abstruse and ancient. It then turned into black symbols that rushed up into the sky. The curse sounded like some kind of ancient mantra and was unpleasant to hear.

Everyone could clearly see that Gu Shuangtan's eyes froze for a moment under the impact of the devil curse.

“Not good, this is the Great Devil Curse that has been lost since the ancient times. I can't believe it has reappeared.”

The abbot of the Great Lightning Tune Temple couldn't help but exclaim despite his composure.

Howl.....

Sure enough, right after the abbot finished his words, Sang Ba's body began to change, turning into giant devil of three hundred meters size. He opened his huge mouth, surrounded by powerful devil curse which turned into a domain. Then, the mouth straightaway swallowed Gu Shuangtan before he could react.

“Bastard!”

An elder of Gu Palace scolded.

The devil waves billowed but returned to its usual calmness very quickly. Sang Ba reappeared, however Gu Shuangtan was already gone. Obviously, Gu Shuangtan was devoured by the devil, just like Narang Yu. The Qi of Sang Ba became stronger after devouring Gu Shuangtan.

“That’s a very terrifying devil spell. Anyone that is caught in that domain will temporarily lose their consciousness as if they have entered an illusory world. If we can’t think of a way to break that spell, anyone who comes up will only face the same fate.”

Said Desolate Emperor.

Many people were horrified, especially the young geniuses. Every one of their faces was brimful of fear. They couldn’t deny the horrifyingness of Sang Ba, they could not find any flaws in that terrifying devil curse.

“This is the ancient Great Devil Curse that has been long lost. I didn’t expect to see it again.”

An expert of the Great Lightning Tune Temple revealed a look of terror.

“Doesn’t the Great Lightning Tune Temple have the means to break the Great Devil Curse?”

Gu Firmament looked over at the abbot.

Chapter 997 - The Battle

“Yes, we once have the Great Compassion Mantra which could rival the Great Devil Curse. Unfortunately, the Great Compassion Mantra appeared only in the heyday of Buddha Sect. After that, it vanished along with the Great Devil Curse. Now the Great Devil Curse has emerged once more but the supreme scriptures like the Great Compassion Mantra are long gone in the Buddha Sect.”

The abbot shook his head helplessly.

“If even the Buddha Sect could not deal with the Great Devil Curse... So, are we letting this kid continue flaunting his prowess? Why don't I get rid of him right now for good?” said Narang Yunhe with a cruel face. He was still aggrieved after the tragic death of his genius.

“No, this is a competition between geniuses. We can't let the Devil Race mock our young generation, this will deal a great blow to the dignity of our race and our morale. My desire to kill him is even stronger than yours, for we have just lost a valuable genius.” Gu Firmament denied the idea immediately.

Given their cultivation base, killing Sang Ba would be as easy as raising their hands, however they couldn't do so. If they did, it would hurt the Human Race's reputation badly. Besides, the devil experts must be watching the battle in secret, they surely wouldn't watch their genius get killed by their enemies.

“Then what should we do now? All the Sixth Grade Great Saint

geniuses are here; two have already died and the others would also probably die if they were to confront this brat. However, we can't just let this brat show off his existence here, it is very damaging to our morale."

Indignation filled Narang Yunhe's face.

"Yes, we can't, but it seems like you have forgotten about one man, Gu Chen—the genius who has risen from Gu Palace. I believe he could kill Sang Ba." Somebody said.

He was without a doubt Desolate Wuleng. The corner of his mouth revealed a cold smirk. His intention for suggesting Gu Chen's name was pretty obvious.

"No way. That Gu Chen is merely a Third Grade Great Saint genius. He could not match Sang Ba regardless of how powerful he is."

Narang Yunhe waved his hand in disapproval.

"It seems like you all don't know that Gu Chen is an unparalleled genius. He has just advanced to the Fourth Grade Great Saint, and killed Desolate Changfeng in a recent battle," said Desolate Wuleng. He couldn't help but grit his teeth when he thought of Desolate Changfeng's death.

"What? Gu Chen has killed Desolate Changfeng? How is that possible?"

“Anyone should know that Desolate Changfeng is a peak Sixth Grade Great Saint expert. Even if Gu Chen had advanced to the fourth grade, it is still impossible for him to kill Desolate Changfeng.”

“That man is truly horrifying. It must be true as this came from an elder. Besides, we haven’t seen Desolate Changfeng for several days now. If he was still alive, he would have appeared in this special occasion.”

.....

Many of them were shocked by this remark. If this didn’t come from the mouth of Desolate Wuleng, they would never believe it. For an instant, all eyes fell upon Gu Palace’s group.

“I’m afraid that Gu Chen defeating Desolate Changfeng only proves that he is the only one that can defeat Sang Ba. Master of Gu Palace, this is a matter of our race’s honour. I hope that you can summon Gu Chen here as quickly as possible.” Desolate Wuleng clasped his fists at Gu Firmament and said.

After witnessing the horrifyingness of Sang Ba, especially the Great Devil Curse, he strongly believed that Gu Chen probably wouldn’t be that young devil’s opponent either. Although he hadn’t witnessed how Gu Chen killed Desolate Changfeng, he knew that battle lasted for a period of time. In other words, it wasn’t easy for Gu Chen to kill Desolate Changfeng.

But then again, the geniuses who confronted Sang Ba were instantly killed. Whether it was Narang Yu or Gu Shuangtan, who were both on par with Desolate Changfeng, they were both eaten by Sang Ba alive. Although Jiang Chen was very strong, if he could not counter the Great Devil Curse, they were afraid that he would face the same result. This was the best opportunity to erase the existence of Jiang Chen.

The higher ups of Gu Palace glared at Desolate Wuleng. What this old man said was abominable. The idea he suggested worried them. After losing Gu Shuangtan, they didn't wish to lose another great genius—Gu Chen. Otherwise, Gu Palace would suffer a considerable loss. One should know that Gu Chen had already become the hope and future of Gu Family as well as Gu Palace.

“Master of Gu Palace, if only Gu Chen has the capability to fight Sang Ba, then we should let him confront this devil. Or else, we won't be able to control the situation,” said Narang Yunhe.

Gu Firmament looked over at Gu Zheng and said, “Gu Zheng, get Gu Chen here.”

“Palace Master, this is...”

Gu Zheng frowned, getting Gu Chen at this moment would only get him killed. Gu Zheng didn't have the slightest bit of certainty that Gu Chen could survive the fight against Sang Ba.

“Go now, Gu Chen needs this kind of training,” said Gu Firmament.

He knew the true identity of Gu Chen and his transformation technique. After Jiang Chen advanced to the Fourth Grade Great Saint, he believed that there wouldn't be any accidents even if Jiang Chen failed to defeat Sang Ba.

“Yes.”

Gu Zheng turned and left after darting a glare at Desolate Wuleng.

“Haha! Is the Human Race short of geniuses? Of all the geniuses in Saint Origin Palace, none of you has the guts to fight me? It seems like your race has really declined, the Devil Race is surely destined to rule the whole world.” Sang Ba said, laughed, and sneered.

He unleashed an overwhelming devil force with every line that he spoke, which reduced the morale of the human race's army severely. If no human genius would accept the challenge of this devil in a couple of moments, their morale would fall even more.

“I have no idea when Gu Chen will arrive. Sang Ba certainly hurt our fighting spirit,” said Heavenly Peng King.

“Oh, I just remembered something. Back then, Ancestor Greenlotus once obtained a supreme scripture of Buddha Sect. It was probably the long-lost Great Compassion Mantra.” The abbot said.

Hearing the name of Ancestor Greenlotus, Desolate Emperor's facial expression revealed some awkwardness, but it was covered up very quickly.

“Abbot, what's the use of saying this? Ancestor Greenlotus already died a hundred years ago,” said the palace master of Shi Palace.

“I wouldn't dare comment whether Ancestor Greenlotus is dead or not, but as far as I know, Ancestor Greenlotus has left his inheritance in Greenlotus Mountain. The mountain which his disciple, Great Monk Ran Feng, has been guarding. If I'm not mistaken, the Great Compassion Mantra is in his possession. If he's willing to hand over that mantra, we will be able to restrain this devil genius,” said the abbot.

It was part of his calculations. Anyone should know that Great Lightning Tune Temple had expended enormous efforts to try and get the inheritance of Ancestor Greenlotus, however, Great Monk Ran Feng insisted in his refusal.

Thus, today's event produced a reasonable excuse for them to seek Great Monk Ran Feng again.

“All right. We'll send a message to Greenlotus Mountain.”

Gu Firmament immediately sent out a signal to Greenlotus Mountain via divine sense. He was neither an enemy nor a friend of Ancestor Greenlotus. If Great Compassion Mantra was really in

Greenlotus Mountain, it might be able to help Jiang Chen in the battle.

Greenlotus Mountain. During the truce, Tyrant, Great Monk Ran Feng, Han Yan and Yan Chenyu had been waiting. Instead of going to Great Lightning Tune Temple, they had formed an independent team.

Simultaneously, everyone received the message sent by Gu Firmament, which also informed them about the situation in the Great Lightning Tune Temple.

“I didn’t expect that such a terrifying genius from the Devil Race has appeared. Not even a peak Sixth Grade Great Saint genius of Saint Origin Palace could fight him,” said Han Yan.

“That was because of the Great Devil Curse which had been lost for a very long time. I hadn’t thought that it will appear once more. Sang Ba’s ability to wield the Great Devil Curse proves his extraordinary talent. Now, Saint Origin Palace is demanding us to hand over the supreme scripture of Buddha Sect—Great Compassion Mantra. However, there was no such mantra amongst the inheritance left by my master,” said Great Monk Ran Feng.

“That’s right. I have obtained the three Dharma Seals left by my grandmaster and some scriptures, but not the Great Compassion Mantra. However, I would like to meet this devil genius and see how powerful he actually is.” Tyrant’s said, while his Qi shook.

His was now Sixth Grade Great Saint, and moreover, the

cultivation he practiced belonged to Buddha Sect, which was the natural enemy of the Devil Race. As such, he was quite confident in fighting against Sang Ba even without the Great Compassion Mantra.

“Don’t underestimate your enemy. You have no idea how terrifying the Great Devil Curse is.” Great Monk Ran Feng said in a worried tone.

“Master, my entire body is filled with the strength of Buddha and has absorbed the Sarira that was combined with grandmaster’s Immortal Soul. If I didn’t even dare fight the genius of the Devil Race, wouldn’t it put Master and Grandmaster’s reputation to shame? I will go and meet this devil now.”

After finishing his words, he vanished.

“We should also go and have a look,” said Han Yan.

Then, he, Yan Chenyu and Great Monk Ran Feng followed suit. Now that a terrifying genius from the Devil Race had emerged, they couldn’t help but want to know more about the power of the devil.

“I have come to fight you.”

Tyrant looked at Sang Ba, and at the same time, unleashed his powerful Qi.

“Where did this young monk come from? He has already reached the Sixth Grade Great Saint. It is really unexpected to see such a terrifying genius in the Great Lightning Tune Temple.”

“That’s right. I thought they said that the Buddha Sect has declined tremendously? I didn’t expect to see such a talent too. Even though Buddha Sect has been the natural enemy of the Devil Race, I’m still not sure whether this young monk can defeat Sang Ba.”

.....

Tyrant’s emergence made many pairs of eyes sparkle.

“He’s Tyrant, the disciple of Great Monk Ran Feng. I never thought that he has already grown to such a horrifying extent.”

The abbot of Great Lightning Tune Temple had a look of shock and disbelief on his face.

“It turns out that he is a descendant of Ancestor Greenlotus. Perhaps he has already inherited the inheritance of Ancestor Greenlotus and possibly the Great Compassion Mantra.”

Gu Firmament’s eyes glittered. In his heart, he was impatiently hoping that this young monk could eliminate Sang Ba so that Jiang Chen didn’t have to fight him.

However, it was still a question whether Tyrant could eliminate

Sang Ba because even Tyrant himself was not sure about this.

Chapter 998 - Observing the Battle in Secret

Tyrant's emergence immediately became the center of attention. After learning that he was the descendant of Ancestor Greenlotus, a glimmer of hope started to shine in their hearts. When Ancestor Greenlotus was at the height of his power, he was a renowned figure not just in the Western Domain but also across the entire Saint Origin World. He was recognized as the Supreme Buddha ranked after the Greatest Saint and was the truly the nemesis of the Devil Race.

Sang Ba had been sneering at them from the beginning until now, which dealt a great blow to their dignity and reputation; their morale had almost hit rock bottom.

If there was no other competent young genius that could stand up for the Human Race, the devil army would strike the second time by taking advantage of the situation. It was already imaginable how many casualties they would suffer considering how dispirited they were at the moment.

Putting aside the possibility that Tyrant could kill Sang Ba, his appearance alone had already given them a sense of relief and a glimmer of hope to the Human Race, making them feel that there were still some competent geniuses in Buddha Sect.

Cold wind rustled. Sang Ba removed his sneer and stared fixedly at Tyrant who stood opposite of him unblinkingly. The cold smile at the corner of his mouth intensified. His eyes were blazing with killing intent. Being a devil, what he hated the most were monks. In the history of Saint Origin World, the Buddha Sect had been

causing unimaginable damage to the Devil Race.

If the Devil Race was able to seize control of the Great Lightning Tune Temple, they wouldn't allow any one of them to live. All of the monks would have to die torturously.

“What a young monk! I have never expected that Buddha Sect still have such a genius, unfortunately your appearance won't change anything. Although Buddha Sect has the ability to suppress us, none of you is able to restrain my Great Devil Curse, unless you cultivated the Great Compassion Mantra. It's a pity that such a possibility doesn't exist.”

Said Sang Ba.

“I can kill you even without the Great Compassion Mantra.”

Tyrant replied with a similar arrogance. His body was now filled with the true Qi of Buddha Sect and was at his peak form. Plus, he had just advanced to the Sixth Grade Great Saint. So, how could he possibly be afraid of Sang Ba?

“Really? Then, show me what you have. Peerless Devil Wheel.”

Sang Ba straight away casted his skill. His body was covered with steaming devil flames. A hundred meter large devil wheel struck out. The giant wheel looked like a devil's face that was cold and emotionless, slamming down at Tyrant.

“Tai!(呔)”

Shouted Tyrant. His eyes turned golden as if two scorching sun. The Buddha light and mystical Sanskrit from his body shot up, piercing through the sky. At this moment, he looked just like the embodiment of Buddha, absolutely unparalleled.

Hong Long.....

Tyrant struck out the Fudo Seal. An enormous dharma seal materialized. The majestic and admirable face of the Fudo collided with the Peerless Devil Wheel.

The sky and the land shook. This was a direct clash between the Buddha and the Devil. The impact of the intense collision instantly ripped the void apart.

Deng Deng Deng.....

In the gazes of countless people, Sang Ba was sent staggering back for the first time. He made several paces backwards before regaining his balance. Tyrant on the other hand was still standing in the void, immovable. His body was covered with golden brilliance, as if he was a living Buddha.

Everyone who witnessed this scene cheered up.

“Great. The descendant of Ancestor Greenlotus is no doubt extraordinary. He has actually forced Sang Ba to withdraw.”

“That’s awesome! Never thought that such a powerful genius has emerged in Buddha Sect once more; he has the demeanour of Ancestor Greenlotus!”

“It’s too early to celebrate. Sang Ba hasn’t even casted that horrifying Great Devil Curse yet.”

.....

Many of them were exhilarated, Tyrant displayed his extraordinary talent in his first exchange with Sang Ba, which boosted their morale significantly. Many high-rank monks from the Great Lightning Tune Temple’s faces turned slightly unpleasant. Although they knew that Great Monk Ran Feng had a disciple, they hadn’t imagined that his disciple had already reached such a terrifying extent.

Moreover, the relationship between the Great Lightning Tune Temple and Greenlotus Mountain had always been bad. Given the fact that Tyrant had become very strong, if he were to seek revenge on the Great Lightning Tune Temple, no one in the temple would be able to stand against this young monk.

“What a great monk! You are a lot better than those so-called geniuses of Saint Origin Palace, but this will be the end for you.”

Similarly, Sang Ba was shocked, but that didn’t really concern him much because he was highly confident in his Great Devil Curse.

His Qi began to change as he spat out devil incantations continuously. Lines of devil marks appeared all around him. The incantations he produced turned into a black domain, instantly covering the entire battlefield, trapping Tyrant within.

“This was the real Great Devil Curse. This devil must have the purest bloodline in the Devil Race.”

In a far distance, Great Monk Ran Feng had a look of worry on his face. Although his cultivation base wasn't considered very strong, he had extraordinary knowledge and experience. He could instantly see the real strength of Sang Ba with just a glance.

However, Han Yan, who was standing beside Great Monk Ran Feng looked as if he had fallen into some kind of trance. His black eyes were staring at the devil domain created by the Great Devil Curse without blinking; his eyes glittered and his mouth was whispering in silence.

If one was to talk about lineage, the Ancient Devil lineage was the purest and the most ancient lineage in the Devil Race. So, right now Han Yan was using his noble bloodline to carefully observe the Great Devil Curse. After the activation of his Ancient Divine Devil Bloodline, he was able to understand the incantation despite its mysteriousness.

The devil domain created by the Great Devil Curse was akin to an illusory world. Anyone who fell into it was destined to be devoured.

Sang Ba turned into a peerless giant devil, his eerie eyes were fixed on Tyrant as devil waves surged out of his mouth. “Devour the soul!”

While listening to the incessant buzz, invisible serpent-like waves rippled deep into Tyrant’s soul.

He had a look of shock on his face as he felt a trace of tremble in his innermost soul. He finally understood the horror of the Great Devil Curse and how the two geniuses ended up in a tragic death earlier. Under the attack of this devil curse, the opponent would temporarily lose his senses and turn into a waiting-to-be-slaughtered lamb.

However, Tyrant’s body was filled with pure Buddha essence and the Sarira infused with Ancestor Greenlotus’ Immortal Soul. Thus, the effect that the Great Devil Curse had on him wasn’t significant, at least not as significant as to the point that he would be eaten alive like Narang Yu and Gu Shuangtan.

“Fudo Seal.”

“Lion King Seal.”

“Karmapa Seal.”

Tyrant struck out the three supreme dharma seals of Buddha Sect in a row. Three giant images of Buddha materialized. It was a two

pronged approach, keeping guard over Tyrant and launching a strong attack simultaneously.

“You are truly a powerful monk, for being able to resist my Great Devil Curse.”

Sang Ba was shocked once more. Ever since he cultivated the Great Devil Curse, he rarely met an enemy. Today, he had defeated two great geniuses of Saint Origin Palace, However, he didn't expect to be stopped by a monk.

Hong Long Long.....

Continuous and powerful attacks spread out from the devil domain, turning the fragmented void turbulent. The fierce battle between Tyrant and Sang was astonishing. Neither of them managed to grab the upperhand.

“That monk is amazing. He and Sang Ba are equally matched. Judging from this, he is a lot stronger than the geniuses of Saint Origin Palace like us.”

“Not necessarily. That monk is without a doubt terrifying but not necessarily better than us. The main reason that he can fight against Sang Ba is his cultivation technique. All along, Buddha Sect has been the nemesis of the Devil Race. However, it's unlikely for that the monk to kill Sang Ba.”

“The technique he casted just now was the three supreme

dharma seals of Buddha Sect, which has also disappeared for a very long time. It seems like he has already obtained the inheritance of Ancestor Greenlotus.”

“In any case, whether the monk can kill Sang Ba or not, he has certainly boosted our morale.”

.....

A lot of them were shocked by Tyrant’s prowess. Putting the comparison aside, judging by the skills that he is using against Sang Ba, it showed that he is a peerless genius that had never appeared in Buddha Sect for over a hundred years.

Meanwhile, facing towards the other direction of the battlefield, in the void above the borderland, there were three silhouettes watching the battle attentively. They were two men and a dog. They were Jiang Chen, Big Yellow and Gu Zheng.

In these past few days, Jiang Chen had been in seclusion in the miniature spatial zone. After being found by Gu Zheng, he was about to meet Sang Ba when he saw Tyrant fighting intensely with the devil genius.

“How the hell has that dude become so powerful? He is already a Sixth Grade Great Saint now...”

Big Yellow couldn’t help but exclaim.

“It’s very normal because he has encountered some sort of great luck. It would be abnormal if he hasn’t achieved this much.”

A smile was plastered at the corner of his mouth. Tyrant’s tremendous change was already expected. In his opinion, if Tyrant didn’t have such an achievement after absorbing the Sarira with Immortal Soul, it would only show how inferior Tyrant was.

“That young monk is indeed very strong. He is worthy of being a descendant of Ancestor Greenlotus. However, if the battle continued this way, it would be impossible for him to eliminate Sang Ba. It is already considered very good if he tied with Sang Ba in this battle. I’m afraid that you would have to get into the battlefield in order to eliminate that devil genius.”

Gu Zheng looked over at Jiang Chen.

“Tyrant has just advanced. He needs a training like this. We’ll let him fight for a little longer. If he starts to have some difficulties in battle, I will interfere.”

Said Jiang Chen. Sang Ba was the top genius of the Devil Race. If the Ancestral Dragon Pagoda could absorb such a devil, the Fourth Level would be completely condensed and even the embryonic form of Fifth Level might even be possible.

“Gu Chen, the Great Devil Curse of Sang Ba is too powerful. Do you have certainty in defeating him?”

Asked Gu Zheng. Even Gu Shuangtan and Narang Yu were both killed. He felt incomparably worried for letting Jiang Chen confront such a horrifying devil.

“Rest assured, elder. I will surely avenge Gu Shuangtan’s death.”

Cold light flashed in Jiang Chen’s eyes. Although he didn’t have a particularly strong bond with Gu Shuangtan, Gu Shuangtuan had once stood up for him back at the Refining Tower. Now that Gu Shuangtan was dead, he naturally had to destroy Sang Ba in order to avenge his death.

Chapter 999 - The True Suppression

Hong Long...

The entire battlefield had been completely destroyed. The two of them had created a whole new battlefield. Although the intense battle between them lasted for three hours, neither one had managed to gain the upperhand, both of them each had an edge over the other.

Sang Ba's Great Devil Curse was his biggest edge in this fight, while Tyrant had his pure Buddha cultivation method, which was the bane of the Devils.

In this case, there was no clear winner as both of them had an advantage over the other.

"Dammit! This bald monk is annoyingly strong!" Sang Ba said, raging.

He had never encountered an opponent that he couldn't defeat ever since he mastered the Great Devil Curse. The opponent that he was fighting right now was incomparably irritating. The reason he appeared today was to crush the morale of the Human Race. Unexpectedly, a young monk appeared and disrupted his mission, and also boosted the moral of the human army.

Tyrant on the opposite side also felt frustrated, however, it was only for a moment. Meeting a strong opponent after advancing his Buddha Dharma was surely a good thing for him. This could be

treated as a rare training. As far as he was concerned, the benefits of this battle would be immeasurable.

“Little Chen, what do you think of this Great Devil Curse?” asked Big Yellow.

“It is no doubt a profound curse. After analysing its origin, I found out that it could form an illusory realm with its incantations which was somewhat similar to the Great Illusion Realm. If I use the dragon transformation skill along with the Illusion Heart Sutra, I could suppress the devil’s Great Devil Curse. I think Tyrant has had enough rounds with that devil. It’s my turn to fight him,” replied Jiang Chen plainly.

Observing the fight secretly proved to be beneficial for him. It had given him the chance to gain an insight on the Great Devil Curse and the techniques that could restrain it which would save him lots of trouble.

His current cultivation base was enough to handle Sang Ba, even without transforming into a half-dragon. It had been a long time since he last used the Great Illusion Realm, so no one in Saint Origin Palace would suspect his identity if he used this technique, including Desolate Wuleng.

Swoosh!

Jiang Chen moved. The Heavenly Saint Sword roared. A thin brilliant sword light descended from the sky, slashing at the centre of the battlefield where Tyrant and Sang Ba were at. The sword

intent was akin to the surging sea that roared incessantly; it fiercely tore the battlefield in half.

This abrupt change undoubtedly startled all the onlookers. Sang Ba and Tyrant were shocked the most. All pairs of eyes, including the monks of the Great Lighting Tune Temple and the higher ups of Devil Race who had been observing the battle secretly, fell upon the unexpected outsider—a youth dressed in white.

“It’s Gu Chen.”

“Gu Chen has appeared! His power sure is unparalleled. He was able to unleash such a tyrannical Qi even if he is a mere Fourth Grade Great Saint. Also, it was unbelievable that he was able to cut the battlefield into two.”

“At last, Gu Chen is here. However, even the young monk couldn’t take down Sang Ba, can he really deal with this terrifying devil genius?”

.....

Jiang Chen’s emergence shocked everyone. The geniuses of Saint Origin Palace had a startled look on their faces. All of them were youngsters who were full of arrogance, but now, they felt an invisible pressure from this newcomer. Gu Chen’s name had no doubt become the number one genius of Saint Origin Palace.

Concern was on the faces of the higher ups of Gu Palace,

especially so for Gu Firmament. They were worried for Gu Chen, however, they also saw a glimmer of hope from him. If Gu Chen could really eliminate Sang Ba, it would bring boundless benefits to him and their palace. Putting aside the benefits that they would get, it would also make Gu Palace the number one hero in Saint Origin World.

As a matter of fact, the position of palace master that Gu Firmament held right now was also earned by Jiang Chen.

On the battlefield, Sang Ba looked over at Jiang Chen and said coldly, “Who’re you?”

Regarding Sang Ba’s question, Jiang Chen didn’t even look at him. Instead, he turned to Tyrant and grinned. Although Tyrant hadn’t seen such a face before, he was able to discern Jiang Chen’s identity from his smile and eyes alone. Furthermore, Jiang Chen had already told Tyrant about his identity before this.

“Young monk, I see that you are tired. Why don’t you withdraw yourself from this battle?” said Jiang Chen in a mocking tone.

“Be careful. This guy isn’t easy to handle.”

Tyrant warned, and then turned and re-joined his master and Han Yan. In truth, Jiang Chen was the only one who could convince him to give up even if the battle was very intoxicating.

Besides, Tyrant was clear in his heart that if he couldn’t

eliminate Sang Ba, there's only one amongst the younger generation of Saint Origin World that could kill Sang Ba. He had great confidence in Jiang Chen and as far as he could recall, Jiang Chen had never fought a battle that he couldn't win.

“Not bad, boy.”

Great Monk Ran Feng praised his disciple generously. Presently, Tyrant had become his greatest pride. No genius in Saint Origin Palace was able to fight Sang Ba. Even though Tyrant wasn't able to eliminate the devil genius, he had least had a draw with the devil. He had helped Greenlotus Mountain and the entire Buddha Sect earn dignity.

“Tyrant has become undeniably strong but too bad, the Great Devil Curse was interrupted. I almost had fully comprehended the curse,” said Han Yan regretfully.

“Don't worry, Ah Yan. I will let you comprehend it deeper in a while.” A voice was transmitted into Han Yan's ears. The voice was undeniably Jiang Chen's.

Given Jiang Chen's shrewdness, how could he not know that Han Yan was comprehending the Great Devil Curse? To Han Yan, this was an excellent opportunity. With his Ancient Divine Devil Bloodline, it wasn't impossible for him to fully comprehend the Great Devil Curse. Besides, that would also make him advance, pushing him to the Sixth Grade Great Saint.

After hearing Jiang Chen's voice, Han Yan's body trembled with

excitement. It seemed like Jiang Chen was still the person who understood Han Yan very well. Without any delay, he adjusted himself to the best possible state and circulated his bloodline at maximum speed, putting all of his concentration on the battlefield. He had reasons to believe that Jiang Chen's arrival was the end of Sang Ba. Despite the terror of the Great Devil Curse, Jiang Chen must have some kind of techniques that could restrain it.

“That Sang Ba is terrifying. I wonder if Brother Chen can handle him,” said Yan Chenyu worriedly.

“Don't worry. Little Chen is now a Fourth Grade Great Saint. Given his heaven defying talent, he could certainly handle Sang Ba even without the dragon transformation,” said Tyrant.

He always saw Jiang Chen as omnipotent and confident. As such, a picture was already painted in his heart a long time ago—when Jiang Chen showed up on the battlefield, his opponent would definitely fall.

At the group of the Great Lightning Tune Temple, all the members of Gu Palace were fixing their eyes on Jiang Chen. They had to admit that such a peerless genius was the pride of Gu Palace, but they still couldn't help worrying for him when he was confronting Sang Ba.

Gu Firmament had even made up his mind to save Jiang Chen should a critical moment arose. He would rather hurt his reputation than let Jiang Chen die.

A sneer appeared on the faces of the Desolate Palace's members, particularly on Desolate Wuleng's. The hatred he had for Jiang Chen made him grit his teeth and want to charge forward and rip Jiang Chen apart. The tragic death of Desolate Changfeng was like a sharp thorn in his heart, he could never get over it. If he could borrow the hands of Sang Ba to eliminate Jiang Chen, he would surely be overjoyed.

On the battlefield, Sang Ba couldn't help but laugh after noticing the cultivation base of the youth in white.

“Arrogance. This is literally arrogance. I have never thought that there is such an arrogant human in your race. A puny Fourth Grade Great Saint dared to appear and fight me? You simply don't know what's life and death. Human Race is surely severely lacking of geniuses.”

Sang Ba didn't put Jiang Chen in his eyes, which was not strange considering his status. He was deemed to be an invincible existence amongst the young generation of the Devil Race. So how could he possibly put a young man with a cultivation base two levels lower than him in his eyes? Anyway, it was impossible to understand the scariness of Jiang Chen without fighting him in person.

“Is that so?”

The corner of Jiang Chen's mouth curved into a sneer. Without bothering to rebut Sang Ba's remark, he casted the Azure Dragon Five Steps. Although he was in human form, it was still the terrifying Azure Dragon Five Steps. He lunged at extreme speed. The Spatial Shift had modified the paces of the technique. By the

time he reached Sang Ba, he had already made the fifth step.

A surge of a towering, mountain-like energy rushed out of his body. It was the Purest Yang Qi. Adding the strands of pure yang flames, Sang Ba was restrained from even using his devil power.

“What?!”

Sang Ba exclaimed. He immediately put away his contempt for Jiang Chen, he was shocked to find that this young man’s attack could suppress him even more compared to the cultivation method of Buddha Sect; this was absolutely a one-sided oppression.

“Peerless Devil Wheel!”

In the midst of hopelessness, he hastily struck out the Peerless Devil Wheel. However, this giant wheel couldn’t even withstand Jiang Chen’s step and was pulverized.

Bang...

The devil wheel was crushed. Countless dragon marks rippled under Jiang Chen’s feet as he stepped on the devil.

Deng Deng Deng...

Sang Ba couldn’t stand the immense pressure, and was sent flying up to 300 meters away, he then spurted out a mouthful of

black devil blood, he had received a tremendous backlash.

It was just one move but the impact was enormous. The Sixth Grade Devil Saint was definitely no match for Jiang Chen in a head-on confrontation. He should be proud as he had only been injured after receiving Jiang Chen's Azure Dragon Five Steps. One should know that a Sixth Grade Great Saint like Desolate Changfeng was just like an ant in the hands of Jiang Chen and could be killed at any second.

“Good.”

Gu Firmament couldn't help but let out a praise. Exhilaration was plastered on the faces of the experts of Gu Palace. The fact that Jiang Chen had severely injured Sang Ba in their first exchange made everyone excited, and boosted the morale of the Human Race.

Chapter 999 - The True Suppression

Hong Long...

The entire battlefield had been completely destroyed. The two of them had created a whole new battlefield. Although the intense battle between them lasted for three hours, neither one had managed to gain the upperhand, both of them each had an edge over the other.

Sang Ba's Great Devil Curse was his biggest edge in this fight, while Tyrant had his pure Buddha cultivation method, which was the bane of the Devils.

In this case, there was no clear winner as both of them had an advantage over the other.

"Dammit! This bald monk is annoyingly strong!" Sang Ba said, raging.

He had never encountered an opponent that he couldn't defeat ever since he mastered the Great Devil Curse. The opponent that he was fighting right now was incomparably irritating. The reason he appeared today was to crush the morale of the Human Race. Unexpectedly, a young monk appeared and disrupted his mission, and also boosted the moral of the human army.

Tyrant on the opposite side also felt frustrated, however, it was only for a moment. Meeting a strong opponent after advancing his Buddha Dharma was surely a good thing for him. This could be

treated as a rare training. As far as he was concerned, the benefits of this battle would be immeasurable.

“Little Chen, what do you think of this Great Devil Curse?” asked Big Yellow.

“It is no doubt a profound curse. After analysing its origin, I found out that it could form an illusory realm with its incantations which was somewhat similar to the Great Illusion Realm. If I use the dragon transformation skill along with the Illusion Heart Sutra, I could suppress the devil’s Great Devil Curse. I think Tyrant has had enough rounds with that devil. It’s my turn to fight him,” replied Jiang Chen plainly.

Observing the fight secretly proved to be beneficial for him. It had given him the chance to gain an insight on the Great Devil Curse and the techniques that could restrain it which would save him lots of trouble.

His current cultivation base was enough to handle Sang Ba, even without transforming into a half-dragon. It had been a long time since he last used the Great Illusion Realm, so no one in Saint Origin Palace would suspect his identity if he used this technique, including Desolate Wuleng.

Swoosh!

Jiang Chen moved. The Heavenly Saint Sword roared. A thin brilliant sword light descended from the sky, slashing at the centre of the battlefield where Tyrant and Sang Ba were at. The sword

intent was akin to the surging sea that roared incessantly; it fiercely tore the battlefield in half.

This abrupt change undoubtedly startled all the onlookers. Sang Ba and Tyrant were shocked the most. All pairs of eyes, including the monks of the Great Lighting Tune Temple and the higher ups of Devil Race who had been observing the battle secretly, fell upon the unexpected outsider—a youth dressed in white.

“It’s Gu Chen.”

“Gu Chen has appeared! His power sure is unparalleled. He was able to unleash such a tyrannical Qi even if he is a mere Fourth Grade Great Saint. Also, it was unbelievable that he was able to cut the battlefield into two.”

“At last, Gu Chen is here. However, even the young monk couldn’t take down Sang Ba, can he really deal with this terrifying devil genius?”

.....

Jiang Chen’s emergence shocked everyone. The geniuses of Saint Origin Palace had a startled look on their faces. All of them were youngsters who were full of arrogance, but now, they felt an invisible pressure from this newcomer. Gu Chen’s name had no doubt become the number one genius of Saint Origin Palace.

Concern was on the faces of the higher ups of Gu Palace,

especially so for Gu Firmament. They were worried for Gu Chen, however, they also saw a glimmer of hope from him. If Gu Chen could really eliminate Sang Ba, it would bring boundless benefits to him and their palace. Putting aside the benefits that they would get, it would also make Gu Palace the number one hero in Saint Origin World.

As a matter of fact, the position of palace master that Gu Firmament held right now was also earned by Jiang Chen.

On the battlefield, Sang Ba looked over at Jiang Chen and said coldly, “Who’re you?”

Regarding Sang Ba’s question, Jiang Chen didn’t even look at him. Instead, he turned to Tyrant and grinned. Although Tyrant hadn’t seen such a face before, he was able to discern Jiang Chen’s identity from his smile and eyes alone. Furthermore, Jiang Chen had already told Tyrant about his identity before this.

“Young monk, I see that you are tired. Why don’t you withdraw yourself from this battle?” said Jiang Chen in a mocking tone.

“Be careful. This guy isn’t easy to handle.”

Tyrant warned, and then turned and re-joined his master and Han Yan. In truth, Jiang Chen was the only one who could convince him to give up even if the battle was very intoxicating.

Besides, Tyrant was clear in his heart that if he couldn’t

eliminate Sang Ba, there's only one amongst the younger generation of Saint Origin World that could kill Sang Ba. He had great confidence in Jiang Chen and as far as he could recall, Jiang Chen had never fought a battle that he couldn't win.

“Not bad, boy.”

Great Monk Ran Feng praised his disciple generously. Presently, Tyrant had become his greatest pride. No genius in Saint Origin Palace was able to fight Sang Ba. Even though Tyrant wasn't able to eliminate the devil genius, he had least had a draw with the devil. He had helped Greenlotus Mountain and the entire Buddha Sect earn dignity.

“Tyrant has become undeniably strong but too bad, the Great Devil Curse was interrupted. I almost had fully comprehended the curse,” said Han Yan regretfully.

“Don't worry, Ah Yan. I will let you comprehend it deeper in a while.” A voice was transmitted into Han Yan's ears. The voice was undeniably Jiang Chen's.

Given Jiang Chen's shrewdness, how could he not know that Han Yan was comprehending the Great Devil Curse? To Han Yan, this was an excellent opportunity. With his Ancient Divine Devil Bloodline, it wasn't impossible for him to fully comprehend the Great Devil Curse. Besides, that would also make him advance, pushing him to the Sixth Grade Great Saint.

After hearing Jiang Chen's voice, Han Yan's body trembled with

excitement. It seemed like Jiang Chen was still the person who understood Han Yan very well. Without any delay, he adjusted himself to the best possible state and circulated his bloodline at maximum speed, putting all of his concentration on the battlefield. He had reasons to believe that Jiang Chen's arrival was the end of Sang Ba. Despite the terror of the Great Devil Curse, Jiang Chen must have some kind of techniques that could restrain it.

“That Sang Ba is terrifying. I wonder if Brother Chen can handle him,” said Yan Chenyu worriedly.

“Don't worry. Little Chen is now a Fourth Grade Great Saint. Given his heaven defying talent, he could certainly handle Sang Ba even without the dragon transformation,” said Tyrant.

He always saw Jiang Chen as omnipotent and confident. As such, a picture was already painted in his heart a long time ago—when Jiang Chen showed up on the battlefield, his opponent would definitely fall.

At the group of the Great Lightning Tune Temple, all the members of Gu Palace were fixing their eyes on Jiang Chen. They had to admit that such a peerless genius was the pride of Gu Palace, but they still couldn't help worrying for him when he was confronting Sang Ba.

Gu Firmament had even made up his mind to save Jiang Chen should a critical moment arose. He would rather hurt his reputation than let Jiang Chen die.

A sneer appeared on the faces of the Desolate Palace's members, particularly on Desolate Wuleng's. The hatred he had for Jiang Chen made him grit his teeth and want to charge forward and rip Jiang Chen apart. The tragic death of Desolate Changfeng was like a sharp thorn in his heart, he could never get over it. If he could borrow the hands of Sang Ba to eliminate Jiang Chen, he would surely be overjoyed.

On the battlefield, Sang Ba couldn't help but laugh after noticing the cultivation base of the youth in white.

“Arrogance. This is literally arrogance. I have never thought that there is such an arrogant human in your race. A puny Fourth Grade Great Saint dared to appear and fight me? You simply don't know what's life and death. Human Race is surely severely lacking of geniuses.”

Sang Ba didn't put Jiang Chen in his eyes, which was not strange considering his status. He was deemed to be an invincible existence amongst the young generation of the Devil Race. So how could he possibly put a young man with a cultivation base two levels lower than him in his eyes? Anyway, it was impossible to understand the scariness of Jiang Chen without fighting him in person.

“Is that so?”

The corner of Jiang Chen's mouth curved into a sneer. Without bothering to rebut Sang Ba's remark, he casted the Azure Dragon Five Steps. Although he was in human form, it was still the terrifying Azure Dragon Five Steps. He lunged at extreme speed. The Spatial Shift had modified the paces of the technique. By the

time he reached Sang Ba, he had already made the fifth step.

A surge of a towering, mountain-like energy rushed out of his body. It was the Purest Yang Qi. Adding the strands of pure yang flames, Sang Ba was restrained from even using his devil power.

“What?!”

Sang Ba exclaimed. He immediately put away his contempt for Jiang Chen, he was shocked to find that this young man’s attack could suppress him even more compared to the cultivation method of Buddha Sect; this was absolutely a one-sided oppression.

“Peerless Devil Wheel!”

In the midst of hopelessness, he hastily struck out the Peerless Devil Wheel. However, this giant wheel couldn’t even withstand Jiang Chen’s step and was pulverized.

Bang...

The devil wheel was crushed. Countless dragon marks rippled under Jiang Chen’s feet as he stepped on the devil.

Deng Deng Deng...

Sang Ba couldn’t stand the immense pressure, and was sent flying up to 300 meters away, he then spurted out a mouthful of

black devil blood, he had received a tremendous backlash.

It was just one move but the impact was enormous. The Sixth Grade Devil Saint was definitely no match for Jiang Chen in a head-on confrontation. He should be proud as he had only been injured after receiving Jiang Chen's Azure Dragon Five Steps. One should know that a Sixth Grade Great Saint like Desolate Changfeng was just like an ant in the hands of Jiang Chen and could be killed at any second.

“Good.”

Gu Firmament couldn't help but let out a praise. Exhilaration was plastered on the faces of the experts of Gu Palace. The fact that Jiang Chen had severely injured Sang Ba in their first exchange made everyone excited, and boosted the morale of the Human Race.

Chapter 1000 - The Unstoppable Advancement

It was an awesome performance to defeat the opponent in their first exchange. The technique he used was the Azure Dragon Five Steps, which had been modified after combining the Spatial Shift. Those who had seen this technique before wouldn't be able to recognize it at the first glance. Plus, it was Gu Chen who used that skill. Therefore, ordinary people wouldn't be able to find the connection between the technique and Jiang Chen.

Currently, Sang Ba, who had suffered a severe blow, looked extremely miserable. He rubbed the blood off at the corner of his mouth and looked at Jiang Chen viciously. His eyes looked as if it were on fire and were about to burst out from the sockets. Ever since he cultivated the Great Devil Curse, he had never suffered such heavy injury, and most of all, it was caused by a Fourth Grade Great Saint. It had humiliated him tremendously and hurt his self-esteem.

“What's your name?” asked Sang Ba after stabilizing his Qi.

He wanted to know this imposing human who injured him in their first exchange.

“Gu Chen of Gu Palace.” Jiang Chen announced his name.

His combat intent was unparalleled. Using his eyesight, he could clearly see that Sang Ba had suffered a severe injury from the Azure Dragon Five Steps. However, such an injury wouldn't

greatly affect his ability to fight as the Great Devil Curse was his main combat technique.

“Good, Gu Chen. You are worthy to be called the number one genius amongst the young generation of Saint Origin Palace, having such an incredible combat strength despite being only a Fourth Grade Great Saint. I have to admit that you are the first human I met who had such an ability. If I have the same cultivation base as you, I am certainly no match for you. But even though you’ve injured me, don’t get all over yourself. You have yet to see my true strength. Under my Great Devil Curse, all your techniques will be useless. You will surely face the same fate just like the two geniuses,” said Sang Ba arrogantly.

“Cut the nonsense. You’ve killed Gu Shuangtan and because of that, you’re doomed. I will personally avenge his death,” said Jiang Chen casually.

Even though he and Gu Shuangtan weren’t close friends, he had a good impression of him because he stood up for him before. And today, Gu Shuangtan had sacrificed himself for the glory of Gu Palace. Thus, he must definitely take this revenge.

“Then bring it on! Although you are strong, you won’t be able to handle the Great Devil Curse. I would like to see how you are going to break my curse.” Sang Ba said, and his Qi fluctuated.

Devil waves billowed up to the sky. The Great Devil Curse was casted once more. Countless of devil marks turned into rippling waves, instantly forming a devil domain that trapped Jiang Chen inside.

“Look, Sang Ba has casted the Great Devil Curse again. I wonder if Gu Chen could deal with it.”

“I’m afraid that it would be very hard for him to do so. This Devil Curse is too horrifying. The young monk was just able to tie with this devil because of his supreme Dharma Seals. Although Gu Chen is strong, he will face an unimaginable outcome if he’s affected by the curse.”

“I can see that Gu Chen is still very confident in himself. Maybe he has some kind of technique that can resist the Great Devil Curse.”

.....

Seeing Sang Ba launching the Great Devil Curse again, many of them became nervous, particularly the higher ups of Gu Palace. They felt as if their heart was on their mouth when they recalled how Gu Shuangtan died tragically under this curse.

The devil domain turned into an empty illusory realm. Anyone who fell into it would certainly be affected.

Hua La La...

Innumerable devil incantations moved in the void like spiritual serpents as black devil winds rushed around Jiang Chen. These incantations could penetrate into a human’s innermost soul and

devour it, causing a temporary coma. The victim wouldn't be able to extricate himself from it and would eventually die tragically under the curse.

Roar... *Roar...*

Dragon roars reverberated across the void as Jiang Chen circulated the dragon transformation skill to the maximum. His pure Yang Qi smashed against the devil incantations. Adding the effect of the Great Soul Derivation Technique, the Great Devil Curse was not able to affect him.

“How can a mere illusory realm stop me? I will show you my illusory realm. We'll see whose technique has the bigger impact.”

Jiang Chen's Qi began to change. Waves started to move in all directions with him as the center, like tidal waves. Instantly the Great Illusion Realm was formed, merging with the devil domain. As it was created using Jiang Chen's dragon transformation skill, it had a strong suppressive effect on the devils.

Keng... *Keng...* *Keng...*

The two illusory realms collided with each other, producing loud clatters and large sparks. The impact didn't appear as intense as the impact between combat techniques, however the danger was greater, and only those who were involved knew how terrifying it was.

“What? An illusory realm?!” Looking at the situation, Sang Ba exclaimed.

He had not thought that Jiang Chen would use such a technique to counter his Great Devil Curse. What frightened him the most was that he could sense the horrifyingness of Jing Chen’s illusory realm. His head started to spin as if he had fallen into a trance.

The Great Illusion Realm was one of the most terrifying illusory realms. Every person has their innermost desire, and this would become the weak spot that the Illusion Heart Sutra could manipulate. It would cause the enemy to plunge into the realm so deep that they couldn’t extricate himself from it. In the aspect of illusory realms, the Great Illusion Realm was no doubt scarier than the Great Devil Curse.

On the battlefield, light and dark energy were intertwining with each other. Two distinct illusory realms were interwoven with each other, forming a whole new illusory realm. Within this illusory realm, Jiang Chen and Sang Ba would have to dominate the other in order to influence or even kill the other.

Presently, the two of them were just standing in the illusory realm, doing nothing, but such confrontation was a hundred times more dangerous than a physical fight.

“What’s going on? Why are they immobile?”

“That’s amazing. Gu Chen has also casted a mysterious illusion art and created another illusory realm, it seems a lot more

terrifying than the Great Devil Curse. Plus, he seems to have cultivated the Purest Yang cultivation method which could effectively suppress the devils. This is my first time seeing an illusory realm versus another illusory realm!”

“Good. Sure enough, Gu Chen hadn’t disappointed us. I never thought that he has such a trump card in his hand. It is no doubt the best way to deal with Sang Ba’s Great Devil Curse.”

“However, this kind of fight is extremely dangerous. A single carelessness will surely lead them to doom. Currently, the two different kinds of illusory realms were interwoven with one another. Whoever dominate it first would be able to gain control of his opponent and kill him.”

.....

Everyone was shocked. Not one of them had imagined that Gu Chen would use such a deadly technique at this critical juncture—the Illusion Art, the rarest skill in this world because it puts a heavy burden on one’s physique. Once the skill failed, the user would certainly suffer a great backlash. The Great Devil Curse was different. On the contrary, the illusion was just a part of its terrifying abilities. However, Jiang Chen using the Illusion Heart Sutra to counter the Great Devil Curse perfectly matched the situation.

On the other hand, Han Yan’s eyes brightened. It seemed like his comprehension on the Great Devil Curse was nearly complete. Han Yan would certainly grasp the Great Devil Curse after Jiang Chen and Sang Ba’s fight.

In the battlefield, Jiang Chen's Qi was at ease, whereas Sang Ba looked exhausted; his face was overflowing with sweat.

“This brat's soul power is so strong that he is completely unaffected by my Great Devil Curse. He just stood there like a motionless, towering mountain, invulnerable to wind and rain. Also his illusory realm made me feel dazed. At this rate, I may not be his opponent.”

Sang Ba felt extremely shocked. Because he can't pull himself out of the situation, he had no choice but to carry on.

“Haha! Sang Ba, your Great Devil Curse is too immature to compete with my Illusion Art. My Great Illusion Realm is the true Illusion Art. Die now!”

Jiang Chen burst into laughter, and within his laughter were traces of sound waves that impinged Sang Ba's soul unknowingly. At the same time, he circulated the Great Soul Derivation Technique to the extreme. An invisible soul energy sprang out like a sword, striking heavily into the spot between Sang Ba's brows.

Dong!

Sang Ba felt a tearing pain in his soul, as if it was hit by a sledgehammer. Immediately, he spurted out a mouthful of blood.

“Argh...”

Suddenly, Sang Ba howled in agony while facing the sky. Eventually, he was defeated by Jiang Chen in their fight. The devil domain created by the Great Devil Curse vanished like the ebb. Brightness was restored to the entire battlefield; there was only the Great Illusion Realm.

Sang Ba's spiritual line of defence had been broken down. He was deeply influenced by the Great Illusion Realm, causing him to fall into a trance and into a state of madness.

Hong Long...

Sang Ba kept on sending out powerful devil waves, however, looking at it from the outside, his attack was in complete disorder, as if his target wasn't Jiang Chen and was someone else. Jiang Chen just stood idly by and watched the show.

“Look, Sang Ba's devil domain has already disappeared. He seems to have been affected by Jiang Chen's illusory realm and is attacking aimlessly.”

“Well, Sang Ba is finished this time. He has been fully influenced by the illusory realm and has fallen into his own world. Therefore, he doesn't know who he is targeting.”

“Everyone, stand on guard and be ready. We can't allow the devil experts to save Sang Ba.”

.....

The people of the Great Lightning Tune Temple were all exhilarated, especially the people of Gu Palace. Gu Firmament swept across the surroundings, using his divine sense to closely observe the movements of the devil experts. He wouldn't hesitate to stop those devils the moment they appear to save Sang Ba.

The battle between Jiang Chen and Sang Ba was of great importance. It would seriously affect the morale of both sides. If Sang Ba was killed, it would deal a heavy blow to the Devil Race's moral, while raising the morale of the Human Race to a high level.

Desolate Emperor and Desolate Wuleng were gnashing their teeth. They originally wanted to use Sang Ba to eliminate Jiang Chen and avenge Desolate Changfeng's death, and also get rid of a future threat. They hadn't imagined that Jiang Chen would be this strong. At this rate, Sang Ba would certainly die. After killing Sang Ba, Jiang Chen would get two Immortal Pills. By then, his cultivation base would improve further and would rise without a doubt.

Table of Contents

[Dragon-Marked War God](#)

[Synopsis](#)

[Copyright](#)

[Chapter 901 - Big Yellow's Heavenly Tribulation](#)

[Chapter 902 - An Assault on the Stronghold](#)

[Chapter 903 - It's because I am Jiang Chen](#)

[Chapter 904 - Ruthless Slaughtering](#)

[Chapter 905 - None Shall Live](#)

[Chapter 906 - A Big Gift](#)

[Chapter 907 - The Inferno Hell Reopened](#)

[Chapter 908 - Returning Home](#)

[Chapter 909 - The Arrival of the Experts](#)

[Chapter 910 - The Super Battle Array](#)

[Chapter 911 - The Battle of the Number One Genius of Sky Ranking](#)

[Chapter 912 - The Star Hegemonic Physique](#)

[Chapter 913 - Corpse Sacrificial Altar](#)

[Chapter 914 - The Embryonic Form of Ancestral Dragon Pagoda](#)

[Chapter 915 - Acting Recklessly](#)

[Chapter 916 - The Overbearing Aura](#)

[Chapter 917 - We Are One Family](#)

[Chapter 918 - The Ancient Devil](#)

[Chapter 919 - Han Yan's Crisis](#)

[Chapter 920 - The Tiger Which Went Down to Level Land Encountered the Vicious Dog](#)

[Chapter 921 - The Disappearance of the Spatial Zones](#)

[Chapter 922 - Kong Yang's Courage and Uprightness](#)

[Chapter 923 - Killing the Geniuses of Saint Origin Palace](#)

[Chapter 924 - Fart Banging the Great Saint](#)

[Chapter 925 - The Earth Devil Beast Struck](#)

[Chapter 926 - The Suppression of Water and Fire](#)

[Chapter 927 - Run Away](#)

[Chapter 928 - The Blazing Heart](#)

[Chapter 929 - The Mantis stalks the Cicada, but behind them lurks the Oriole](#)

[Chapter 930 - Fierce Battle with the Evil Dragon](#)

[Chapter 931 - Seriously Bold](#)

[Chapter 932 - First Grade Great Saint](#)

[Chapter 933 - The Roar and Howl of Dragon and Phoenix](#)
[Chapter 934 - The Insane Ancestral Dragon Pagoda](#)
[Chapter 935 - Flaming Wings](#)
[Chapter 936 - The Peerless Devil God](#)
[Chapter 937 - All the Experts Were Here](#)
[Chapter 938 - Checkmate](#)
[Chapter 939 - The Death of Jiang Chen](#)
[Chapter 940 - The Plan](#)
[Chapter 941 - Returning To the Pure Land](#)
[Chapter 942 - How Did You Do That?](#)
[Chapter 943 - Gu Chen](#)
[Chapter 944 - The Saint Origin Palace](#)
[Chapter 945 - The Arrogant Newbie](#)
[Chapter 946 - The Internal Contradictions](#)
[Chapter 947 - Attacking At the Doorstep](#)
[Chapter 948 - Arrogant to the Extreme](#)
[Chapter 949 - A Big Tangled Warfare](#)
[Chapter 950 - Gu Lian](#)
[Chapter 951 - The Conflicts among the Higher Ups](#)
[Chapter 952 - After-Three-Days Battle Agreement](#)
[Chapter 953 - A Clash in the Refining Tower](#)
[Chapter 954 - Murder](#)
[Chapter 955 - The Man and The Dog Teamed up Once Again](#)
[Chapter 956 - The Immortal Qi](#)
[Chapter 957 - The Seizure](#)
[Chapter 958 - The Alliance of the Geniuses](#)
[Chapter 959 - The Law Enforcement Palace](#)
[Chapter 960 - Gu Firmament](#)
[Chapter 961 - The Ugly-Looking Desolate Emperor](#)
[Chapter 962 - Unrestrained Gambling](#)
[Chapter 963 - Entrapment](#)
[Chapter 964 - Aggrieved](#)
[Chapter 965 - Glory](#)
[Chapter 966 - Being the Centre of Attention](#)
[Chapter 967 - Saving Face](#)
[Chapter 968 - Situation](#)
[Chapter 969 - The Aging Greenlotus](#)
[Chapter 970 - We Meet Again, At Last](#)
[Chapter 971 - The World-Shaking Huge Secret](#)

[Chapter 972 - Third Grade Great Saint](#)
[Chapter 973 - The Ling Chi Execution*](#)
[Chapter 974 - The Return to Power](#)
[Chapter 975 - Sky Integration Grand Formation](#)
[Chapter 976 - Crazily Domineering](#)
[Chapter 977 - The End of the Six \(1\)](#)
[Chapter 978 - The End of the Six \(2\)](#)
[Chapter 979 - Wild and Frenzied](#)
[Chapter 980 - Bloody Awesome](#)
[Chapter 981 - The Fury of the Wild Dragon](#)
[Chapter 982 - Ten-Thousand-Year-Old Profound Ice Beast](#)
[Chapter 983 - Goodbye Tyrant](#)
[Chapter 984 - The Rage of the Six Palaces](#)
[Chapter 985 - Having No Sense of Shame](#)
[Chapter 986 - The Chaos in Western Domain](#)
[Chapter 987 - Doubts About the Identity](#)
[Chapter 988 - Gaining Prestige for Gu Family](#)
[Chapter 989 - One Man to Defend Against All](#)
[Chapter 990 - The Saint Light of Buddha Sect](#)
[Chapter 991 - Desolate Changfeng](#)
[Chapter 992 - Calculation](#)
[Chapter 993 - In a State of Chaos and Darkness](#)
[Chapter 994 - The Immortal Yang Pill](#)
[Chapter 995 - The Genius of Devil Race](#)
[Chapter 996 - The Great Devil Curse](#)
[Chapter 997 - The Battle](#)
[Chapter 998 - Observing the Battle in Secret](#)
[Chapter 999 - The True Suppression](#)
[Chapter 999 - The True Suppression](#)
[Chapter 1000 - The Unstoppable Advancement](#)